



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

12.14.2
C2

16
23

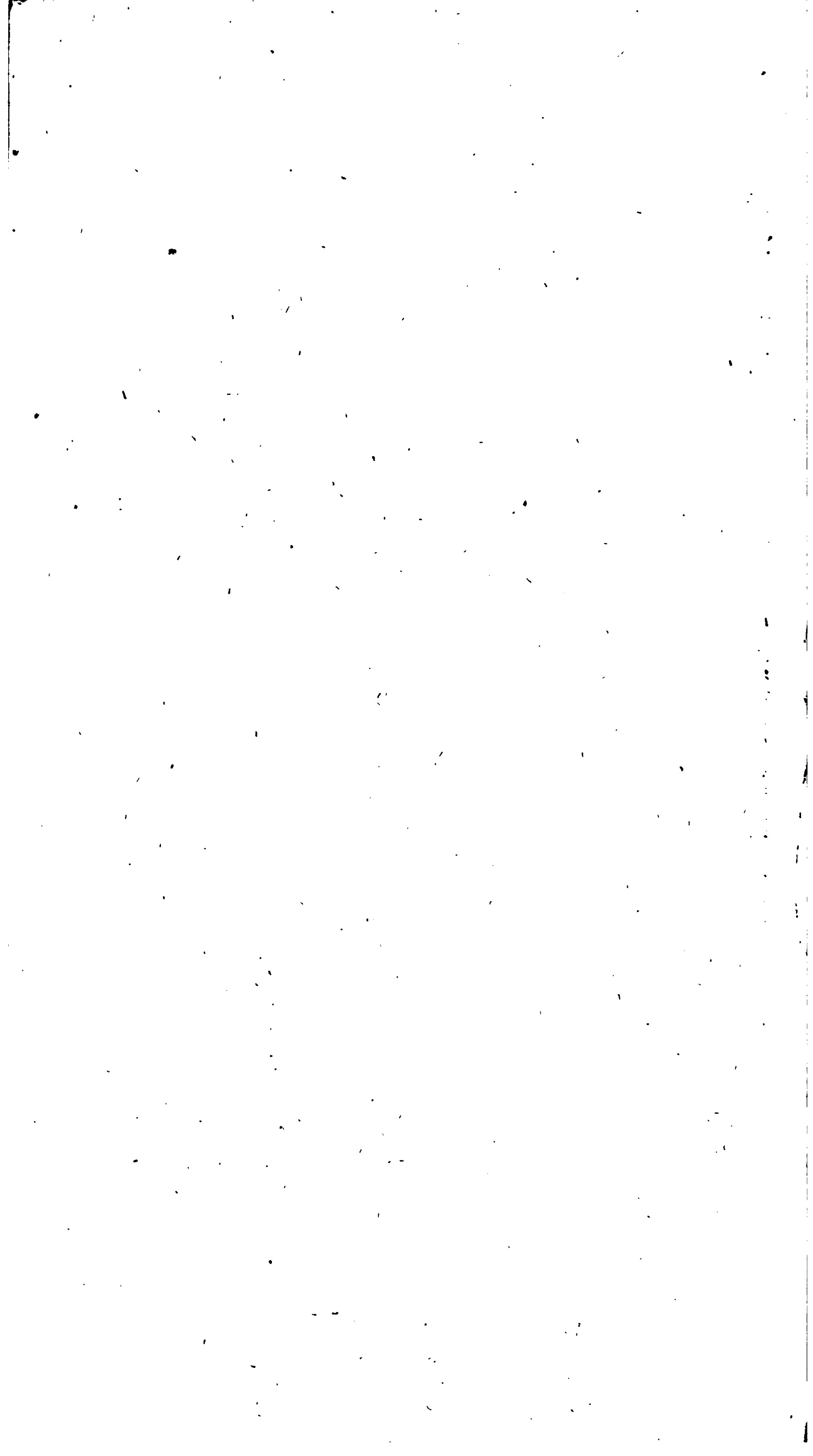
4.12.2
10

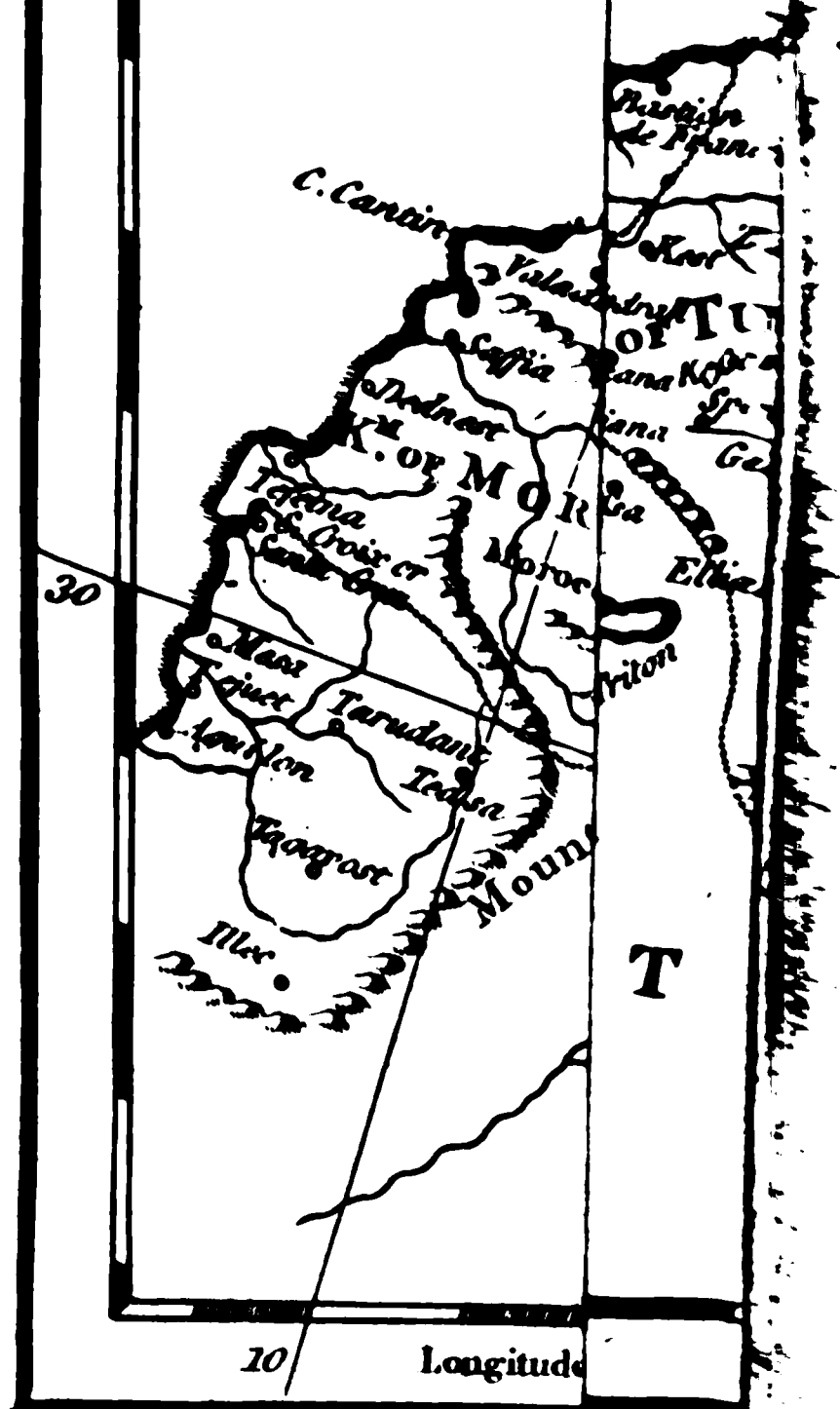
3

**PRESENTED TO THE UNIVERSITY
BY THE RHODES TRUSTEES**

059. r. 42







5

30

Q

P. SIMONET
A
PHILOSOPHICAL AND POLITICAL
H I S T O R Y
OF THE
SETTLEMENTS AND TRADE
OF THE
E U R O P E A N S
IN THE
EAST AND WEST INDIES.

Translated from the French of the Abbé RESNAL,
By J. JUSTAMOND, M. A.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

D U B L I N:

Printed for JOHN EXSHAW, No. 86, and WILLIAM
HALHEAD, No. 63, Dame-street.

M,DCC,LXXVI.



I N D E X

T O T H E

F I R S T V O L U M E.

B O O K I.

	Page
I NTRODUCTION. —	i
The discoveries, wars, and conquests of the Portuguese in the East Indies. —	ib.
The first expeditions of the Portuguese; their arrival in the Indies. — —	24
A geographical description of Asia. —	25
Natural History of Indostan. —	28
Religion, government, and custom of Indostan.	32
The Portuguese establish a settlement on the coast of Malabar. — —	53
The manner of carrying on trade in India before the conquests of the Portuguese. —	58
The Portuguese make themselves masters of the Red Sea. — —	67

INDEX TO THE FIRST VOLUME.

	Page
The Portuguese make themselves masters of the Persian gulph. — —	73
The Portuguese form a settlement at Ceylon.	76
The Portuguese conquer Malacca. —	79
Settlement of the Portuguese in the Malacca islands.	83
The causes of the enterprising spirit of the Portu- guese. — —	87
Arrival of the Portuguese at China: State of this empire. — —	90
The beginning of the Portuguese trade in Japan; the state of the Japanese islands. —	116
Extent of the Portuguese dominions in the Indies.	121
Corruption of the Portuguese in India. —	123
Decline of the Portuguese power in India.	129
Present state of the Portuguese affairs in India.	134

B O O K II.

The settlements, wars, policy and trade of the Dutch in the East Indies. — —	136
Ancient revolutions in Holland. — —	ib.
Rise of the republic of Holland. —	141
The first voyages of the Hollanders to India.	144
Establishment of the India company. —	146
Wars of the Hollanders and Portuguese. —	148
The Hollanders form a settlement at Formosa.	151
Trade of the Hollanders to Japan. —	154
The Moluccas submit to the Dutch. —	160
The Dutch form a settlement at Timor. —	166
The Dutch make themselves masters of Celebes.	167
The Dutch open a communication with Borneo.	171
Settlements of the Dutch at Sumatra. —	173
	Trade

INDEX TO THE FIRST VOLUME.

	Page
Trade of the Dutch at Siam. —	175
Situation of the Dutch at Malacca. —	176
Settlement of the Dutch at Ceylon. —	178
Trade of the Dutch on the coast of Coromandel.	187
Trade of the Dutch on the coast of Malabar.	188
The Dutch settlement at the Cape of Good Hope.	190
Dominions of the Dutch in the island of Java.	196
The manner of conducting the affairs of the Dutch company in India and in Europe. —	213
Causes of the prosperity of the company.	218
Reasons of the decline of the company. —	226
Measures that remain to be taken for the re-esta- blishment of the company's affairs. —	232
Former good conduct of the Dutch, and their pre- sent degeneracy. — —	248

B O O K III.

Settlements, trade, and conquests of the English in the East Indies. — —	253
Sketch of the ancient state of the English commerce.	ib.
First voyages of the English to India. —	259
Disputes between the English and Dutch.	263
Disputes of the English with the Portuguese.	266
The English form connections with Persia.	267
<i>Decline of the English in India.</i> —	272
Revival of the English trade in India. —	273
Misfortunes, and misconduct of the English in the Indies. — — —	274
War between the English and French. —	283
General trade of the Red Sea, and of the English trade there in particular. — —	ib.
	General

INDEX TO THE FIRST VOLUME.

	Page
General view of the trade in the Persian gulph, and that of the English in particular. —	301
General state of the trade on the coast of Malabar, and that of the English in particular. *	312
General state of the coast of Coromandel, and that of the English in particular. —	330
General trade of Bengal and that of the English in particular. — —	345
The English settlement at St. Helena. —	366
The use the English make of the islands of Comora.	367
The English company leave the country trade to private adventurers. — —	369
The company judge it improper to keep up their marine. — — —	370
Capital of the company. — —	371
Extent of the company's trade. —	372
Dividends of the proprietors. —	376
Conquest of Bengal, advantages drawn by the English from this acquisition, and the conduct they have hitherto observed. — —	377

B O O K - IV.

Voyages, settlements, wars and trade of the French in the East Indies. — —	406
Ancient revolutions of commerce in France.	ib.
First voyage of the French to the East Indies.	412
Settlement of the French at Madagascar, description of that island. — —	413
The French make Surat the center of their trade.	
Account of this famous city, and of the province of Guzarat, in which it is situated. —	420
Attack	

INDEX TO THE FIRST VOLUME.

	Page
Attack of the French upon the islands of Ceylon and St. Thomas. Their settlement at Pondicherry.	434
Settlement of the French at Siam. Their designs on Tonquin and Cochinchina. —	436
The loss and recovery of Pondicherry, which became the chief settlement in India. —	449
Decline of the French company, and the cause of it.	450
The French company recovers a glimpse of its ancient splendour by Law's system; but soon relapses into obscurity. — —	456
Great success of the French in India. —	462
Views of the French to aggrandize themselves. Account of Indostan. — —	472
Wars between the English and French. The French lose all their settlements. —	495
Causes of the misfortunes of the French. —	499
Steps taken in France to re-establish affairs in India.	501
Measures of the French insufficient. The trade of individuals is substituted to that of the company. State of that society at the time of its decay.	505
Present state of the French upon the coast of Malabar. — — —	516
Present state of the French at Bengal. Present situation of the French upon the coast of Coromandel.	522
Present situation of the French in the isle of France.	526
It behoves the court of Versailles to fortify the Isle of France and Pondicherry, if it will have any share in the trade of India. — —	529
The French being once firmly established in India, will shake of the oppression which the English impose upon them. — —	532

✧ The livres in the following work have been reduced to sterling at the rate of ten-pence halfpenny *per* livre. In the course of this operation the translator found reason to believe that the author valued them at a different rate, and upon trial, in some instances, the value came out at the rate of ten-pence two-thirds of a penny. Possibly this may have been the author's standard; but as that circumstance could not be ascertained throughout, without the identical authorities used by the author, and as the work was already far advanced, the translator did not make any change in his calculations, for which he hopes to meet with the reader's indulgence.

There is another more obvious inaccuracy, which is, that in several instances where sums are to be added together, the total will not be found to answer: but for this the translator is not accountable, as he has uniformly reduced the sums in the original at the rate above-mentioned.

A
 PHILOSOPHICAL AND POLITICAL
 H I S T O R Y
 OF THE
 SETTLEMENTS AND TRADE
 OF THE
 EUROPEANS
 IN THE
 EAST AND WEST INDIES.

B O O K I.
 INTRODUCTION.

NO event has been so interesting to mankind in general, and to the inhabitants of Europe in particular, as the discovery of the new world, and the passage to India by the Cape of Good Hope. It gave rise to a revolution in the commerce, and in the power of nations; and in the manners, industry, and government of the world in general. At this period new connexions were formed by the most distant regions, for the supply of wants they had never before experienced. The productions of climates situated near the equator, were consumed in countries bordering on the pole; the industry of the north was transplanted to the south; and the inhabitants of the west, were clothed with the manufac-

B O O K
 I.

The discoveries, wars, and conquests of the Portuguese in the East Indies.

B O O K

I.

tures of the east : a general intercourse of opinions, laws and customs, diseases and remedies, virtues and vices, was established throughout the world.

EVERY thing has changed, and must change again. But it is a question, whether the revolutions that are passed, or those which must hereafter take place, have been, or can be of any utility to the human race? Will they ever add to the tranquility, the happiness, and the pleasures of mankind? Can they improve our present state, or do they only change it?

THE Europeans have founded colonies in all parts, but are they acquainted with the principles on which they ought to be established? They have indeed encouraged mutual commerce, and promoted agriculture and industry. The commerce is transferred from one people to another. Can we not discover by what means and in what situations this has been effected? Since America, and the passage by the Cape has been known, some nations that were of no consequence are become powerful: others, that were the terror of Europe have lost their authority. How has the condition of these several people been affected by these discoveries? How comes it to pass that those to whom nature has been most liberal, are not always the richest and most flourishing? To throw some light on these important questions, we must take a view of the state of Europe before these discoveries were made, we must trace circumstantially the events they have given rise to, and conclude with examining it, as it presents itself at this day.

THE commercial states have civilized all others. The Phœnicians, whose extent of country and influence were extremely limited, by their genius for naval enterprizes, acquired an importance which ranked them foremost in the history of ancient nations.

THEY are mentioned by writers of every class. They were

were known to the most distant climate, and their fame **BOOK**
has been transmitted to succeeding ages. **I.**

SITUATED on a barren coast, separated from the continent by the Mediterranean on one side, and the mountains of Libanus on the other; they seem to have been destined by nature for the dominion of the sea. Fishing taught them the art of navigation, and furnished them with the purple dye which they extracted from the murex: at the same time the sea-sand led them to discover the secret of making glass. Happy in enjoying so few natural advantages, for the want of these awakened that spirit of invention and industry, which is the parent of arts and opulence!

It must be confessed, that the situation of the Phœnicians was admirably adapted to extend their commerce to every part of the world. By inhabiting, as it were, the confines of Africa, Asia, and Europe, if they could not unite the inhabitants of the globe in one common interest, they at least had it in their power, by a commercial intercourse, to communicate to every nation the enjoyments of all climates. But the ancients, who, though they have taught the moderns much useful knowledge, have often been excelled by them, had not sufficient means to enable them to establish an universal commerce. The Phœnicians had no shipping except gallies; they only carried on a coasting trade, and their sailing was confined to the Mediterranean. Though this state was the model upon which other maritime powers were formed, it is not so easy to determine what they have done, as what they might have done. We may form a conjecture of their population by their colonies. It is said that their numbers extended along the borders of the Mediterranean, particularly on the coasts of Africa.

TYRE or Sidon, the queen of the ocean, gave birth to

B 2

Carthage.

B O O K

I.

Carthage. While the opulence of Tyre invited tyrants to rivet its fetters, Carthage, the offspring of Tyre, notwithstanding its riches, had this happy advantage over the parent state, that it enjoyed its liberty. It commanded the coasts of Africa, and had possession of Spain, which was even then the richest country in Europe, and famous for its own gold and silver mines, though destined at the expence of so much bloodshed, to acquire others in the new world.

HAD the Roman power never existed, Carthage would in all probability have been nothing more than a commercial state; but the ambition of one nation excited all the rest to relinquish the arts of commerce for those of war, and either to conquer or to perish. Carthage, after a long and glorious contest for the empire of the world, was forced to submit to the all-subduing genius of Rome. The subversion of a republic, which gloried in their industry, and owed their power to their skill in useful arts, was, perhaps, a misfortune to Europe, and to the world in general.

GREECE, intersected on all sides by seas, must necessarily flourish by commerce. Its situation in the Archipelago, and its distance from any large continent, seemed to make it unlikely that it should either conquer or be conquered. Situated between Asia and Europe, it contributed to civilize both the one and the other, and enjoyed a deserved share of prosperity, as the reward of its services. As almost all the Greeks came either from Egypt or Phœnicia, they brought along with them the knowledge and industry of those countries; but of all the Asiatic colonies, those were the most flourishing and happy, which had a turn for commerce.

ATHENS employed her first ships either in trafficking in Asia, or in planting as many colonies as Greece in her infancy might have received from thence: but these
emi-

emigrations involved them in wars. The Persians, living under an arbitrary government, would not even suffer any free people to settle on the confines of the sea; and the Satraps inculcated into the great king, the doctrine of universal slavery. This was the source of all the wars in Asia Minor, where the Athenians found means to make all the insular and maritime states either their allies or their subjects. Athens enlarged her commerce by her victories, and her power by her commerce. All the arts made their appearance in Greece at the same time, together with the luxury of Asia.

B O O K
I.

COMMERCE, agriculture, and the means of population, were introduced into Sicily by the Greeks and the Carthaginians. Rome, who beheld their progress with a jealous eye, made itself master of an island which supplied Sicily; and having driven out the two nations that contended for the sovereignty of it, attacked first one, and then the other. From the moment that Carthage was destroyed, Greece trembled for her fate. But it was Alexander who marked the way for the Romans; nor was it possible, perhaps, that the Greeks could have been subdued by a foreign power, if they had not first conquered each other. Commerce is finally destroyed by the riches it accumulates, as power is by its own conquests; and when the commerce of the Greeks had failed in the Mediterranean, it no longer subsisted in any part of the known world.

THE Greeks, by improving upon all the sciences, and arts they had received from the Egyptians, and Tyrians, elevated human reason to a degree of perfection, which has been reduced so low by the subsequent revolutions of empires, that in all probability it will never rise again to the same standard. Their admirable institutions were superior to the best we have at this day. The plan upon which they founded their colonies does honour

B O O K

I.

to their humanity. As all the arts owed to them their rise, and perfection, these did not survive the fate of their protectors : It is evident from some works of Xenophon, that they were better acquainted with the principles of trade, than most modern nations are at present.

If we consider that Europe has the advantage of all the knowledge of the Greeks, that her commerce is infinitely more extensive, that since the improvements in navigation, our ideas are directed to greater, and more various objects; it is astonishing that we should not have the most palpable superiority over them. But it must be observed, that when these people arrived at the knowledge of the arts and of trade, they were just produced as it were from the hands of nature, and had all the powers necessary to improve the talents she had given them : whereas the European nations had the misfortune to be restrained by laws, by government, and by an exclusive and imperious religion. In Greece the arts of trade met with men, in Europe with slaves. Whenever the absurdities of our institutions have been pointed out, we have taken pains to correct them, without ever daring totally to overthrow the edifice. We have remedied some abuses, by introducing others ; and, in our efforts to support, reform and palliate, we have adopted more contradictions and absurdities in our manners, than are to be found among the most barbarous people. For this reason, if the arts should ever gain admission among the Tartars, and Iroquois, they will make an infinitely more rapid progress among them, than they can ever do in Russia and Poland.

THE Romans, formed for conquest, though they dazzled the world with an appearance of grandeur, fell short of the Greeks in their improvements in philosophy, and the arts. They promoted an intercourse between different nations, not by uniting them by the ties of com-

commerce, but by imposing upon them the same yoke of subordination. They ravaged the globe, which when reduced to subjection, they left in a state rather of lethargy than tranquillity. Their despotism and military government oppressed the people, extinguished the powers of genius, and degraded the human race.

B O O K
I.

CONSTANTINE passed two laws, which though **Montesquieu** has not ventured to reckon them among the causes of the declension of the empire, threw every thing into still greater disorder. The first, dictated by imprudence and fanaticism, though it appeared to be the effect of humanity, affords a proof that great innovations are often attended with great danger; and that the original rights of mankind cannot always be made the standard of government. By this law, all slaves who should embrace christianity, were allowed their freedom. Thus, while those who had hitherto dragged on a precarious existence, were re-instated in their primitive rights, the state was weakened; because the proprietors of large tracts of land were deprived of the number of hands necessary for their improvement, and for some time reduced to the extremest indigence. On the other hand, the new converts, having no property themselves, or any certain means of subsistence, were not in a condition to assist the state, in repairing the injury it had done to their masters. It is equally impossible that they should have any attachment to a state which did not afford them subsistence, or to a religion, which the irresistible desire of liberty alone induced them to embrace. By another edict, paganism was prohibited throughout the whole empire, and thus these extensive dominions were inhabited by men, whose attachment to each other, and to the state, was no longer secured by the solemn sanctions of religion: having no priests, no temples, no public morals, they had no motives to excite them

B O O K

I.

them to repel an enemy who should attack a government with which they were no longer connected.


THE inhabitants of the north, therefore, when they fell upon the empire, found every thing ready to favour their invasion. Harassed in Poland and in Germany, by some nations who had migrated from great Tartary, they took a temporary possession of certain provinces already ruined, till they were expelled by succeeding conquerors of a still more ferocious disposition than themselves. When these barbarians determined to settle in the regions they had laid waste, they divided countries which the Romans had formerly united. From that moment, all communication between those states established by accident, necessity or caprice, was at an end. The swarms of pirates that infested the seas, together with the fierce disposition of the inhabitants of the frontiers, discouraged every connection that mutual convenience might render necessary. The subjects of each state, however small in extent, were separated from each other by insurmountable obstacles; as the banditti who infested the roads, made a journey of any length, a dangerous expedition. The nations of Europe, thus plunged a second time by slavery and despair, into that state of insensibility and indolence, which must for many ages have been the state of the human race; derived little advantage from the fertility of their soil; and their industry was exhausted in the employments of a savage life: tracts of country at no great distance, were to them of as little importance, as if they had not existed: nor had they any further knowledge of their neighbours, than as they happened to excite their fears, or their enmity.

THE accounts given by some authors of the wealth and splendour of the seventh century, are as fabulous

as all the other miraculous thing we read of in the history of those times. Their clothing was of skin and coarse woollen, the conveniences of life were not known; buildings indeed were erected with strength and solidity, but conveyed no idea, either of the affluence, or taste of the age. Neither much money, nor much knowledge of the arts is required to pile up heaps of stone by the hands of slaves. One incontestible proof of the indigence of the people was, that taxes were levied in kind; and that even the contributions which the inferior clergy paid to their superiors, consisted of provisions.

THE superstition that prevailed increased the general darkness. In the eighth, and the beginning of the ninth century, Rome, no longer the capital of the masters of the universe, attempted to exercise her authority as before, in deposing or making kings. Deprived of inhabitants and soldiers, by dint of opinions, and religious tenets alone, she aspired to universal monarchy. By her management princes were excited to take up arms against each other, people against their kings, and kings against their people. All merit consisted in making war, and all virtue in obeying the church. The dignity of monarchs was degraded by the claims of Rome, which inspired a contempt for princes, without exciting the love of liberty. Literature was then comprised in a few absurd romances, and some melancholy tales, the offsprings of cloistered indolence. This contributed to entertain that dejection of spirit, and that propensity to the marvellous, so favourable to the interests of superstition.

THE face of the globe was again changed by two other nations. A people pouring in from Scandinavia and the Cimbrian Chersonesus spread themselves to the north of Europe, which on the southern side was harassed by the Arabs. The former were disciples of Wodin,

B O O K ^{I.}  **Wodin, the latter of Mohammed ; men who had equally diffused the fanaticism of conquest with that of religion. Charlemagne subdued one of these nations, and maintained his ground against the other. These inhabitants of the north, called Saxons or Normans, were indigent, ill armed, and undisciplined, of savage manners, and driven to combat and to death by misery and superstition. Charlemagne was desirous of compelling them to change that religion which rendered them so terrible, for another which would dispose them to obedience. He was obliged to wade through seas of blood, and the cross was erected on heaps of slain. He was less successful against the Arabs, conquerors of Asia, Africa and Spain, and could not gain a footing beyond the Pyrenean mountains.**

THE necessity of repulsing the Arabs, but especially the Normans, occasioned the revival of naval skill in Europe. Charlemagne in France, Alfred the Great in England, and some cities of Italy, built ships ; and these first attempts towards navigation revived for a short time maritime commerce. Charlemagne established great fairs, the principal of which was at Aix-la-Chapelle. This is the method of trading among people where commerce is still in its infancy.

THE Arabs, however, laid the foundations of the most extensive commerce that had been known since the times of Athens and Carthage. It is true this was not so much owing to the lights of cultivated reason, and to the progress of a good administration, as to the extent of their power, and the nature of the country they possessed. Masters of Spain, of Africa, of Asia Minor, of Persia, and part of India, they introduced reciprocal exchanges from one region to another, of the commodities in different parts of their vast empire. They extended

tended themselves gradually as far as the Moluccas and to China, sometimes as traders, sometimes as missionaries, frequently as conquerors. BOOK
I.

SOON after this, the Venetians, Genoese, and the Arabs of Barcelona, went to Alexandria to buy up the merchandise of Africa and India, and disposed of it in Europe. The Arabs, enriched by commerce, and sated with conquest, were no longer the same people who burnt the Alexandrian library. They cultivated the arts and polite literature, and are distinguished from other conquering nations by their improvements of the reason and industry of men. To them we owe the sciences of algebra and chymistry, new discoveries in astronomy, new improvements in mechanics, and medicines, unknown to the ancients. But among the fine arts, poetry is the only one that they have cultivated with success.

AT the same period, the subjects of the Greek empire imitated the manufactures of Asia; and had, through various channels, monopolized the riches of India. But the advantages they derived from both these circumstances, could not survive the fate of their empire; which had nothing to oppose to the heroic and daring enthusiasm of the Arabs, but the weak and unmanly weapons of scholastic logic, and the controversial armour of monks: who had such an ascendant, that the Emperor used to ask God pardon for the time he employed in affairs of state. Painting and sculpture were no longer known, and it was matter of eternal dispute whether images ought, or ought not, to be worshipped. The Greeks surrounded by the ocean, and in possession of several islands, had yet no maritime forces. They defended themselves against the naval power of Egypt, and of the Saracens, by wild fire: the vain and precarious defence of a degenerate people. Constantinople,

not

B O O K not being in a condition to protect her maritime trade at
 I. a distance, resigned it to the Genoese, who seized upon
 Caffa, which they made a flourishing city.

THE nobility of Europe acquired a tincture of the manners of the Greeks and Arabs in their ridiculous expeditions of the crusades. They became acquainted with their arts and their luxury; which were afterwards almost necessary to their happiness. The Venetians had a more extensive demand for the goods they brought from the east; and the Arabs themselves carried some of them into France, England, and even into Germany.

THESE powers had at that period neither shipping nor manufactures: they laid restraints upon commerce, and the character of a merchant was held in contempt. This useful set of men were never respected among the Romans. They treated their merchants with as much contempt as their players, courtesans, bastards, slaves and gladiators. The political system, established throughout Europe by the power and ignorance of the northern nations, must necessarily have confirmed a prejudice which owed its rise to a barbarous pride. Our ancestors had the absurdity to adopt, as the basis of their government, a principle destructive of all society; a contempt for useful labour. The only persons held in any degree of estimation were the lords of manors, or such as had distinguished themselves in battle. The nobles, it is well known, were so many petty sovereigns who abused their own power, and opposed that of the monarch. The barons were fond of parade, avaritious, whimsical and poor. Sometimes they invited the merchants into their little states, and at others, they extorted money from them. In these barbarous times were established the several duties of tolls, of export and import, of passage, of quarters, of escheat and other oppressions

pressions without number. All the bridges and highways were opened or stopped up at the will of the prince or his vassals. The first elements of commerce were so totally unknown, that it was customary to fix the price of goods. The merchants were often pillaged, and always ill paid by the knights and barons. Trade was carried on in caravans or companies, which went armed to the places where the fairs were kept. At these marts the merchants omitted nothing that might engage the favour of the people. They were generally accompanied by jugglers, musicians and buffoons. As there were then no large towns, and neither public spectacles and meetings, nor the sedentary pleasures of private society were known, the fair time was the season for diversions, which degenerating into dissoluteness, gave a sanction to the invectives and severities of the clergy. The traders were frequently excommunicated. The people held those strangers in abhorrence, who supplied their tyrants with superfluities, and associated with men, whose manners were so repugnant to their prejudices and rude austerity of life. The Jews, who soon engaged in all the branches of commerce, did not bring it into repute. They were then considered in the same light throughout all Europe, as they are at this day in Poland and Turkey. As their fortunes were increasing every day, they were enabled to advance money to merchants and tradesmen; for which they demanded interest equivalent to the risque they ran in vesting their capital in other hands. The schoolmen were violent in opposing this necessary measure, which their rude prejudices had taught them to condemn. This theological determination of a point of a civil and political nature, was attended with strange consequences. The magistrates, blinded by an authority, against even the unjust exercise of which no one dared to appeal, denounced sentence of
con-

BOOK

I.

confiscation and ignominious penalties against usury, which, in those dark ages, the laws did not distinguish from the most moderate interest. It was at this juncture, that to make themselves amends for the dangers and mortifications they were exposed to in carrying on a commerce, which was looked upon as odious and unlawful, the Jews abandoned themselves to the most excessive rapacity. They were held in universal detestation. Persecuted, pillaged, and proscribed, they invented bills of exchange, which secured the remains of their fortunes. The clergy declared the exchange usurious, but it was of too great utility to be abolished. One of the effects it produced, was to make the merchants more independant of the prince, who treated them better, apprehending that they might transport their riches into foreign countries.

THE Italians, who are better known by the name of Lombards, were the first who took advantage of this early change of ideas. They formed small communities, and procured the protection of some states, who, on their account, dispensed with the laws against strangers, which had been made in the barbarous ages. By virtue of this indulgence, they became agents for all the southern parts of Europe.

THE inhabitants of the north began likewise to awake from their lethargy: but their recovery was later, and effected with greater difficulty. Hamburgh and Lubec having attempted to open a trade in the Baltic, were obliged to unite for their mutual defence against the pirates who infested those latitudes. The success of this little combination, encouraged other towns to enter into a confederacy: which, in a short time, was composed of fourscore cities, and which had either obtained or purchased the privileges of being governed by their own laws, and formed a line of communication from the Baltic

tic to the Rhine. This association, which was the first **BOOK**
of modern ones that adopted a regular system of com- **I.**
merce, supplied the Lombards with naval stores and
other merchandise of the north, in exchange for the
produce of Asia, Italy, and the other southern countries.

FLANDERS was the scene of these happy transac-
tions; but it was not to its situation alone that it owed
a distinction so favourable to its interests: this must like-
wise be attributed to its numerous manufactures of fine
cloth, and particularly of tapestry; which last affords a
convincing proof how little the arts of drawing and per-
spective were then known. By these advantageous cir-
cumstances, the Low-Countries became the richest, the
most populous, and the best cultivated part of Europe.

THE flourishing condition of the inhabitants of Flan-
ders, the Hanse Towns, and some republics, who owed
their prosperity to their freedom, engaged the attention
of most of the reigning monarchs, in whose dominions
the rights of citizens had hitherto been confined to the
nobility and clergy; and the rest of their subjects were
slaves. But as soon as the cities were declared free, and
had large immunities granted them, the merchants and
mechanics entered into associations, which rose in esti-
mation as they acquired riches. The sovereigns op-
posed their power to that of the barons. Thus anarchy
and feudal tyranny gradually decreased. The tradesmen
became citizens, and the third state was reinstated in its
privilege of being admitted to the national assembly.

MONTESQUIEU attributes to Christianity the honour
of having abolished slavery; but we venture to differ
from him. When industry and riches prevailed among
the people, the princes began to hold them in some esti-
mation; when the sovereign could avail himself of the
riches of the people, to gain advantages over the barons,
laws were framed to put the people in a better condi-
tion.

B O O K

I.

tion. It was to that sound policy, which commerce always introduces, and not to the spirit of the Christian religion, that kings were induced to bestow freedom upon the slaves of their vassals, because those slaves, when made free, became subjects. It is true, that Pope Alexander III. declared that Christians were to be exempt from servitude; but this declaration was made merely to please the kings of France and England, who were desirous of humbling their vassals.

IN Italy one might perceive the dawning of more prosperous days. The republics of Pisa, Genoa and Florence, were established on the wisest principles: the factions of the Guelphs and Gibbelines, which had for so many ages laid waste these delightful countries, were at length appeased; trade flourished, and consequently learning would soon be introduced. Venice was in the height of its glory; its navy, which eclipsed that of its neighbours, checked the progress of the maritime power of the Mammelucs, and the Turks; in commerce it was superior to all the European states taken together; its inhabitants were numerous, and its riches immense: the revenues were well managed, and the people were content; the republic borrowed money of the richer subjects, from motives not of necessity, but of policy. The Venetians were the first people who found out the secret of attaching rich individuals to the interests of government, by inviting them to vest some part of their fortune in the public funds. At Venice there were manufactures of silk, gold and silver; it supplied foreigners with ships: their works in gold and silver were the best, and almost the only ones of that time. The inhabitants were even accused of extravagance in having gold and silver plate, and other utensils of the same materials. They were not however without sumptuary laws; but these laws laid no restraint on a kind of luxury
by

by which the sums expended were preserved to the state. The noblemen united oeconomy with splendor ; the opulence of Venice had revived the architecture of Athens, and upon the whole there was magnificence as well as elegance in their luxury ; the people were ignorant, but the nobles were enlightened ; the government opposed the attempts of the popes with firmness and prudence : *Siamo Veneziani, poi Christiani*, said one of their senators, who expressed in these words the sense of the whole senate ; at that time even they debased the priesthood, when they had better made it useful to morality ; which however, was more rigid and pure among the Venetians than among the other people of Italy. Their troops were very different from those miserable *Condottieri*, whose name was so much more terrible than their arms. Venice was the seat of politeness ; and society was then under less restraint from the spies of government than it has been since the republic began to be jealous of the power of its neighbours, and to be diffident of its own industry.

IN the fifteenth century, Italy far surpassed the other states of Europe. Religious zeal, which supplied the place of merit, and occasioned so many trifling ceremonies and cruel oppressions was, however, the means of releasing Spain from the Arabian yoke ; its several provinces had lately been united by the marriage of Ferdinand and Isabella, and the conquest of Granada ; and its power was even equal to that of France. The fine wool of Castile and Leon was manufactured at Segovia, and their cloths were sold all over Europe and even in Asia ; the perpetual efforts the Spaniards were obliged to make to preserve their liberty, inspired them with resolution and confidence ; their success had elevated their minds ; and being ignorant, they abandoned themselves to all the enthusiasm of chivalry and religion. Confined to a pe-

B O O K

I.

ninsula, and having no immediate commerce with other nations, they entertained that contempt for them, which either among individuals or communities, is usually the characteristic of ignorance. They were the only people that maintained a standing body of infantry; this infantry was excellent. As the Spaniards for many ages had been involved in war, their soldiery was indisputably superior to that of the other states of Europe.

THE Portuguese had much the same cast, but their monarchy was better regulated than that of Castile, and the administration was conducted with more ease after the reduction of the Moors by the conquest of Algarva.

IN France, Lewis the XI. had just lowered the power of the great vassals, raised that of the magistracy, and made the nobles subject to the laws. The people of France growing less dependant on their lords, must necessarily become, in a short time, more industrious, more active and more respectable; but industry and commerce could not flourish on a sudden. Reason must of course make but a slow progress in the midst of those commotions which were still excited by the great and under the reign of a prince devoted to the most abominable superstition. The barons were distinguished only by their savage haughtiness; their revenues were scarce sufficient to entertain in their suite a train of gentlemen without employment, who defended them against the sovereign and the laws. The expences of their table were immoderate; and this savage luxury, of which there are still too many remains, afforded no encouragement to any of the useful arts. But neither the manners nor the language of those times, partook of that decency which distinguishes the superior ranks of citizens, and procures them respect from the rest. Notwithstanding the courtesy enjoined to the knights, coarse and rough manners still prevailed among the great, the nation

tion had then the same character of inconsistency it has since preserved ; and which a nation will ever have, whose morals and customs are not conformable to the laws. The prince's councils issued innumerable, and frequently contradictory edicts, but the prince readily dispensed with the observance of them. By this easy disposition of the sovereign, the inconveniences which would have arisen from a multitude of laws inconsiderately made by the French ministry, have been happily prevented.

B O O K
I.

ENGLAND, less opulent, and less industrious than France, was composed of insolent barons, despotic bishops, and a people who were tired of their yoke ; a certain restless disposition prevailed in the nation, which must necessarily sooner or later introduce liberty. This character owed its rise to the absurd tyranny of William the Conqueror, and the cruel temper of several of his successors. The intolerable abuse of power had made the English extremely jealous of their sovereigns ; the very name of king carried with it the idea of terror ; and these sentiments transmitted from father to son, afterwards laid the foundations of that form of government they now have the happiness to enjoy. The long contention between the houses of York and Lancaster, while it raised a martial spirit and an impatience of slavery, involved the nation, at the same time, in poverty and confusion. The English wool was at that time manufactured in Flanders, and was exported as well as its lead and tin, in vessels belonging to the Hanse Towns. The principles of navigation, of internal policy, jurisprudence, luxury, and the fine arts were entirely unknown in England ; at the same time that it was overburthened with a multitude of rich convents and hospitals. The distressed convents were the usual resort of the nobles, as the hospitals were of the common people ; idleness and

B O O K barbarous manners were encouraged by these superstitious institutions.

I.

GERMANY, which had long been harrassed by quarrels between the emperors and the popes, and by intestine wars, had at this time begun to enjoy a state of tranquillity; order had taken place of anarchy, and the inhabitants of this extensive country, who, though strangers to wealth and commerce were versed in the arts of war and agriculture, had nothing to fear from their neighbours, neither could they be formidable to them. The feudal systems so fatal to mankind in other countries, here assumed a milder aspect; the princes presiding over this vast extent of territory, generally speaking, governed their respective states with a good deal of moderation; they seldom abused their authority, and if the peaceable possession of their estates could compensate the want of liberty, the Germans were happy; commerce and industry were entirely confined to the free cities, and to the towns included in the Hanseatic league; the mines of Hanover and Saxony were not yet discovered; silver was scarce; the farmer sold a few horses to strangers, nor had the princes yet introduced the traffic of the human species; the expences of the table, and a variety of equipages were the only articles of luxury; the nobles and the clergy intoxicated themselves, without disturbing the government; it was with some difficulty that the gentry were dissuaded from amusing themselves with robbing on the highways; their manners were savage, and during the two succeeding centuries the German troops were more distinguished by their cruelties than by their discipline and bravery.

THE northern countries had made less progress than Germany. Oppressed by the nobles and priests, the inhabitants no longer retained that enthusiastic love of glory with which the religion of Wodin had formerly inspired

inspired them : nor were they yet acquainted with those **B O O K**
 wise institutions which some of them have since borrow- **I.**
 ed from better forms of government. Their power
 was so inconsiderable, that a single Hanse town was ca-
 pable of intimidating the three potentates of the north.
 They resumed a national character after the reforma-
 tion, and under the auspices of Frederic and Gustavus
 Vasa.

THE Turks were strangers to the science of govern-
 ment : they had no knowledge of the arts, nor taste for
 commerce : but the Janissaries were the best troops in
 the world. These attendants of a despot whom they
 kept in awe, at the same time that they insured respect
 to him whom they placed upon the throne, or strangled
 at pleasure, had at that time some great men for their
 leaders. They subverted the empire of the Greeks, who
 were infatuated with theology, and stupified by super-
 stition. Some of the inhabitants of this mild climate,
 who cultivated literature and the arts, abandoned their
 country after it was subdued, and took refuge in Italy ;
 whither they were followed by artists and traders. Tran-
 quillity, peace, prosperity, a desire of excelling, and the
 want of new pleasures, which is the effect of good go-
 vernments, favoured the revival of letters in the coun-
 try of the ancient Romans ; and it was from the Greeks
 that the Italians derived a better knowledge of good
 models, and a taste for antiquity. The art of printing
 was invented ; and though for a long time the discovery
 was of little use while the people continued in a state of
 poverty and indolence, yet when commerce and the arts
 had made some progress, it made books become com-
 mon. A love of study prevailed, and the ancients were
 universally admired : but they had no rivals except in
 Italy.

ROME, which in every century has almost always as-
 sumed

B O O K
L

sumed a character the best adapted to the present moment, seemed disposed no longer to encourage that ignorance which had so long been subservient to her interests. She protected polite literature, and such of the arts as depended more on imagination than reason. The most ignorant priest is well aware, that representations of a terrible divinity, mortification, self-denial, austerity, melancholy and terror, are so many expedients to gain an ascendant over the minds of men, by engaging them deeply in religious matters. But there are times when these expedients have but little success. Men, who have grown rich in peaceful states, are fond of enjoying themselves; they dislike the dull road of life, and are eager in their pursuit of pleasures. When fairs began to be established, with entertainments of sports, dancing, and other recreations, the clergy, who observed, that the love of festivity made the people less religious, prohibited these sports, and excommunicated those who bore a part in them. But when they found that no regard was paid to their censures, they changed their plan, and determined to take these amusements into their own hands. This was the origin of sacred comedy. The death of St. Catherine, acted by the monks of St. Dennis, rivalled the success of the players. Music was introduced into the churches; and even farces were exhibited there. The festivals called *la Fete des foux & de L'Ane, & des Innocens*, proved as entertaining to the people as the farces that were acted in the public places. It often happened, that attracted by the mere love of amusement, they left the Egyptian dances to join in the procession for the festival of St. John. As Italy improved in politeness, their pleasures became more refined; and the decency that was introduced into their common feasts and public entertainments, afforded less pretence for the censures of the priests, and procured them

them a toleration. The merit of being able to read had **B O O K**
 been long confined to this class of men; but when it **I.**
 became a more general accomplishment, they could no
 longer avail themselves of this distinction: and finding
 that learning was the road to fame, they were ambi-
 tious of shining in literary pursuits. The popes, who
 enjoyed an opulent and peaceful sovereignty in the vo-
 luptuous region of Italy, laid aside their austerity. Their
 court became an agreeable one. The encouragement
 of literature was considered as a new expedient to esta-
 blish their authority over the minds of men. Genius
 was cherished; and marks of honour were conferred
 upon great artists. Raphael died but a short time be-
 fore he was to have been created a cardinal; and Pe-
 trarch had the honours of a triumph. As little con-
 formable as this good taste, these fine arts, and new
 amusements, may appear to the spirit of the gospel,
 they were evidently calculated to promote the interest
 of the papal throne. The belles lettres serve to em-
 bellish the structure of the church; but philosophy de-
 molishes it. Thus, while the church of Rome favoured
 polite literature, and the fine arts, it discountenanced
 the severer sciences. The poets were crowned with
 laurel; but the philosophers were persecuted. Galileo
 from his prison might have beheld Tasso carried in tri-
 umph to the capitol, if those men of great genius had
 been cotemporaries.

It was high time that philosophy and learning should
 lend their support to morality and reason. The church
 of Rome had taken all imaginable pains to subvert those
 principles of justice which nature had implanted in all
 mankind. The single maxim that the pope had a right
 to the sovereignty of all empires, sapped the founda-
 tion of all society and public virtue; this maxim, how-
 ever, had for a long time prevailed, together with that

B O O K
I.

horrid doctrine, which not only permitted but enjoined hatred and persecution towards all, whose religious opinions were not agreeable to those of the Romish church. Indulgences, a species of expiation which might be purchased for all crimes, or if any thing can be still more monstrous, for crimes to be committed in future ; dispensations for breaking faith with the enemies of the pontiff, though they were of the same religion ; that article of belief which teaches, that the merit of the just may be transferred to the wicked ; vices of all kinds exemplified in the lives of the popes, and other religious persons, who ought to be models to the people ; above all, that greatest reproach to humanity, the inquisition : all these horrid enormities made Europe appear to be rather the haunt of tygers and serpents, than a vast country inhabited or cultivated by men.

SUCH was the situation of Europe, when the Portuguese monarch, at the head of an active, generous and intelligent people, surrounded by neighbours who still preyed upon each other, formed the plan of extending their dominion by sea and land.

The first
 expedi-
 tions of
 the Portu-
 guese ;
 their arri-
 val in the
 Indies.

JOHN I. had several sons, who, being ambitious of signalizing themselves, undertook, first of all, some expeditions to Barbary. Henry, whose genius was superior to the rest, took it into his head to make discoveries in the west. This young prince availed himself of the little knowledge of astronomy which was preserved among the Arabs. At Sagrés, a city of Algarva, he established an observatory, and made it the place of education for all the nobility who composed his train : he had a considerable share in the invention of the Astrolabe, and was the first who was sensible of the advantages that might be drawn from the compass, which, though already known in Europe, had never been applied to the purposes of navigation.

THE

THE pilots, who studied under his direction, discovered Madeira in the year 1418. Two years after this, one of his ships took possession of the Canaries; he doubled the Cape of Sierra-Leona, and the river Zaire led him into the interior parts of Africa as far as Congo. He made an easy conquest of those countries, and established an advantageous commerce. The inconsiderable nations who inhabited those parts, being separated from each other by impassable deserts, were strangers both to the value of their riches, and the art of defending themselves. These voyages raised great expectations: the revenues, that might in future arise from the coast of Guinea, were farmed. An instance of avidity so premature, shows, that princes, who undertook these discoveries, were more solicitous to increase their finances, than to promote the commerce of their subjects.

IN the reign of John the Second, an intelligent prince, who first declared Lisbon a free port; and made a new application of astronomy to navigation, some of his subjects, being sent out upon an expedition, doubled the Cape at the extremity of Africa. This Cape was then called the Cape of Storms; but the prince, who foresaw that it would open a passage to the Indies, gave it the name of the Cape of Good Hope.

EMANUEL pursued the plan chalked out by his predecessors. In 1497 he equipped a fleet consisting of four ships, and gave the command of it to *Vasco de Gama*. This admiral, having weathered several storms in his cruise along the eastern coasts of Africa, and attempted seas before unknown, landed at length in Indostan, after a voyage of thirteen months.

ASIA, of which Indostan is one of the richest parts, is a vast continent, lying, according to the observations of the Russians, the truth of which has been justly doubted, between the 43d and the 207th degree of longitude. It extends,

A geographical description of Asia.

B O O K
I.

extends, between the two poles, from the 77th degree of northern, to the 10th degree of southern latitude. That part of this large continent which is situated in the temperate zone, between the 35th and the 50th degree of latitude, appears to be higher than the rest : it is bordered both towards the north and south by two vast chains of mountains, which run almost from the western extremity of Asia Minor and the coasts of the Black Sea, to the ocean that washes the coasts of China and Tartary towards the east. These two chains are united by other intermediate chains, in a direction from south to north ; they branch out both towards the northern, the Indian, and eastern oceans, and appear like so many bulwarks raised between the beds of the large rivers which roll through those immense regions.

SUCH is the great basis which nature has raised to support the fabric of Asia. In the inland parts of this vast country, the earth, parched by the heat of the sun, becomes so light, that it is carried about by the winds ; there is not the least appearance either of stone or marble ; no petrified shells, or other fossils, are to be found ; the beds of minerals lie upon the surface. All these phenomena, joined to the observations made with the barometer, are proofs of the great elevation of the central part of Asia, to which the moderns have given the name of the lesser Bucharica.

FROM these heights, which form a kind of girdle, surrounding this immense and unfruitful region, several large streams arise, that run in different channels. The fragments of barren earth, which are perpetually carried down by these rivers toward the several extremities of Asia, form so many barriers against the sea, and promise a stability and duration to this continent, superior to that of any other. Perhaps it will be its fate
to

to see the rest repeatedly buried under the waters, before it suffers any encroachment itself.

THE Caspian sea alone has preserved its station within the limits of this vast tract of land, which has been emerging from the deep through a series of ages. It may doubtless be considered as the reservoir of those large rivers that fall into it; but may likewise have some small communication, by subterraneous passages, with the ocean and the Mediterranean, if it be true, as it appears to be from observations made with the barometer at Astracan, that its surface is below the level of of both those seas.

THE frozen ocean, which washes the northern coasts of Siberia, renders them inaccessible, if we may believe the accounts given by the Russians. They tell us that it is in vain to expect to find a new passage by this sea from Europe to America; and that the ice will always prevent the doubling of the Cape of Schalaginskoi, which separates the old from the new world, though this passage has once been crossed. But the Russians are probably either not sufficiently sincere, or sufficiently informed, to deserve entire credit; and either do not know all that they tell us, or do not tell us all that they know.

THE Indian ocean, which presses towards the south of Asia, is divided from the great south sea by a chain of mountains, which begins at the island of Madagascar, and extending under water as far as Sumatra, as is evident from the shallows and rocks which are scattered in those parts, unites again at Van Diemens Land and New Guinea. M. Buache, a geographer, who has examined the earth as a natural philosopher, and has laid down a chart of the world according to this hypothesis, is of opinion, that the sea between this long chain of islands and the southern coasts of Asia, should be divided

B O O K ed into three great basons ; the limits of which seem to
 I. have been circumscribed or drawn by the hand of nature.

THE first, which lies towards the west, between Arabia and Persia, is bounded towards the south by that chain of islands, which extends from Cape Comorin and the Maldiva Islands to Madagascar. This bason, which runs into the land, is incessantly enlarging the Gulph of Persia and the Red Sea. The second of these basons forms the Gulph of Bengal. The third includes the great Archipelago, which contains the Sunda, the Moluccas, and the Philippine Islands. This joins Asia to the southern continent, and serves as a boundary to the Pacific Ocean. Between this sea and the great Archipelago, a kind of new bason is formed by a chain of mountains under water towards the east, which extends from the Ladrone to the Japan Islands. When we have passed these celebrated islands, we come to a chain of islands called Kuriles, which touch the southern point of the Peninsula of Kamtschatka ; and form a fifth bason into which the river Amur empties itself ; but as its entrance is obstructed by the Bamboos, which grow there in great abundance, it is imagined that this sea has very little depth.

THESE geographical details, far from being foreign to our purpose, are in a manner necessary to direct and engage our attention to the richest and finest continent upon the globe. We will begin with Indostan.

Natural
history of
Indostan.

THOUGH by the general name of the East Indies is commonly understood that immense tract of land which lies beyond the Arabian sea, and the Persian empire ; yet by Indostan is properly meant a country lying between two celebrated rivers, the Indus and the Ganges, which fall into the Indian ocean, at the distance of four hundred leagues from each other. A ridge of high mountains

mountains runs across this long tract from north to south, and dividing it into two equal parts, extends as far as Cape Comorin, where it forms the boundary between the coasts of Malabar and Coromandel.

It is a remarkable circumstance, and perhaps the only one of the kind, that this ridge seems to be a barrier, erected by nature, to separate one season from another. The mere breadth of these mountains divides summer from winter; that is to say, the season of fine weather from the rainy; for it is well known there is no winter between the tropics; all that is meant by winter in the Indies is that time of the year when the clouds, which the sun attracts from the sea, are driven violently by the winds against the mountains, where they break and dissolve in rain, accompanied with frequent storms. From hence torrents are formed, which rush from the hills, swell the rivers, and overflow the vallies; dark vapours, that obscure the day, spread a thick and impenetrable gloom over the deluged country: but, like the abyss which brooded over the principles of things before the creation, this cloudy season promotes fertility: at this time the plants and flowers appear in full strength and beauty, and the fruits in general come to maturity.

THE summer may naturally be expected to preserve its usual temperature better than the winter, in a climate so immediately under the influence of the sun: the sky, without a cloud to intercept its rays, seems to be all on fire; but the sea breezes which spring up in the day-time, and the land-breezes that blow during the night, alternately alleviate the heat of the atmosphere; yet the calms, that now and then intervene, stifle these refreshing gales, and the inhabitants are reduced to suffer the inconveniencies of excessive drought.

THE

BOOK

I.

THE effect of the two different seasons is still more remarkably felt in the two Indian oceans, where they are distinguished by the name of the dry and rainy monsoons. While the sea that washes the coasts of Malabar is agitated by storms, which the returning sun introduces with the spring, the slightest vessels sail along the coast of Coromandel upon a smooth surface, and require neither skill nor precaution in their pilots; but in the autumn, which, in its turn, changes the face of the elements, the western coast enjoys a perfect calm, while the eastern Indian ocean is tossed by tempests; each experiencing, as it were, the alternatives of peace and war. An inhabitant of the island of Ceylon, who contemplates the equatorial region at the two equinoxes, sees alternately, on the right hand, the waves vexed with storms, and, on the left, lulled into tranquility; as if the Author of Nature, who holds the scales of calamities and blessings perpetually in his hands, had instantly turned the beam in equilibrium, from one side to the other. It is not improbable that the doctrine of the Manichees, concerning the two principles, might take its rise in India, where the two empires of good and evil are divided only by a partition of mountains; since pain and pleasure seem to be as much the origin of the different forms of worship, as they are of the ideas of mankind. There is so infinite a connection between natural and moral principles, that all systems of importance to the happiness of the human species have taken their colour from the nature of the climate: accordingly it is observable, that the Indians, whose imaginations receive the deepest impression of nature from the more forcible operation of good and evil, and the view they constantly have of the discord of the elements, are placed in a situation most fertile in revolutions, events and transactions of every kind.

HENCE

HENCE it is, that the celebrated countries of India, have long engaged the attention of the philosopher, and the historian, whose conjectures have assigned to their earliest inhabitants an æra of the most extraordinary antiquity. To say the truth, whether we consult historical records, or consider the position of Indostan upon the globe, taking for granted that the ocean has a progressive motion from East to West, we must allow that this part of the earth was the first that was inhabited. We may trace the origin of most of the sciences in the history of that country. Even before the age of Pythagoras, the Greeks travelled to India for instruction; the trade carried on by them with the oldest commercial nations, in exchange for their cloth, is a proof of their great progress in the arts of industry.

UPON the whole, it should seem reasonable to conclude, that a climate the best adapted to the human species, would be peopled the earliest; and that the first men would fix their abode in a delicious climate, pure air, and a soil too fertile to require much cultivation. If the human race could be supposed to multiply and extend themselves in those horrid regions, where they must maintain a perpetual struggle with nature; if they could inhabit burning sands and impracticable morasses, and regions of perpetual ice; or frequent deserts and forests, where they must defend themselves against the violence of the elements, and the attacks of wild beasts; how easily might they not form themselves into societies in these delightful countries, where mankind, exempt from necessity, has nothing to pursue but pleasure; where enjoying without labour and anxiety, the choicest productions, and the most glorious prospect of the great scene of nature, they might justly assume the distinguishing title of Lords of the Creation. These delightful scenes presented

B O O K

I.



presented themselves on the banks of the Ganges, and in the plains of Indostan. The air is perfumed with the most delicious fruits, and affords a wholesome and refreshing nourishment; the trees form a shade impenetrable to the rays of the sun; while the living animals that are dispersed over the globe, cannot subsist in other parts without devouring each other, they share in India, in common with their master, the sweets of plenty and security. Even at this day, when we may think that the earth must have been exhausted by the productions of so many ages, and their consumption in foreign countries, Indostan, if we except a few sandy and barren districts, is still the most fruitful country in the world.

Religion,
govern-
ment, and
customs of
Indostan.

THE system of morals in this country is no less extraordinary than the system of nature. When we fix our eyes on this vast region, where nature hath exerted her utmost efforts for the happiness of man, we cannot but regret that man hath done all in his power to oppose her. The rage of conquest, and what is no less destructive an evil, the greediness of traders have, in their turns, ravaged and oppressed the finest country on the face of the globe.

NOTWITHSTANDING the numbers of savage banditti, and other strangers, whom war or desire of gain has invited to the Indies, it is easy to distinguish the ancient inhabitants. There is not, however, so much difference in the cast of complexion and outward appearance of these people, as in the particularities of their character; oppressed as they have been with the yoke of tyranny, or rather of the wildest anarchy, they have not adopted either the manners, the laws, or the religion of their masters. Their continual experience of all the horrors of war, all the excesses and vices of which human nature is capable, has not tainted their character. Nothing has ever been able to reconcile the tender,
humane

humane and timorous Indian to scenes of blood, or to animate him with the courage and spirit of rebellion. BOOK
I.
His vices arise solely from weakness.

THE judicious traveller, who traversing the plains of Egypt, sees trunks of columns, mutilated statues, broken entablatures, and immense pyramids that have escaped the ravages of war and time, dispersed about the country, is lost in admiration at the view of the ruins of a nation which no longer exists. He cannot now find out the situation of Thebes, that city so celebrated in antiquity for its hundred gates; but the venerable remains of its temples and of its tombs, give him a higher idea of its magnificence than the descriptions of Herodotus and Diodorus Siculus.

WHEN we attentively examine the accounts given by travellers of the manners of the natives of India; we seem to wander among heaps of ruins, the remains of an immense fabric. The original form is lost, but enough is preserved to convince us of the magnificence and regularity of the plans. Amidst a variety of absurd superstitions, puerile and extravagant customs, strange ceremonies and prejudices, we may discover the traces of sublime morality, deep philosophy, and refined policy; but when we attempt to trace the religious and civil institutions to their source, we find that they are lost in the maze of antiquity. By the most ancient traditions, the Indians appear to have been the first who received the rudiments of science, and the polish of civilization. But their legislative system has never been discovered; and the ancients themselves seem only to have retained some fragments of it.

IN India are found the traces of a multitude of superstitious observances, arts, sports, errors and truths of all kinds, which have been adopted by almost all nations.

B O O K
I.

THE Indians themselves are ignorant of the origin of their religion and policy: they have to this day preserved customs which must certainly have owed their rise to a system that no longer exists: the spirit of their political constitution is lost, and every branch of it either changed or corrupted. Their religion, which was of the allegorical and moral kind, hath degenerated into a heap of extravagant and obscene superstitions, owing to their having realized those fictions which were intended merely as so many symbols and emblems. WERE it possible to obtain a sight of their sacred books, the only remains there are of the Indian antiquities, we might, in some measure, be enabled to remove the veil that envelopes these numerous mysteries; but we have little reason to hope that we shall ever be intrusted with such a communication.

THE emperor Mahmud Akebar took it into his head to make himself acquainted with the principles of all the religious sects throughout his extensive provinces. Having discarded the superstitious notions with which he had been prepossessed by his education in the Mohammedan religion, he resolved to judge for himself. It was easy for him to be informed of the nature of those systems, that are formed upon the plan of making proselytes; but he found himself disappointed in his design, when he came to treat with the Indians, who will not admit any person whatever to the participation of their mysteries.

NEITHER the authority nor promises of Akebar could prevail with the Bramins to disclose the tenets of their religion; he was therefore obliged to have recourse to artifice. The stratagem he made use of was to cause an infant, of the name of Feizi, to be committed to the care of these priests, as a poor orphan of the sacerdotal line, who alone could be initiated into the

the sacred rites of their theology. Feizi, having received the proper instructions for the part he was to act, was conveyed privately to Benares, the seat of knowledge in Indostan; he was received into the house of a learned Bramin, who educated him with the same care as if he had been his son. After the youth had spent ten years in study, Akebar was desirous of recalling him; but he was struck with the charms of the daughter of his preceptor.

THE women of the sacerdotal tribe are looked upon as the greatest beauties in Indostan. The old Bramin laid no restraint on the growing passion of the two lovers; he was fond of Feizi, who had gained his affection by his address and docility, and offered him his daughter in marriage. The young man divided between love and gratitude, resolved to conceal the fraud no longer; and, falling at the feet of the Bramin, discovered the imposture, and asked pardon for his offence.

THE priest, without reproaching him in the least, seized a poinard which hung at his girdle, and was going to plunge it in his breast, if Feizi had not prevented him by taking hold of his arm. The young man used every means to pacify him, and declared himself ready to do any thing to expiate his treachery. The Bramin, bursting into tears, promised to pardon him on condition that he should swear never to translate the *Bedas*, or sacred volumes, or disclose to any person whatever the symbol of the Bramin creed. Feizi readily promised all that the Bramin required: how far he kept his word is not known; but the sacred books of the Indians have never been translated by him, or any one else, to this day.

As the Bramins are the only persons who understand the language of the sacred book, their comments on the text are the same as those which have ever been made

BOOK

I.

on religious books ; all the maxims which fancy, interest, passion or false zeal can suggest, are to be found in these volumes. These exclusive pretensions of the interpreters of religion have given them that unbounded influence over the people, which impostors and fanatics will not fail to exert over men who have not the courage to consult either their own reason, or their own feelings.

FROM the Indus to the Ganges, the *Vedam* is universally received as the book that contains the principles of religion ; but the generality differ on several points relative to faith and practice. That spirit of debate and refinement, which for so many ages has infected the philosophy of our schools, has made still further progress among the Bramins, and caused more absurdities in their doctrines, than it has introduced into ours, by a mixture of Platonism, which is perhaps itself derived from the doctrines of the Bramins.

THROUGHOUT all Indostan, the laws of government, customs and manners make a part of religion ; being all derived from Brama, a being far superior in dignity to the human race, the interpreter of the divinity, the author of the sacred books, and the great lawgiver of India.

THERE is some reason to believe that Brama was possessed of the sovereign authority ; as his religious institutions were evidently designed to inspire the people with a profound reverence and great love for their country, and particularly levelled against the vices incident to the climate. Few religions seem to have been so well adapted to the countries for which they were calculated.

THE Indians entertain the same religious veneration for him, as they do for the three capital rivers of Indostan, the Indus, the Crissina and the Ganges. It was he who rendered sacred the animal that is most serviceable in

in the cultivation of land, as well as the cow, whose milk is so wholesome a nourishment in hot countries. To him they ascribe the division of the people into tribes or *castes*, distinguished from each other by their political and religious principles. This institution is antecedent to all traditions and known records, and may be considered as the most striking proof of the great antiquity of the Indians. Nothing appears more contrary to the natural progress of social connections, than this distribution of the members of the same community into distinct classes. Such an idea could only be the result of a studied plan of legislation, which pre-supposes a great proficiency in civilization and knowledge. Another circumstance still more extraordinary is, that this distinction should continue so many ages, after the leading idea and connecting tie was forgotten; and affords us a remarkable example of the strength of national prejudices, when sanctified by religious ideas.

THE nation is divided into four classes, the Bramins, the soldiery, husbandmen and mechanics: these classes have their subdivisions. There are several orders of Bramins: those who mix in society are, for the most part, very corrupt in their morals; they believe that the water of the Ganges will wash away all their crimes; and as they are not subject to any civil jurisdiction, live without either restraint or virtue, excepting that character of compassion and charity which is so commonly found in the mild climate of India.

THE others who live abstracted from the world, are either weak minded men or enthusiasts, and abandon themselves to laziness, superstition, and the dream of metaphysics. We find in their disputes the very same ideas that occur in the writings of our most celebrated metaphysicians, such as, substance, accident, priority,

B O O K
I.

posteriority, immutability, indivisibility, the vital and sensitive soul; but with this difference, that whereas in India these fine discoveries are very ancient, it is but a very short time since father Lombard, Thomas Aquinas, Leibnitz, and Mallebranche astonished all Europe with their dexterity in raising their visionary systems. As this abstracted manner of reasoning was derived to us from the Greek philosophers, whose refinement we have gone far beyond, it is not improbable that the Greeks themselves might have borrowed this ridiculous knowledge from the Indians; unless we rather chuse to suppose, that as the principles of metaphysics lie open to the capacities of all nations, the indolence of the Bramins may have produced the same effect in India, as that of our monks has done in Europe; notwithstanding the inhabitants of one country had never communicated their doctrines to those of the other.

SUCH are the descendants of the ancient Brachmans, whom antiquity never speaks of but with admiration; because the affectation of austerity and mystery, and the privilege of declaring the will of heaven have imposed upon the vulgar in all ages. The Greeks ascribe the doctrine of the immortality of the soul, to certain notions concerning the nature of the Supreme Being, and future rewards and punishments.

To this species of knowledge which is the more flattering to the curiosity of man in proportion as it transcends his weak capacity, the Brachmans added an infinite number of religious observances, which were adopted by Pythagoras in his school; such as fasting, prayer, silence, and contemplation; virtues of the imagination, which have a more powerful effect upon the vulgar than those of a useful and benevolent tendency. The Brachmans were looked upon as the friends of the gods, because they affected to pay them so much regard;

gard and as the protectors of mankind, because they paid them no regard at all. No bounds were therefore set to the respect and gratitude that were shown them; princes themselves did not scruple to consult these recluses upon any critical conjuncture, from a supposition, no doubt, that they were inspired, since it was impossible to imagine that they had the advantages of experience. After all, we can hardly deny that there might be among them some men of real virtue, whose minds relished the pure and ingenuous delights of study and science; and who, by nobly raising their thoughts to the contemplation of the first Being, had but the stronger reason to render themselves worthy of his care, and none to justify them in deceiving, and tyrannizing over their fellow-creatures.

THE military class consists of the Rajas on the coast of Coromandel, and the Nairs on the coast of Malabar. There are likewise whole nations, the Canar and the Marattas for instance, who assume the profession, either because they are the descendants of some tribes originally devoted to arms, or because times and circumstances have introduced a change in their primitive institutions.

THE third class consists entirely of husbandmen, and there are few countries where this set of men have a better title to the gratitude of their fellow-subjects; they are laborious and industrious, perfectly acquainted with the art of distributing their rivulets, and of making the burning soil they inhabit as fertile as possible. They are in India what they would be every where else, if not corrupt or oppressed by government, the most honest and virtuous of men. This class which was formerly much respected, was free from tyranny, and the ravages of war; never were the husbandmen obliged to bear arms; their lands and their labours were

B O O K
I.

held equally sacred; they ploughed their fields within view of contending armies. who suffered them to pursue their peaceful toil without molestation; their corn was never set on fire, nor their trees cut down; religion too, that all-powerful principle, lent her assistance to reason, which, though it inculcates indeed, the propriety of protecting useful occupations, has not of itself sufficient influence to enforce the execution of its own laws.

THE tribe of mechanics was branched out into as many subdivisions as there are trades; no one was allowed to relinquish the profession of his parents; for which reason industry and vassalage have ever gone hand in hand, and carried the arts to as high perfection as they can possibly attain without the assistance of taste and imagination, which seldom unfold themselves but under the kind influences of emulation and liberty.

BESIDES these tribes, there is a fifth, which is the outcast of all the rest; the members of it are employed in the meanest offices of society; they bury the dead; carry away dirt, and live upon the flesh of animals that die natural deaths; they are held in such abhorrence that if any of their society dares to touch any person belonging to the other classes, he has a right to kill him on the spot; they are called Parias.

IN Malabar there is another race of men, called Poulchees, who suffer still greater injuries and hardships; they inhabit the forests; where they are not permitted to build huts, but are obliged to make a kind of nest upon the trees; when they are pressed with hunger, they howl like wild beasts to excite the compassion of the passengers. The most charitable among the Indians deposit some rice or other food at the foot of a tree; and retire with all possible haste to give the famished wretch an opportunity of taking it without meeting with his benefactor,

factor, who would think himself polluted by coming near him. **BOOK**
I.

THE Europeans, by living with these unhappy people upon terms of common humanity, at length made themselves almost equally the objects of detestation among the Indians. This detestation prevails even to this day in the inland parts of the country, where the want of intercourse keeps alive those rooted prejudices, which wear off gradually near the sea-coasts, where the interests and mutual wants of commerce unite men with each other, and consequently introduce juster notions of human nature.

ALL these classes are for ever separated from each other by unsurmountable barriers; they are not allowed to intermarry, live, or eat together. Whoever transgresses this rule, is banished as a disgrace to his tribe,

BUT when they go in pilgrimage to the temple of Jagrenat, or the Supreme Being, the case is quite altered. At these seasons the Bramins, the Raja or Nair, the husbandman and mechanic carry their offerings, and eat and drink promiscuously; they are there admonished that the distinctions of birth are of human institution, and that all men are brethren and children of the same God.

THOSE religious sentiments, which have given a sanction to this subordination of ranks among the Indians, have not had sufficient influence to prevent them entirely from aspiring to those marks of distinction which are appropriated to the superior classes. That spirit of ambition so natural to mankind, has sometimes exerted itself, and singular expedients have been tried by men jealous of superiority to share with the Bramins the veneration of the multitude; this has given rise to a race of monks known in India by the name of Fakirs.

MEN

B O O K

I.

MEN of all the tribes or castes are permitted to follow this class of life; nothing more is required than to emulate the Bramins in abstracted contemplation and indolence; but at the same time they are obliged to surpass them in extensive austerities, which strike the mildest people in the world with religious horror. The appearance of these fanatics exceeds imagination; some of them wallow in the dirt, others accustom themselves to painful postures, extending their arms over their head till they are unable to recover their natural position; and a third sort continue standing seven or eight days together, which occasions prodigious swellings in their legs; they all of them enter into an engagement never to wash their bodies, or comb their hair; and to oppose and disgrace nature, with a view of recommending themselves to its author. The respect paid them by the people is their only recompense for these sacrifices, which infinitely exceed all the mortifications practised by the European monks; if those may be called mortifications, which are nothing more than singular ceremonies practised at an early age, when to get rid of scruples concerning the gratification of natural and forbidden passions, the youthful imagination ardently embraces any system of life, however extravagant, provided it has received the public sanction, and is calculated to administer to their pleasures.

THOUGH in the sacred books of the Indians we do not meet with those instances of the marvellous, which sometimes strike so forcibly in the Greek theology, their mythology is as irregular as that of almost any other people. We do not find, in particular, any connection between their religious principles and the several classes that form the basis of their government. The shaſtah, which is looked upon by some as a commentary on the vedam, and by others as an original work, an extract of which,

which, lately published in England, has thrown some **B O O K**
 light upon this subject. This book teaches that the ^{I.}
 eternal being absorbed in the contemplation of his own
 essence, formed the resolution of creating beings, who
 might partake of his glory. He spoke, and angels rose
 into existence; they sang in concert the praises of their
 creator, and harmony reigned in the celestial region,
 when two of these spirits having revolted, drew a legion
 after them. The Supreme Being drove them into a
 place of torment, from whence they were released at
 the intercession of the faithful angels, upon conditions,
 which at once inspired them with joy and terror. The
 rebels were sentenced, under different forms, to undergo
 punishments in the lowest of the fifteen planets, in pro-
 portion to the enormity of their first offence; accord-
 ingly each angel underwent eighty seven transmigrations
 upon earth, before he animated the body of a cow,
 which holds the first rank among the animal tribes.
 These different transmigrations are considered as so ma-
 ny stages of expiation, preparatory to a state of proba-
 tion, which commences as soon as the angel transmi-
 grates from the body of the cow into a human body; in
 this situation the creator enlarges his intellectual facul-
 ties, and constitutes him a free agent; and his good or
 bad conduct hastens or retards the season of his pardon.
 The good are at their death re-united to the Supreme
 Being, and the wicked begin anew the æra of their ex-
 piation.

HENCE it appears, that according to this tradition of
 the shastah, the metempsychosis is an actual punishment,
 and that the souls that animate the generality of the
 brute creation, are nothing more than wicked spirits.
 This explanation is certainly not universally adopted in
 India. It was probably invented by some devotee of a
 melancholy and rigid cast; as the doctrine of the trans-
 migration

B O O K migration of souls seems originally to have been founded rather on hope than fear.

In fact, it is natural to suppose that it was only adopted at first as an idea that flattered and soothed humanity, and would easily be embraced in a country where mankind, living under the influence of a delicious climate, and a mild government, began to be sensible of the shortness of life. A system which extended life beyond its natural limits could not fail to be well received. It is a consolation to an old man, who sees himself deserted by all that is dear to him, to imagine that his enjoyments will still remain, and that his dissolution only opens a passage to another scene of existence. At the same time, it is equally matter of consolation to the friends who attend him in his last moments, to think, that in leaving the world he does not relinquish the hopes of rising once more into life. Hence was the rise and progress of the doctrine of transmigration. Reason, dissatisfied with this illusion, may urge in vain, that without recollection there can be no continuance or identity of being; and that if a man does not remember that he has existed, he is in the same situation as if he had never existed before:—Sentiment adopted what reason disallowed.

THE shaftah, no doubt, has given a greater air of severity to the doctrine of the metempsychosis, with a view of making it more instrumental in supporting the system of morality it was necessary to establish. In fact, upon this idea of the transmigration considered in the light of a punishment, they explain the duties which the angels were required to perform. The principal ones were charity, abstinence from animal food, and a scrupulous adherence to the profession of their ancestors. This last-mentioned prejudice, in which all people seem to agree, notwithstanding they differ in their opinions concerning its origin, is without a parallel,

lel, if we except among the ancient Egyptians, whose **B O O K**
 institutions have some kind of historical relation to those **I.**
 of the Indians, which are now unknown to us. But
 though the Egyptian laws established a distinction of
 ranks, none were held in contempt; while on the contra-
 ry, the laws of Brama, by the introduction, perhaps,
 of some abuses, seem to have condemned one part of
 the nation to pain and infamy.

THERE is reason to believe that the Indians were al-
 most as civilized when Brama instituted his laws, as
 they are at present. Whenever a community begins to
 to assume a certain form, it naturally divides into sever-
 al classes, according to the variety and extent of those
 arts that are necessary to supply its demands.

It was doubtless the intention of Brama, by confirma-
 ing these different professions by sanctions of religion,
 and confining the exercise of them perpetually to the
 same families, to give them a lasting establishment on
 political principles; but he did not foresee that by these
 means he should obstruct the progress of discoveries,
 which, in the end, might give rise to new occupations.
 Accordingly, if we may judge by the scrupulous atten-
 tion paid by the Indians at this day to the laws of Brama,
 we may affirm that industry has made no advances a-
 mong this people, since the time of this legislator; and
 that they were almost as civilized as they are at present,
 when they first received his laws. This remark is suffi-
 cient to give us an idea of the antiquity of these people,
 who have made no improvements in knowledge since an
 æra which seems to be the most ancient in history.

BRAMA prescribed different kinds of food for these re-
 spective tribes. The military, and some other ranks,
 were permitted to eat venison and mutton. Fish was al-
 lowed to some husbandmen, and mechanics. Others
 lived upon milk and vegetables. None of the Bramins
 ate any thing that had life. Upon the whole, these peo-
 ple

B O O K

I.



ple are extremely sober; but their abstinence varies in proportion to the greater or less labour required in their professions.

THEY marry in their infancy, and their wives maintain a character of fidelity unknown in other countries. Some of the superior ranks are allowed the privilege of having several wives. It is well known that those of the Bramins burn themselves on the death of their husbands, and they seem to be the only persons who are obliged to it by the laws. Others, however, are fond of following their example, led by that point of honour to which so many victims are sacrificed in all countries. This cruel injunction is confined to widows who have no issue. Those who have children are expected to take care of their education and settlement in the world. Were it not for this precaution, the state, which ought to be the guardian of these orphans, would be laden with a very oppressive burthen.

SINCE the Moguls became masters of Indostan, these horrible spectacles have been very much diminished; as it costs a sum too considerable for any but the rich to obtain a licence for that purpose. But this obstacle has sometimes made their inclinations the stronger. Some women have been known to devote themselves for several years to the lowest and most laborious employments, in order to raise money to defray the expences of this extravagant suicide. Others have been more eagerly ambitious of sacrificing themselves, in proportion as scenes of this kind became less common.

A FEW years ago a young, beautiful, and rich widow, of Surat, aspired to this high honour. The governor refused to grant her permission to consign herself, together with so many valuable endowments, to the flames. The lady, full of indignation, took a handful of burning coals, and, seemingly regardless of the pain, said in a firm tone to the governor, *consider not alone the tenderness*

derness of my age ; see with what insensibility I hold this **B O O K**
fire in my hands ; and know that with equal constancy, I **I.**
shall throw myself into the flames.

ALL the women, however, are not animated with this enthusiastic intrepidity. Many of them, who were ambitious of devoting themselves to the manes of their husbands, have been seized with an involuntary tremor when their approaching fate appeared in all its horrors. To encourage them to this great action, so contrary to reason and nature, a mixture is given them, which, by stupifying the senses, removes the apprehensions, which the preparation for death must unavoidably occasion. The moment the intoxication takes place, these unfortunate widows are directly thrown upon the fatal pile ; and to this stratagem, invented by the advocates for fanaticism, are to be attributed those seeming signs of joy and satisfaction, which appear in their countenances at the sight of those devouring flames that are ready to reduce them to ashes.

THIS institution is not attributed to Brama, but rather seems to be the invention of some Bramin, who carried his jealousy beyond the grave. This piece of refinement, dictated by a barbarous and over-strained affection, is suitable to the character of those superstitious mortals, who think there is an essential merit in rigid morality, and what they call a superior purity.

THESE people are of a mild, humane disposition, and are almost strangers to the passions that prevail among us. What object can ambition have among men who are destined to continue always in the same state ? They love peaceable labour and an indolent life ; and often quote this passage of one of their favourite authors ; *'Tis better to sit still than to walk ; better to sleep than to awake : But death is best of all.*

THEIR

B O O K
I.

THEIR temperance, and the excessive heats of the climate, restrain the violence of their passions, and prevent them from having a strong desire for amorous pleasures. Avarice, which reigns chiefly in people of weak bodies, and little minds, is almost their only passion.

WE may judge of their ingenuity in arts by the specimens that are brought from India. The execution is difficult, but they are destitute of taste and elegance. The sciences are still more neglected; nor have they the least notion of mechanics; before they were acquainted with the Mohammedans, no bridges had ever been erected. The Pagodas are in general nothing more than miserable structures of a square form, admitting no light but at the entrance, which always fronts the east; this defect is supplied by tapers, which are kept burning by the pious and devout. It is asserted, however, that their great Pagodas are regularly built, and that the ornaments both within and without, are of considerable value. The idol is placed in the center of the building so that the parties who are not admitted into the temple, may have a sight of it through the gates. In these Pagodas there are cisterns of water for the purification of the Indians. These superstitious ceremonies are chiefly observed by the people. It is said that there are still some of the Bramins who know how to calculate eclipses; but it is not very easy to discover whether this is done by means of some of their tables derived from their ancestors; or whether they are actually acquainted with the theory previously necessary towards the solution of such problems.

THE military class have chosen to fix their residence in the northern provinces, and the Peninsula is chiefly inhabited by the inferior tribes. Hence it has happened, that all the powers who have attacked India by sea, have

have met with so little resistance. It may not be amiss to remind those philosophers who maintain that man is a frugivorous animal, that the military people who subsist upon animal food, are more robust, courageous and sprightly, and live longer than those of the other classes who feed upon vegetables; at the same time it must be owned, that the difference between the inhabitants of the north and south, is of too uniform a cast to be attributed entirely to the particular kind of nourishment; the cold of the north, the elasticity of the air, less fertility and more labour and exercise, with a more varied kind of life; all these whet the appetite, brace the nerves, raise a spirit of resolution and activity, and give a firmer tone to the organs; on the other hand the heats of the south, together with great quantities of fruit, an inactive life, the constant perspiration, a more free and more lavish use of the means conducive to population, more indulgence in effeminate pleasures, and a sedentary and uniform course of life; while they increase the number of births, occasion a speedier dissolution. Upon the whole it should seem, that though man was not by nature designed to consume the flesh of animals, he is endued with a power of accommodating himself to the various modes of life that prevail in every different climate, and either hunts and lives upon flesh, or vegetables, or turns shepherd or husbandman according to the fertility or barrenness of the soil.

THE religion of Brama was anciently, and still continues to be, divided into eighty-three sects, which agree in some fundamental points, and have no disputes about the rest; they live in amity with men of all persuasions as their own does not oblige them to make proselytes. The Indians seldom admit strangers to their worship, and always with the greatest reluctance.

B O O K

I.

This was in some measure the spirit of the ancient superstition; as it appears among the Egyptians, the Jews, the Greeks and the Romans: and though it has occasioned fewer ravages than the zeal of making converts, it prevents the intercourses of society, and raises an additional barrier between one people and another.

WHEN we consider how kindly nature has provided for the happiness of these fertile countries, where every want is easily supplied; and that the compassionate temper and morals of the Indians, render them equally averse to persecution and the spirit of conquest, we cannot help lamenting that a barbarous inequality should have distinguished one part of the nation by power and privileges, while the rest of the inhabitants are loaded with misery and contempt. What can be the cause of this strange illusion? It must doubtless be traced to that principle which has been the constant source of all the calamities, that have befallen the inhabitants of this globe.

WE need only suppose that a powerful people, with few lights to direct them, adopt an original error, which ignorance brings into fashion: as soon as this error becomes general, it is made the basis of an entire system of politics and morality: and men begin to find that their innocent propensities run counter to their duty. In order to conform to this new plan of morality, they must perpetually be offering violence to the order of nature. This continual struggle will introduce a most amazing contrariety into their manners; and the nation will be composed of a set of wretches, who will pass their lives in mutually tormenting each other, and accusing nature. Such is the picture of all the people upon earth, excepting, perhaps, a few societies of savages. Absurd prejudices have perverted human reason, and even stifled that instinct which teaches animals

mals to resist oppression and tyranny. Multitudes of the human race implicitly submit to be a sort of vassals to a small number of men who oppress them. BOOK
I.

SUCH is the fatal progress of that original error, which imposture has either produced or kept up in the mind of man. May true knowledge revive those rights of reasonable beings, which to be recovered, want only to be known ! Ye sages of the earth, philosophers of every nation, it is yours alone to make laws by pointing them out to your countrymen. Take the glorious resolution to instruct your fellow-creatures: and be assured that it is much easier to propagate truth than error. Mankind, animated by the desire of happiness, to which you will point the way, will listen to you with attention. Make those millions of hireling slaves blush, who are always ready, at the command of their masters, to destroy their fellow-citizens. Rouse all the powers of human nature to oppose this subversion of social laws. Teach mankind that liberty is the institution of God ; authority that of man. Expose those mysterious arts which hold the world in chains and darkness: and let the people be sensible how far their credulity has been imposed upon, re-assuming, with one accord, the use of their faculties, vindicate the honour of the human race.

BESIDES the natives, the Portuguese found Mohammedans in India; some of whom came from the borders of Africa. The greatest part of them were descendents of the Arabs, who either settled here or made incursions. They had made themselves masters of all the countries as far as the Indus, by the force of arms. The most enterprising among them passed this river, and successively penetrated into the extremities of the East. On this immense continent they became the factors of Arabia and Egypt, and were treated with distinguished respect by all the sovereigns who wished to keep up an

B O O K

I.

inrercourse with these countries. Here they multiplied to a great degree; for as their religion allowed polygamy, they married in every place where they made any stay.

THEIR success was still more rapid and lasting in the islands that lie scattered in this ocean. The want of commerce procured them the best reception both from princes and their subjects. They soon rose to the highest dignities in these petty states, and became the arbiters of government. They took advantage of the superiority of their knowledge, and the support they received from their country, to establish an universal dominion. The despots and their vassals, in order to ingratiate themselves with them, abandoned a religion to which they had no great attachment, for new opinions which might procure them some advantages. This sacrifice cost them the less, as the preachers of the Koran made no scruple of admitting ancient superstitions into an alliance with those they wished to establish.

THESE Mohammedan Arabs, who were apostles and merchants at the same time, had already propagated their religion by purchasing a great number of slaves, to whom, after they had been circumcised and instructed in their doctrine, they gave their freedom, but as a certain pride prevented them from mixing their blood with that of these freedmen, the latter have in time become a distinct people, inhabiting the coast of the Indian Peninsula from Goa to Madras; they are at present known in Malabar by the name of Pooliahs, and by that of Coolies, in Coromandel; they understand neither the Persian, the Arabian, nor the Moorish language; and confine themselves to that of the countries in which they live; the generality are addicted to commerce, and profess a species of Mohammedanism extremely corrupted by the Indian superstitions.

INDOSTAN,

INDOSTAN, which has since been almost entirely re- **BOOK**
 duced by war under a foreign yoke, was, at the time of **I.**
 the arrival of the Portuguese, divided between the kings
 of Cambaya, Delhi, Bisnagar, Narzingua and Calicut,
 each of which reckoned several sovereigns more or less
 powerful, among their tributaries. The last of these
 monarchs, who is better known by the name of Zamo-
 rin, which answers to that of emperor, than by the
 name of his capital city; possessed the most maritime
 states, and his empire extended over all Malabar.

THERE is an ancient tradition, that when the Arabs
 began to establish themselves in the Indies in the eighth
 century, the king of Malabar took so great a fancy to
 their religion, that he not only embraced it, but deter-
 mined to end his days at Mecca, Calicut, where he em-
 barked, became a place so dear and so respectable to
 the Moors, that they were insensibly led to make it the
 constant rendezvous of their ships. Thus by the sole ef-
 fect of this superstition, this harbour, incommodious
 and dangerous as it was, became the richest staple of
 these countries. Precious stones, pearls, amber, ivory,
 china-ware, gold and silver, silks and cottons, indigo,
 sugar, all kinds of spices, valuable woods, perfumes,
 beautiful varnish; and whatever conduces to the ele-
 gances of life were carried thither from all parts of the
 east. Some of these rich commodities came by sea;
 but as navigation was neither so safe nor so brisk as it is
 now, a great deal was brought by land by buffaloes
 and elephants.

GAMA, having informed himself of these particulars, **The Por-**
 when he touched at Melinda, hired an able pilot to **tuguese**
 conduct him to that port in which trade was the most **establish a**
 flourishing. Here he fortunately met with a Moor of **settlement**
 Tunis, who understood the Portuguese language, and **on the coast**
 having seen with admiration the great achievements **of Mala-**
bar.

B O O K

I.

of this nation on the coasts of Barbary, conceived a fondness for it which overcame his prejudices. This predilection engaged the Moor to use all his interest in favour of these strangers, who put themselves entirely under his direction. He procured Gama an audience of the Zamorin, who proposed an alliance, and a treaty of commerce with the king his master. This was upon the point of being concluded, when the Mussulmen found means to throw a suspicion upon a rival power, whose courage, activity and knowledge they dreaded. The reports they made to him of its ambition and restlessness, made such an impression on the mind of the prince, that he resolved to destroy those adventurers whom he had just received so favourably.

GAMA being informed of this change by his faithful guide, sent his brother on board the fleet, telling him, *If you should hear that I am thrown into prison, or put to death, I forbid you, as your commander, either to come to my assistance, or revenge my loss; set sail immediately, and inform the king of the particulars of our voyage.*

THEY were happily not reduced to these extremities. The Zamorin, who wanted neither power nor inclination, wanted courage to put his design in execution; and the admiral had leave to rejoin his company. Having made some well-timed reprisals, which procured a restitution of the merchandise he had left a pledge in Calicut, he sailed for Europe.

It is impossible to describe the joy that prevailed at Lisbon on his return. The inhabitants beheld themselves on the point of establishing the richest commerce in the world, and being not only avaritious, but superstitious at the same time, flattered themselves with the hopes of propagating their religion either by persuasion, or by the force of arms. The pope, who let slip no opportunity of confirming the opinion that they are the sovereigns

reigns of the earth, gave the Portuguese all the coasts they should discover in the east, and inspired this little state with all the folly of conquest. BOOK
I.

NUMBERS were eager to embark on board the new fleet that was fitted out for an expedition to the Indies. Thirteen vessels that sailed from the Tagus, under the command of Alvarès Cabral, arrived at Calicut, and restored some of the Zamorin's subjects that Gama had carried away with him. These Indians spoke highly of the treatment they had received; but it was a long time before the Zamorin was reconciled to the Portuguese; the Moorish party prevailed; and the people of Calicut, seduced by their intrigues, massacred fifty of the adventurers. Cabral, in revenge, burnt all the Arabian vessels in the harbour, cannonaded the town, and then sailed first to Cochin and afterwards to Cananor.

THE kings of these two towns gave him spices, offered him gold and silver, and proposed an alliance with him against the Zamorin, to whom they were tributaries. The kings of Onor, Culan, and several other princes, made the same overtures; flattering themselves that they should all be relieved from the tribute they paid to the Zamorin, extend the frontiers of their states, and see their harbours crouded with the spoils of Asia. This general infatuation procured to the Portuguese so great an ascendant over the whole country of Malabar, that wherever they appeared they gave the law. No sovereign was suffered to enter into an alliance with them, unless he would acknowledge himself dependent on the court of Lisbon, give leave that a citadel should be built in his capital, and sell his merchandise at the price fixed by the buyer. The foreign merchant was obliged to wait till the Portuguese had completed their lading; and no person was suffered to navigate these seas without producing passports from them. The wars in which they were unavoidably engaged, gave little

B O O K

I.



interruption to their trade; with a handful of men they defeated numerous armies; their enemies met with them every where, and always fled before them; and, in a short time, the ships of the Moors, of the Zamorin and his dependents, no longer dared to make their appearance.

THE Portuguese, thus become the conquerors of the East, were perpetually sending rich cargoes to their own country, which resounded with the fame of their exploits. The port of Lisbon gradually became the resort of all the shipping in Europe. It became the grand mart of the merchandise of India: for the Portuguese, who fetched it from the very spot, sold it at a lower rate than the traders of other nations.

To secure and extend these advantages, it became necessary to call in the aid of reflection to correct and strengthen what had hitherto been the offspring of chance, a singular intrepidity, and happy concurrence of circumstances. They wanted to establish a system of power and commerce, which at the same time that it was extensive enough to take in all objects, should be so well connected, that all the parts of the grand structure they meant to raise, should mutually strengthen each other. Notwithstanding the information the court of Lisbon had received from the account transmitted from India, and the testimony of those who had hitherto been intrusted with the management of her interests in that quarter; she wisely reposed all her confidence in Alphonso Albuquerque, the most discerning of all the Portuguese who had been in Asia.

THE new viceroy acquitted himself beyond expectation. He found it necessary, that Portugal should have an establishment which might easily be defended, where there was a good harbour and a wholesome air, and where the Portuguese might refresh themselves, after the fatigues of their passage from Europe. With this view, he

he cast his eyes upon Goa; which he foresaw would be an important acquisition to Lisbon. **BOOK**
I.

GOA, which rises in the form of an amphitheatre, is situated near the middle of the coast of Malabar, upon an island separated from the continent by the two branches of a river which falls into the sea, at some distance from the city, forming under its walls one of the finest harbours in the world. This island is reckoned to be ten leagues in circumference. Within this little spot are to be seen hills, vallies, woods, canals, springs of excellent water, a city magnificently built, market-towns and large villages. Before the entrance into the port, the two peninsulas Salses and Barda, which equally serve the purposes of defence and shelter. They are guarded by forts lined with artillery, where all ships are obliged to stop before they come to an anchor in the harbour.

GOA, though not so considerable at that time as it has been since, was looked upon as the most advantageous post in India. It belonged to the king of the Decan; but Idalcan, who was intrusted with the government of it, had assumed an independancy, and endeavoured to extend his power in Malabar. While this usurper was pursuing his schemes on the continent, Albuquerque appeared at the gates of Goa, took the city by storm, and acquired this valuable advantage with very little loss.

IDALCAN, apprized of the loss the king had sustained, did not hesitate a moment what measures he should take. In conjunction even with the Indians his enemies, who were almost as much interested in this matter as himself, he marched towards the capital, with a degree of expedition never known before in that country. The Portuguese having no firm footing, and finding themselves unable to preserve their conquest, re-

B O O K treated to their ships, which kept their station in the harbour, and sent to Cochin for a reinforcement. **I.** While they were waiting for it, their provisions failed. Idalcan offered them a supply, giving them to understand, *That he chose to conquer by arms and not by famine.* It was customary at that time, in the Indian wars, for the armies to suffer provisions to be carried to their enemies. Albuquerque rejected the offer made him, with this reply, *That he would receive no presents from Idalcan till they were friends.* The succour he hourly expected never arrived.

THIS disappointment determined him to retreat and to postpone the execution of his darling project, to a more favourable opportunity, which presented itself a few months after. Idalcan being obliged to take the field again to preserve his dominions from absolute destruction, Albuquerque made a sudden attack upon Goa, which he carried by storm, and fortified himself in the place. As the harbour of Calicut was good for nothing, and ceased to be frequented by the Arabian vessels, all its trade and riches were transferred to this city, which became the metropolis of all the Portuguese settlements in India.

THE natives of the country were too weak, too dispirited, and too much at variance, to put a stop to the success of this enterprizing nation. Nothing remained to be done but to guard against the Egyptians, nor was the least precaution either omitted or neglected.

The manner of carrying on trade in India before the conquests of the Portuguese. EGYPT, which is considered as the parent of all historical antiquities, the source of policy, and the nursery of arts and sciences, after having remained for ages in a state of separation from the rest of the world, who were held in contempt by this wise country, understood and practised navigation. The inhabitants had long neglected the Mediterranean, where they did not certainly

tainly expect any great advantages, and, directed their course towards the Indian ocean, which was the true channel of wealth. **BOOK**
I.

STRUCK with the situation of this country between two seas, one of which opens the road to the east, and the other to the west; Alexander formed the design of fixing the seat of his empire in Egypt, and to make it the centre of trade to the whole world. This prince who had more discernment than any other conqueror, saw that if it were possible to form an union between his present and future acquisitions, he must make choice of a country which nature seems to have placed, as it were, in contact with Africa and Asia to connect them with Europe. The premature death of the greatest captain that history and fable have held forth to the admiration of mankind, would for ever have annihilated these vast projects, had they not been in part pursued by Ptolemy, one of his lieutenants; who, when the most magnificent spoil ever known came to be divided, claimed Egypt for his share.

IN the reign of this new sovereign and his immediate successors, commerce made prodigious improvements. Alexandria was the mart of the merchandise that came from India, by the Red Sea, to the port of Berenice.

A WRITER, who has entered deeply into this subject, and whose accounts we follow, tells us, that some of the numerous vessels that were built in consequence of these connections, traded only in the gulph with Arabians and Abyssinians: among others, which ventured out into the main ocean, some of them sailed southward to the right along the eastern coasts of Africa, as far as the island of Madagascar; others, steered to the left towards the Persian Gulph, went even as far as the Euphrates, to trade with the people on its banks, particularly

BOOK

I.

cularly with the Greeks, whom Alexander had brought there with him in his expeditions. Others, still grown more enterprizing from the hopes of gain, penetrated as far as the mouths of the Indus, traversed the coast of Malabar, and touched at the island of Ceylon, known by the ancients under the name of Taprobane. A very small number passed through the Coromandel to go up the river Ganges, as far as Palybotra, a town the most celebrated in India on account of its riches. Thus, industry proceeded by gradual advances, from one river or coast to another, to appropriate the productions of those countries that abound most in fruits, flowers, perfumes, precious stones, and all the delicacies of voluptuous luxury.

THE boats they made use of in these expeditions were long and flat, not unlike those that are seen upon the Nile. Before the invention of the compass, in consequence of which, larger vessels, carrying more sail, were fitted out for the main ocean; they were obliged to row close to the shore, and to follow the windings of the coast from one point of land to another. They were obliged to make the sides of their ships less, in order to weaken the power of the wind over them, and less deep, for fear of striking against rocks, sands, or shallows. Thus a voyage not so long by the one third as those which are now performed in less than six months, sometimes lasted five years or more. What their vessels wanted in size, was supplied by their numbers; and the disadvantages of their slow sailing were compensated by the frequent squadrons they fitted out.

THE Egyptians exported to India, as has been done ever since, woollen manufactures, iron, lead, copper, some small pieces of workmanship in glass, and silver in exchange

exchange for ivory, ebony, tortoise-shell, white and printed linens, silks, pearls, precious stones, cinnamon, spices, and particularly frankincense; which was a perfume the most in esteem, on account of its being used in divine worship, and contributing to the gratification of princes. It sold at so high a price, that the merchants counterfeited it under pretence of improving it. So apprehensive is avarice of being defrauded by poverty, that the workmen who were employed in making it were naked; having only a girdle about their loins, the ends of which were sealed by the director of the manufacture.

BOOK
I.

ALL the sea-faring and trading nations in the Mediterranean came to the ports of Egypt to purchase the produce of India. When Carthage and Corinth became the victims of the vices introduced by their opulence, the Egyptians were themselves obliged to export the riches with which these cities formerly loaded their own vessels. As their maritime power increased, they extended their navigation as far as Cadiz. They could scarcely supply the demands of Rome, whose luxury kept pace with its conquests: at the same time that they were arrived at such a pitch of extravagance themselves, that the accounts given of it have the air of romance. Cleopatra, with whom their empire and history expired, was profuse as she was voluptuous. But notwithstanding these incredible expences, the advantages they derived from the trade of the Indies were so great, that after they were subdued and spoiled, lands, provisions, and merchandize, fetched double the price at Rome. If Pliny may be credited, the conqueror, by reinstating the conquered in this source of opulence, which was calculated rather to flatter their vanity than to aggrandize their power, gained
twenty

B O O K twenty thousand per cent. Though it is easy to see that
 I. this calculation is exaggerated, we may from thence form
 a conjecture what profits must have been reaped in
 those distant ages, when the Indians were not so well
 acquainted with their own interest.

WHILE the Romans had virtue enough to preserve the power acquired by their ancestors, Egypt very much contributed to support the dignity of the empire by the riches it brought thither from the Indies. But the fulness of luxury, like the corpulency of the body, is a symptom of an approaching decay. This vast empire, sunk under its own weight, and like leavers of wood or metal, whose excessive length contributes to their weakness, broke into two parts.

EGYPT was annexed to the eastern empire, which lasted longer than that of the west; not being attacked so soon, or with so much vigour. If riches could have supplied the place of courage, its situation and resources would even have made it invincible. But the inhabitants of this empire had nothing but stratagem to defend it against an enemy, who, besides the enthusiasm of a new religion, were animated with all the strength of an uncivilized people. A torrent thus increasing, as it destroyed every thing in its passage, was not to be stopped by so slight a barrier. In the several provinces, and Egypt amongst the rest; which having been one of the principal empires of antiquity, and the model of all modern monarchies, was destined to sink into a state of languor and insignificance, in which it remains to this day.

THE Greeks comforted themselves under this misfortune, on finding that the wars of the Saracens had diverted the stream of the Indian commerce from Alexandria to Constantinople, by two well-known channels; one of these was, the Euxine or Black Sea, where it

was

was usual to embark to go up the Phasis. Large vessels were at first employed, and afterwards smaller ones were introduced, which sailed as far as Serapana; from whence, in four or five days, the merchants conveyed their commodities by land-carriage to the river Cyrus, which falls into the Caspian Sea. Having crossed this tempestuous ocean, they arrived at the mouth of the Oxus, which extended almost as far as the source of the Indus, and from whence they returned the same way, laden with the treasures of Asia. This was one of the means of communication between this continent, always naturally rich and that of Europe, which was then poor, and ruined by its own inhabitants.

B O O K
I.

THE other channel of communication was more easy. The Indian vessels, sailing from different coasts, passed the Persian gulph, and arrived at the banks of the Euphrates, where they unloaded their cargo; which, from this river, was in one day sent by land-carriage to Palmyra. This city, the ruins of which still preserve an idea of its opulence, transported this merchandise through the deserts to the confines of Syria. By this rich commerce, it became more flourishing than could have been expected from its sandy situation. Since its destruction, the caravans, after some changes, constantly took the road of Aleppo, which, by means of the port of Alexandretta, turned the current of wealth to Constantinople, which at length became the general market of the productions of India.

THIS advantage might alone have retarded the fall of the empire, and, perhaps, have restored it to its ancient grandeur; but that had been acquired by its arms, its virtues, and its frugal manners: and it was now destitute of all those means of maintaining its prosperity. The Greeks, corrupted by the prodigious accession of wealth, which their exclusive commerce poured

in

B O O K ^{I.} in upon them, almost without any care or activity of their own, abandoned themselves to an indolent and effeminate way of life, which infallibly leads to luxury; fond only of the trivial amusements of glittering shows, and the voluptuous refinements of art; of futile, obscure, and sophistical disquisitions on matters of taste, sentiment, and even religion and politics. They suffered themselves to be oppressed, without asserting their right to be governed, and either made their court to a successive race of tyrants, by the most abject adulation, or irritated them by a faint resistance. These people were bought by the Emperor, and sold to all the monopolizers who aimed to enrich themselves by the ruin of the state. The government, still more corrupted than its subjects, suffered its navy to decay, and placed its whole dependance on the treaties it entered into with the strangers, whose ships frequented its ports. The Italians had insensibly engrossed the article of transportation, which the Greeks had for a long time kept in their own hands. This branch of business, which is rather laborious than profitable, was doubly useful to a trading nation, whose chief riches consist in maintaining their vigour by labour. Inactivity hastened the destruction of Constantinople; which was pressed and surrounded on all sides by the conquests of the Turks. The Genoese fell into the net, which their perfidy and avarice had woven for them. Mohammed the Second drove them from Caffa, to which place they had, of late years, drawn the greatest part of the Asiatic trade.

THE Venetians did not wait for this event to give them an opportunity of reviving their connections with Egypt. They had experienced more indulgence than they expected from a government established since the
last

last crusade, and nearly resembling that of Algiers. The Mammelucs, who at the time of these wars had taken possession of a throne they had hitherto supported, were for the most part slaves, who were brought from Circassia in their infancy, and trained up early to a military life. The supreme authority was vested in a chief, and a council composed of four and twenty principal persons. This military corps, which else would unavoidably have enervated, was recruited every year by a croud of brave adventurers, who flocked from all parts, with a view of making their fortune. These needy people were prevailed upon, by a sum of money and promises, to consent that their country should be made the mart of Indian merchandise. Thus they were bribed into a measure, which the political interest of their state always required them to adopt. The inhabitants of Pisa and Florence, the Catalans, and the Genoese, received some benefit from this change; but it was of signal advantage to the Venetians, by whose management it was effected. Things were in this situation when the Portuguese made their appearance in the Indies.

THIS great event, and the consequences that immediately followed it, occasioned much uneasiness at Venice. This Republic, so celebrated for its wisdom, had lately been disconcerted by a league which it could not oppose, and certainly did not foresee. Several princes of different interests, who were rivals in power, and had pretensions of an opposite nature, united, in defiance of all the rules of justice and policy, to destroy a state which had not given any of them the least umbrage: and even Lewis the XIIth. whose interest was most concerned in the preservation of Venice, brought it to the brink of ruin by the victory of Arguadel. The

B O O K

I.

quarrels which must necessarily arise among such allies, joined to the prudence of the Republic, saved it from this danger, which though more imminent in appearance, was, in fact, not so great nor so immediate as that they were now exposed to, by the discovery of a passage to the Indies by the Cape of Good Hope.

VENICE soon perceived that their commerce, and consequently their power, was on the point of being transferred to the Portuguese. Every expedient was tried that an able administration could suggest. Some of the skilful emissaries, which the state took care to retain and employ dexterously in all places, persuaded the Arabs settled in their country, and those that were dispersed over India, or the eastern coasts of Africa, that as their interest was equally concerned with that of Venice, they ought to unite with her against a nation, which had made itself mistress of the common source of their riches.

THE rumour of this league reached the Soudan of Egypt, whose attention was already awakened by the misfortunes he felt, as well as those he foresaw. The customs, which constituted a principal branch of his revenue, and by which five per cent. was levied on the importation, and ten on the exportation of Indian goods, began to bring in little or nothing. The frequent bankruptcies, which were the necessary consequence of the embarrassment of affairs exasperated men's minds against the government, which is always responsible to the people for the calamities they endure. The militia, which was ill paid, fearing that their pay would be still more precarious, raised mutinies, which are more to be dreaded on the decline of a state, than in the time of its prosperity. Egypt was equally a sufferer by the trade carried

carried on by the Portuguese, and by the obstructions **B O O K**
 their own was exposed to by their encroachments. **I.**

THE Egyptians might have extricated themselves from these inconveniencies by fitting out a fleet; but the Red Sea afforded no materials for the building ships. The Venetians removed this obstacle by sending wood, and other materials, to Alexandria. They were conveyed by the Nile to Cairo, from whence they were carried by camels to Suez. From this celebrated port, in the year 1508, four large vessels, one galleon, two galleys, and three galliots, sailed to India.

THE Portuguese, who foresaw this confederacy, had the preceding year laid a scheme to prevent it, by making themselves masters of the Red Sea; secure, that with this advantage, they should have nothing to fear from this connection, nor from the combined forces of Egypt and Arabia. With this view, they formed a plan to seize upon the island of Socotora, well known to the ancients by the name of Dioscorides, on account of the abundance and excellence of its aloes. It lies in the gulph of the Red Sea, a hundred and eighty leagues from the straits of Babelmandel formed by the Cape of Guardafui on the African side, and by the Cape of Fartack on the side of Arabia.

The Portuguese make themselves masters of the Red Sea.

TRISTAN d'Acugna sailed from Portugal with a considerable armament to attack this island. Upon his landing, he was encountered by Ibrahim, son of the king of the people of Fartack, who was sovereign of part of Arabia and Socotora. This young prince was killed in the engagement; the Portuguese besieged the only town that was in the island, and carried it by storm, though it was defended to the last extremity by a garrison superior in number to their small army. The soldiers that composed this garrison determined not to sur-

B O O K
I.

vive the son of their sovereign, refused to capitulate, and were all, to the last man, put to the sword. D'Acugna's troops, by their intrepidity, proved an over-match for their bravery.

THIS successful enterprise was not attended with the advantages that were expected from it. It was found that the island was barren, that it had no port, and that the ships that came from the Red Sea never touched there, though they could not enter the gulph without taking an observation of it. Accordingly, the Egyptian fleet found a safe passage into the Indian ocean, where it joined that of Cambaya. These united armaments had the advantage of the Portuguese, who were considerably weakened by the great number of vessels they had lately fitted out to carry merchandise to Europe. This triumph, however, did not last long; the conquered party got reinforcements, and regained their superiority which they ever after preserved. The armaments, which continued to come from Egypt, were always beaten and dispersed by the small Portuguese squadrons that cruized at the entrance of the gulph.

As, however, these skirmishes kept up a constant alarm, and occasioned some expence, Albuquerque thought it incumbent on him to put an end to them by the destruction of Suez. But a thousand obstacles opposed the execution of this project.

THE Red Sea, which takes its name, from the corals, chadrepores, and marine plants, which line its bottom, almost throughout, or perhaps, only from the sand which discolours its waters, is surrounded on one side by Arabia, and on the other by Upper Ethiopia and Egypt. It measures six hundred and eighty leagues from the island of Socotora to the famous Isthmus, which unites Africa to Asia. As its length is very considerable, and its breadth small, and no river falls into it of sufficient
force

force to counteract the influence of the tide, it is more affected by the motions of the great ocean, than any of the inland seas nearly in the same latitude. It is not much exposed to tempests; the winds usually blow from the north and south, and being periodical like the monsoons in India, invariably determine the season of sailing into, or out of this sea. It may be divided into three parts; the middle division is open and navigable at all times, its depth being from twenty-five to sixty fathoms. The other two, which lie nearer the land, though they abound in rocks, are more frequented by the neighbouring nations, who being obliged to keep close to the shore on account of the smallness of their vessels, never launch out into the principal channel, unless they expect a squall of wind. The difficulty, not to say impossibility, of landing in the harbours on this coast, makes the navigation dangerous for vessels of large burthens, not to mention the great number of desert islands they meet with in their passage, which are barren, and afford no fresh water.

ALBUQUERQUE, notwithstanding his abilities, experience, and resolution, could not surmount so many obstacles. After entering a considerable way into the Red Sea, he was obliged to return with his fleet, which had suffered perpetual hardships, and been exposed to the greatest dangers. He was prompted by a restless and cruel spirit of enterprize, to employ methods for the accomplishment of his designs, which though of a still bolder cast, he thought could not fail of success. He wanted to prevail with the emperor of Ethiopia, who solicited the protection of Portugal to turn the course of the Nile so as to open a passage for him into the Red Sea. Egypt would then have become in a great measure uninhabitable, or at least unfit for commerce. In the mean time he proposed to transport into Arabia, by

B O O K

I.

the gulph of Persia, three or four hundred horse which he thought would be sufficient to plunder Medina and Mecca. He imagined that by so bold an expedition, he should strike terror into the Mohammedans, and put a stop to that prodigious concourse of pilgrims which was the main support of a trade he wanted totally to extirpate.

OTHER enterprizes of a less hazardous nature, and attended with more immediate advantage, led him to postpone the ruin of a power, whose influence as a rival, was the only circumstance necessary to be guarded against at the present juncture. The conquest of Egypt by the Turks, a few years after, made it requisite to act with the greatest precaution. Those men of genius, who were qualified to pursue the series of events, which had preceded and followed the discovery of the passage by the Cape of Good Hope, and to form deep conjectures concerning the revolutions which this new track of navigation must necessarily prevent, could not help considering this remarkable transaction as the most important æra in the history of the world.

EUROPE began to recover its strength by slow degrees, and to shake off the yoke of slavery, which had disgraced its inhabitants from the time of the Roman Conquests down to the institution of the feudal laws. Innumerable tyrants, who kept multitudes in a state of oppression and slavery, had been ruined by the folly of the crusades. To defray the expences of these wild expeditions, they were obliged to sell their lands and castles, and for a pecuniary consideration, to allow their vassals some privileges, which at length almost re-instated them in the order of human beings. From that time, the right of property began to be introduced among private persons, and gave them that kind of independence, without which property itself is a mere illusion.

Thus

Thus the first dawnings of liberty in Europe were, however unexpectedly, owing to the crusades; and the rage of conquest for once contributed to the welfare of mankind. BOOK
I.

If Vasco de Gama had not made these discoveries, the spirit of liberty would have been again extinguished, and probably without hopes of a revival. The Turks had lately expelled those savage nations, who, pouring from the extremities of the globe, had driven out the Romans, to become like them, the scourge of human kind; and our barbarous institutions would have been followed by oppressions still more intolerable. This must inevitably have been the case, if the savage conquerors of Egypt, had not been repulsed by the Portuguese in their several expeditions to India. Their possession of the riches of Asia, would have secured their claim to those of Europe. As the trade of the whole world was in their hands, they must consequently have had the greatest maritime force that ever was known. What opposition could our continent then have made to the progress of a people whose religion and policy equally animated them to conquest?

DISSENTIONS prevailed in England on account of its liberties; France contended for the interests of its sovereigns; Germany for those of its religion; and Italy was employed in adjusting the mutual claims of a tyrant and an impostor. Europe, over-run with fanatics and armies, resembled a sick person, who falling into a delirium, in the transport of madness opens his veins till he faints with loss of blood and spirits. In this state of weakness and anarchy, it was ill prepared to resist the incursions of the Turks.

As the calm which succeeds the violence of civil wars makes a nation formidable to its neighbours; so the dissensions which divide it as certainly expose it to ravage

B O O K

I.

and oppression. The depraved morals of the clergy would likewise have favoured the introduction of a new worship; and we should have been condemned to a state of slavery without any hopes of release. In truth, there is not one among all the religious systems that oppresses mankind, allows so little scope to liberty as that of the Mussulmans. Throughout almost all Europe, a religion foreign to government, and introduced without its patronage; rules of morality dispersed without order or precision in obscure writings, capable of an endless variety of interpretations; authority engrossed by priests and princes, who are perpetually contesting their right to rule over their fellow-creatures; political and civil institutions daily formed in contradiction to the prevailing religion which condemns an inequality of rank and ambition; a turbulent and enterprizing administration, which, in order to tyrannize with a higher hand, is perpetually setting one part of the state at variance with the other. All these principles of discord must necessarily keep the minds of men in constant agitation. Is it surprizing that on the view of this tumultuous scene, nature should start from her entrancement, and earnestly ask, "Whether man was born free?"

BUT when men once become slaves to a religion which consecrates tyranny by uniting the throne with the altar; which seems to check the sallies of ambition by encouraging voluptuousness, and cherishes a spirit of indolence by forbidding the exercise of the understanding: there is no reason to hope for any considerable revolutions. Thus the Turks, who frequently strangle their master, have never entertained a thought of changing their government. This is an idea beyond the reach of minds enervated and corrupted like theirs. Hence it appears that the whole world would have lost its liberty, had not the most superstitious, and, perhaps, the

the most enslaved nation in Christendom, checked the progress of the Mohammedan fanaticism, and put a stop to the career of victories, by depriving them of those sources of wealth which were necessary to the success of their enterprizes. Albuquerque went still further; not content with having taken effectual measures to prevent any vessel from passing from the Arabian sea to the Indian ocean, he attempted to get the command of the Persian gulph.

AT the mouth of the strait of Mocandon, which leads into the Persian gulph, lies the island of Gombroon. In the eleventh century an Arabian conqueror built upon this barren rock the city of Ormus, which afterwards became the capital of an empire, comprehending a considerable part of Arabia on one side, and of Persia on the other. Ormus had two good harbours, and was large and well fortified; its riches and strength were entirely owing to its situation. It was the center of trade between Persia and the Indies, which was very considerable, if we remember that the Persians at that time caused the greatest part of the merchandise of Asia to be conveyed to Europe from the ports of Syria and Caffa. At the time of the arrival of the foreign merchants, Ormus afforded a more splendid and agreeable scene than any city in the east. Persons from all parts of the globe exchanged their commodities, and transacted their business, with an air of politeness and attention, which are seldom seen in other places of trade.

The Portuguese make themselves masters of the Persian gulph.

THESE manners were introduced by the merchants belonging to the port, who engaged foreigners to imitate their affability. Their address, the regularity of their police, and the variety of entertainments which their city afforded, joined to the interests of commerce, invited merchants to make it a place of resort. The pavement of the streets was covered with matts, and in some

B O O K

I.

some places with carpets ; and the linen awnings which were suspended from the tops of the houses prevented any inconvenience from the heat of the sun. Indian cabinets ornamented with gilded vases, or china filled with flowering shrubs, or aromatic plants, adorned their apartments. Camels laden with water were stationed in the public squares ; Persian wines, perfumes, and all the delicacies of the table were furnished in the greatest abundance, and they had the music of the east in its highest perfection. Ormus was crouded with beautiful women from all parts of Asia, who were instructed from their infancy in all the arts of varying and heightening the pleasures of voluptuous love. In short, universal opulence, an extensive commerce, a refined luxury, politeness in the men, and gallantry in the women, united all their attractions to make this city the seat of pleasure.

ALBUQUERQUE, on his arrival in the Indies, began to ravage the coasts, and to plunder the towns that belonged to the jurisdiction of Ormus; though these inroads, which shewed more of the robber than of the conqueror, were naturally repugnant to Albuquerque's character ; he thought himself obliged to have recourse to these harsh expedients, to induce a power he was not in a condition to subdue by force, to submit voluntarily to the yoke he wanted to impose. As soon as he imagined the alarm had spread sufficiently to favour his designs, he appeared before the capital, and summoned the king to acknowledge himself tributary to Portugal, as he was to Persia. This proposal was received in the manner it deserved. A fleet composed of ships from Ormus, Arabia and Persia, came to an engagement with Albuquerque's squadron, who with five vessels destroyed the whole armament. The king, disheartened by his ill success, consented that the conqueror should erect
a fort

a fort which might command the city and both its harbours. BOOK
I.

ALBUQUERQUE, who knew the importance of seizing the present conjuncture, carried on the work with the utmost expedition. He laboured as hard as the meanest of his followers; but this spirit of activity could not prevent the enemy from taking notice of the smallness of his numbers. Atar, who in consequence of the revolutions so frequent in the east, had been raised from the condition of a slave, to that of a prime minister, was ashamed of having sacrificed the state to a handful of adventurers. As his talent lay rather in the arts of policy than of war, he determined to repair the ill consequences of his timidity by stratagem. By the arts of insinuation and bribery, he succeeded so far in sowing dissensions among the Portuguese, and prejudicing them against their leader, that they were frequently ready to take arms against each other. This animosity, which increased every day, determined them to reembark at the instant they were informed that a plot was concerted to massacre them. Albuquerque, whose spirit rose superior to opposition and discontent, resolved to starve the place and deprive it of succours by cutting off all communication. It must certainly have fallen into his hands, had not three of his captains shamefully abandoned him, and gone off with their ships. To justify their desertion, they were guilty of still blacker perfidy, in accusing their general of the most atrocious crimes.

THIS treachery obliged Albuquerque to defer the execution of his design for some time, till he had all the national troops at his command. As soon as he was appointed viceroy, he appeared before Ormus with so strong an armament, that a debauched court, and an effeminate people, finding it in vain to make any resistance, were obliged to submit. The sovereign of Persia had

B O O K had the confidence to demand tribute of the conqueror.
I. Albuquerque ordered some bullets, grenades, and sabres to be produced to the envoy, telling him, that this was the kind of tribute paid by the king of Portugal.

AFTER this expedition, the power of the Portuguese was so firmly established in the Arabian and Persian gulphs, and on the Malabar coast, that they began to think of extending their conquests into the eastern parts of Asia.

The Portuguese form a settlement at Ceylon.

ALBUQUERQUE'S first attempt was the island of Ceylon, which is eighty leagues long, and thirty at its greatest breadth. It was anciently known by the name of Taprobane. We have no accounts transmitted to us of the revolutions it has undergone. All that history relates worthy of remark is, that the laws were formerly held in so high esteem, that the monarch was under the same obligation of observing them as the meanest of his subjects. If he violated them, he was condemned to death; with this mark of distinction however, that he did not suffer in an ignominious manner. He was denied all intercourse, all the comforts and supports of life: and, in this kind of excommunication, miserably ended his days.

WHEN the Portuguese landed in Ceylon they found it well peopled, and inhabited by two nations who differed from each other in their manners, their government, and their religion. The Bedas, who were settled in the northern parts of the island, where the country was less fertile, were distinguished into tribes, which considered themselves as so many families headed by a chief, whose power was not absolute. They go almost naked, and, upon the whole, their manners and government are the same with that of the Highlanders in Scotland. These tribes, who unite for the common defence, have always bravely fought for their liberty, and have never

never invaded those of their neighbours. Their religion is little known, and it is uncertain whether they have any worship. They have little intercourse with strangers, keep a watchful eye over those who travel through the district they inhabit; they treat them well, and send them away as soon as possible. This caution is owing in part to the jealousy the Bedas entertain of their wives, which contributes to estrange them from all the world. They seem to be the first inhabitants of the island.

THE southern part is possessed by a more numerous and powerful people, called Cinglasses. This nation is polite in comparison of the other. They wear clothes, and live under an arbitrary government. They have a distinction of castes, as well as the Indians; but their religion is different. They acknowledge one supreme being, and in subordination to him, divinities of the second and third order: all which have their priests. Among the deities of the second order, particularly honours are paid to Buddou, who descended upon earth to take upon himself the office of mediator between God and mankind. The priests of Buddou are persons of great consequence in Ceylon. They are never punishable by the prince, even for an attempt against his life. The Cinglasses understand the art of war. They know how to take advantage of the natural security their mountains afford them against the attacks of the Europeans, whom they have often conquered. Like all people in arbitrary states, they are deceitful, selfish, and full of compliment. They have two languages: one peculiar to the people, the other to the learned. Wherever this custom prevails, it furnishes priests and princes with a further opportunity of imposing upon mankind.

BOTH these nations enjoyed the benefits of the fruits, the corn, and the pasture which abounded in the island.

They

B O O K

I.

They had elephants without number ; precious stones, and the only kind of cinnamon that was ever esteemed. On the northern coast, and on the fishing coast which borders upon it, was carried on the greatest pearl fishery in the east. The harbours of Ceylon were the best in India, and its situation was superior to all its other advantages.

It should seem to have been the interest of the Portuguese to have placed all their strength in this island. It lies in the center of the east : and is the passage that leads to the richest countries. All the ships that come from Europe, Arabia and Persia, cannot avoid paying a kind of homage to Ceylon ; and the monsoons, which alternately blow from different points, make it easy for vessels to come in and go out at all seasons of the year. It might have been well peopled and fortified with little expence of blood and treasure. The numerous squadrons that might have been sent out from every port in the island would have kept all Asia in awe : and the ships that might cruize in those latitudes, would have intercepted the trade of other nations.

THE viceroy overlooked these advantages. He also neglected the coast of Coromandel, though richer than that of Malabar. The merchandise of the latter was of an inferior quality : it produced plenty of provisions, a small quantity of bad cinnamon, some pepper and cardamom, a kind of spice much used by the eastern people. The coast of Coromandel furnished the finest cottons in the world. Its inhabitants, who for the most part were natives of the country, and had less intercourse with the Arabians and other nations, were the most humane and industrious of all the people in Indostan. To this we may add, that the passage along the coast of Coromandel towards the north, leads to the mines of Golconda :

Golconda : besides that, this coast is admirably situated for the trade of Bengal and other countries. **BOOK I.**

NOTWITHSTANDING this, Albuquerque made no settlement there. The settlements of St. Thomas and Negapatan, were not formed till afterwards. He knew that this coast was destitute of harbours, and inaccessible at certain periods of the year, when it would be impossible for the fleets to protect the colonies, In short, he thought that when the Portuguese had made themselves masters of Ceylon, a conquest begun by his predecessor d'Almeida, and afterwards completed, they might command the trade of Coromandel, if they got possession of Malacca. He therefore determined to make the attempt.

THE country, of which Malacca is the capital city, is a narrow tract of land, about a hundred leagues in length. It joins to the continent towards the northern coast, where it borders on the state of Siam, or, more properly, the kingdom of Johor, which has been separated from it. The rest is surrounded by the sea, and divided from the island of Sumatra by a channel which is called the Straits of Malacca. **The Portuguese conquer Malacca.**

NATURE had amply provided for the happiness of the Malays, by placing them in a mild, healthy climate, where refreshing gales and cooling streams allay the fervour of the torrid zone ; where the soil pours forth an abundance of delicious fruits to satisfy the wants of a savage life ; and is capable of answering, by cultivation, all the necessary demands of society ; where the trees wear an eternal verdure, and the flowers bloom in a perpetual succession : where the most delicate and fragrant odours, breathing from aromatic plants, perfume the air, and infuse a spirit of voluptuous delight into all living beings.

BUT

BOOK I

I.

the
Sec
mer
the

has done every thing in favour of
has done them every possible injury.
influence of a tyrannical govern-
abitants of the happiest country in
become remarkable for the ferocity
of their manners. The feudal system, which was first
planned among the rocks and woods of the north, has
extended itself even to the forests and mild regions of
the equator, where every thing conspires to promote
the enjoyment of a long life of tranquillity, which can
only be shortened by a too frequent and excessive indul-
gence in pleasures. This enslaved nation is under the
dominion of an arbitrary prince, or rather of twenty ty-
rants, his representatives. Thus the despotism of a sul-
tan has found means to extend its oppressive influence
to multitudes, by lodging its authority in the hands of
numerous overgrown vassals.

THIS turbulent and oppressive scene gave rise to an
universal savageness of manners. In vain did heaven and
earth shower their blessings upon Malacca ; these blef-
sings only served to make its inhabitants ungrateful and
unhappy. The masters let out their services, or rather
those of their dependents for hire, to the best bidder, re-
gardless of the loss that agriculture would sustain for
want of hands. They preferred a wandering and ad-
venturous life, either by sea or land to industry. This
people had conquered a large Archipelago, well known
in the east by the name of Malayan Islands. The nume-
rous colonies that were transplanted thither, carried with
them their laws, their manners, their customs, and what
is somewhat remarkable, the softest language in all Asia.
THE situation of Malacca had, however, made it the
most considerable market in India ; its harbour was con-
stantly crouded with vessels either from Japan, China,
the

the Philippine and Molucca islands, and the adjacent parts of the eastern coast; or from Bengal, Coromandel, Malabar, Persia, Arabia, and Africa. These merchants carried on a safe trade among themselves, or with the inhabitants; the Malays, who had been addicted to plunder, preferring a certain advantage to the precarious and uncertain success of piratical expeditions.

THE Portuguese wanted to have a share in the general commerce of Asia. At first they appeared at Malacca in the character of merchants; but their usurpations in India rendered their designs so much suspected, and the animosity of the Arabians had circulated reports so much to the disadvantage of these conquerors, that measures were taken to destroy them. They fell into the snares that were laid for them; several of them were massacred, and others thrown into prison. Those who escaped got back to their ships, which retreated to the Malabar coast.

THOUGH Albuquerque did not intend to wait for a rupture to afford him a pretence of seizing Malacca, he was not displeased at this incident, as it gave his enterprise an appearance of justice that might lessen the odium which such a step must naturally have drawn upon the Portuguese name. As an impression so favourable to his views might be weakened by delay, he did not hesitate a moment to take his revenge. The enemy expected a sudden blow; and accordingly, when he appeared before the place, at the beginning of the year 1511, he found every thing in readiness to receive him.

BUT formidable as these preparations appeared, there was a still greater obstacle, which for some days damped the valour of the christian general; his friend, Araûjo, had been taken prisoner in the first expedition, and the enemy threatened to put him to death the moment the siege should begin. Albuquerque, who did not want sensibility,

B O O K

I.

libility, paused at the prospect of his friend's danger, when he received the following billet. *Think of nothing but the glory and advantage of Portugal ; if I cannot contribute towards your victory, at least let me not be the means of preventing it.* The place was attacked and carried after several doubtful, bloody, and obstinate engagements. They found in it immense treasures, vast magazines, and whatever could contribute to the elegancies and pleasures of life, and a fort was erected there to secure the conquest.

As the Portuguese contented themselves with the possession of the city, the inhabitants, who professed a kind of corrupt Mohammedanism, and were unwilling to submit to their new masters, either retired into the inland parts, or dispersed themselves along the coast. Having lost the spirit of commerce, they relapsed into all the excesses of their violent character. These people never go without a poniard, which they call *crid*. The invention of this murderous weapon seems to have exhausted all the powers of their sanguinary genius. Nothing is more to be dreaded than such men armed with such an instrument. When they get on board a vessel, they stab all the crew when they least suspect any harm. Since their treachery has been known, all the Europeans take care never to employ a Malayan sailor ; but these barbarians, who always made it a rule to attack the weaker party, have now changed this ancient custom, and, animated by an unaccountable resolution, to kill or be killed, come in boats with thirty men to board our vessels, and sometimes succeed in carrying them off : if they are repulsed, they have the satisfaction at least of having imbrued their hands in blood.

A PEOPLE who derives from nature such an inflexible bravery, may be exterminated, but not subdued by force. They are only to be civilized by humane treatment,

ment, the allurements of riches or liberty, the influence of virtue and moderation, and a mild government. They must be restored to their rights, or left to themselves, before we can hope to establish any intercourse with them. To attempt to reduce them by conquest, is, perhaps, the last method that should be tried: as it will only increase their abhorrence of a foreign yoke, and discourage them from entering into any social engagements. Nature has placed certain people in the midst of the ocean, like lions in the deserts, that they may enjoy their liberty. Tempests, sands, forests, mountains and caverns, are the places of refuge and defence to all independent beings. Civilized nations should take care how they invade the rights, or rouse the spirits of islanders and savages: as they may be assured that they will become cruel and barbarous to no purpose; that their ravages will make them detested; and that disgrace and revenge are the only laurels they can expect to obtain.

AFTER the reduction of Malacca, the kings of Siam, Pegu, and several others, alarmed at a conquest so fatal to their independence, sent ambassadors to congratulate Albuquerque, to make him an offer of their trade, and to desire an alliance with Portugal.

AFFAIRS being in this situation, a squadron was detached from the fleet to the Malaccas. These islands, which lie in the Indian ocean near the equinoctial, are ten in number, including as usual, those of Banda. The largest is not more than twelve leagues in circumference, and the others are much smaller.

Settlement
of the Por-
tuguese in
the Malacca
islands.

It is not known who were the first inhabitants; but it is pretty certain that the Javans and the Malays have successively been in possession of them. At the beginning of the sixteenth century, they were inhabited by a kind of savages, whose chiefs, though honoured with the

B O O K
 I. title of kings, possessed only a limited authority, totally dependent on the caprice of their subjects. They had of late years, joined the superstitions of Mohammedanism to those of Paganism, which they had professed for a considerable time. Their indolence was excessive. Their only employment was hunting and fishing; and they were strangers to all kind of agriculture. They were encouraged in their inactivity by the advantages they derived from the cocoa-tree.

THE cocoa is a tree whose roots are so slender and penetrate so little a way into the ground, that it is frequently blown down by the wind. Its trunk, which rises to the height of thirty or forty feet, is straight, of a middling thickness, and every where of the same diameter. It is of so spongy a nature, that it is unfit for ship-timber, or for any building that requires solidity. The tuft is composed of ten or twelve leaves, which are large, long, and thick, and are made use of in covering the roofs of houses. From this tuft, which is renewed thrice every year, at the same time arise very large buds, from each of which hang ten or twelve coconuts, which, including their shells, are more than half a foot in diameter. The outer coat of the nut consists of filaments, which are used for coarse stuffs, and ship cables. Of the next coat, which is very hard, are made small cups, and other domestic utensils. The inside of this shell is filled with a white firm pulp, from which is expressed an oil much used in the Indies. It is sweet, as long as it continues fresh, but it contracts a bitter taste when it is kept long, and is then only proper for burning. The sediment that remains in the press, affords nourishment for cattle, poultry, and even the lower kind of people in times of scarcity. The pulp of the cocoa contains a liquid which is extremely refreshing, and quenches the thirst of labouring people both at sea and

and land. This liquor is very wholesome, but has a sweet insipid taste. BOOK
I.

WHEN those buds are cut at the extremity, vessels are placed to receive the white liquor that distils from them : which if drawn off before sun-rise, and drunk while it is fresh, has the flavour of sweet wine. It afterwards turns sour, and makes good vinegar. When distilled in its highest perfection, it produces a strong brandy : and boiled with quick-lime, yields a middling kind of sugar. The trees from which this liquor has been extracted, bear no fruit ; the juices being exhausted, which serve to produce and nourish the kernel.

BESIDES this tree, which is common in all parts of India, the Malaccas produce a singular plant, which they call sago. This tree affords a nutriment from its trunk and vital substance : its fruit being a superfluous and useless part. It grows wild in the forests, and multiplies itself by seeds and suckers. . It rises to the height of thirty feet, and is about six in circumference. The bark is an inch thick. The inner rind is composed of an assemblage of long fibres which are interlaced with each other. This double coat contains a kind of sap or gum, which falls into meal. This tree, which seems to grow purely for the use of man, points out the meal by a fine white powder which covers its leaves, and is a certain sign of the maturity of the sago. It is then cut down to the root, and sawn into scantlings, which are divided into four quarters, for the better extracting of the sap or meal it contains. After this substance has been diluted in water, it is strained through a kind of sieve, which retains the grosser particles ; the rest is thrown into earthen moulds, where it dries and hardens for some years. The Indians eat the sago diluted with water, and sometimes baked or boiled. Through a principle of humanity, they reserve the finest part of

G 3

this

B O O K ^{I.} this meal for the aged and infirm. A jelly is sometimes made of it, which is white and of a delicious flavour.

TEMPERATE, independent, and averse from labour, these people had lived for ages upon the meal of the sago, and the milk of the cocoa, when the Chinese landing by accident at the Malaccas, discovered the clove and the nutmeg, with which valuable spices the ancients were entirely unacquainted. They were soon admired all over the Indies, from whence they were transported to Persia and Europe. The Arabians who at that time engrossed almost all the trade of the universe, did not overlook so lucrative a part of it. They repaired in crowds to these celebrated islands, whose productions they had already monopolized, had not the Portuguese, who pursued them every where, deprived them of this branch of trade. Notwithstanding the schemes that were laid to supplant these conquerors, they obtained permission to build a fort. From this time the court of Lisbon ranked the Malaccas among the number of their provinces, and it was not long before they became such in reality.

WHILE Albuquerque's lieutenants enriched their country with the new productions of the east, their general completed the conquest of Malabar, which would have taken advantage of his absence to recover its liberty. After his late success, he employed the leisure he enjoyed in the midst of his conquests, in suppressing the licentiousness of the Portuguese; establishing order in all the colonies, and regulating the discipline of the army: in the course of which he displayed an activity, sagacity, wisdom, justice, humanity, and disinterestedness, which did honour to his character. His good qualities made so deep an impression on the minds of the Indians, that, for a long time after his death, they continued to repair to his tomb to demand justice for the

out-

outrages committed by his successors. He died at Goa **B O O K**
in the year 1515, without riches, and out of favour with **I.**
Emanuel, who had been prevailed upon to entertain sus-
picions of his conduct.

If our astonishment is raised at the number of Albu-
querque's victories, and the rapidity of his conquests, **The cau-**
how deservedly do those brave men claim our admira- **ses of the**
tion, whom he had the honour to command in these ex- **enterpriz-**
peditions? Did any nation, with so slender a force, ever **ing spirit**
perform such great actions? The Portuguese, with **of the Por-**
less than forty thousand troops, struck terror into the **tuguese.**
empire of Morocco, the barbarous nations of Africa;
the Mammelucs, the Arabians, and all the eastern coun-
tries from the island of Ormus to China. With a force
in the proportion of one to a hundred, they engaged
troops, which, when attacked by an enemy of equal
strength, would frequently defend their lives and pos-
sessions to the last extremity. What kind of men then
must the Portuguese have been, and what extraordinary
causes must have conspired to produce a nation of he-
roes!

THEY had been at war with the Moors near a cen-
tury, when Henry of Burgundy, with several French
knights landed in Portugal with a design to serve in
Castile under the famous Cid, whose reputation had
drawn them thither. The Portuguese invited them
to lend their assistance against the infidels; the knights
complied, and the greatest part of them settled
in Portugal. Chivalry, which has contributed as
much as any other institution to exalt human nature;
substituting the love of glory for the love of our coun-
try; that refined spirit drawn from the dregs of the
barbarous ages, and calculated to repair or lessen the
errors and inconveniences of the feudal government
from whence it took its rise; at that time revived on
the banks of the Tagus, in all the splendor it had at its

B O O K

I.

}

first appearance in France and England. The princes endeavoured to keep it alive, and to extend its influence by establishing several orders formed upon the plan of the ancient ones, and calculated to infuse the same spirit, which was a mixture of heroism, gallantry, and devotion.

THE sovereigns raised the spirit of the nation still higher by treating the nobility in some measure upon a footing of equality, and by setting bounds to their own authority. They frequently assembled their states general, without which, properly speaking, there can be no nation. By these states Alphonso was invested with the regal authority after the taking of Lisbon; and in conjunction with them, his successors, for a long time, exercised the power of making laws. Many of these laws were calculated to inspire the love of great actions. The order of nobility was conferred upon those who had distinguished themselves by signal services; by killing or taking prisoner the enemy's general, or his squire; or by refusing to purchase their liberty, when in the hands of the Moors, by renouncing their religion. On the other hand, whoever insulted a woman, gave false evidence, broke his promise, or "disguised the truth to his sovereign," was deprived of his rank.

THE wars waged by the Portuguese in defence of their rights and liberties, were at the same time religious wars. They partook of that fierce, yet enterprizing fanaticism, which the popes had encouraged at the time of the crusades. The Portuguese, therefore, were knights armed in defence of their properties, their wives, their children and their kings, who were knights as well as themselves. Besides these, they were the heroes of the crusade, who, in defending christianity were fighting for their country. To this may be added, that the nation was small, and its power extremely limited; it
being

being chiefly in little states that we find that enthusiastic fondness for their country, which is utterly unknown in larger communities, that enjoy a greater security. BOOK
I.

THE principles of activity, vigour, and a noble elevation of mind, which united in the character of this nation, were not lost after the expulsion of the Moors. They pursued these enemies of their religion and government into Africa. They were engaged in several wars with the kings of Castile and Leon; and during the interval that preceded their expeditions to India, the nobility lived at a distance from cities and the court, and preserved in their castles the virtues of their ancestors, together with their portraits.

WHEN the plan of extending their conquests in Africa and Asia became the object of attention among the Portuguese; a new passion co-operated with the principles just mentioned, to give additional energy to the Portuguese spirit. This passion, which however it might animate all the rest for the present, would soon destroy the generosity of their temper, was avarice. The vessels were crowded with adventurers, who wanted to enrich themselves, serve their country, and make proselytes. They appeared in India to be something more than men till the death of Albuquerque. Then riches, which were the object and reward of their conquests, introduced an universal corruption. The nobler passions gave way to the pleasures of luxury, which never fail to enervate the body, and to destroy the virtues of the mind. The weak successors of the illustrious Emanuel, and the men of mean abilities, which he himself sent as viceroys to the Indies, gradually contributed to the degeneracy of the Portuguese.

LOPEZ-SOAREZ, however, who succeeded Albuquerque, pursued his designs. He abolished a barbarous custom that prevailed in the country of Travancor,
in

B O O K in the neighbourhood of Calicut. These people consulted forcerers concerning the destiny of their children :
 I. If the magician promised a happy destiny, they were suffered to live, if he foretold any great calamities that were to befall them, they were put to death. Soarez interposed to preserve their children. He was for some time employed in preventing this opposition with which the Portuguese were threatened in India ; and as soon as he was relieved from his anxiety, he resolved to attempt a passage to China.

Arrival of
the Portu-
guese at
China.
State of
this em-
pire.

THE great Albuquerque had formed the same design. He had met with Chinese ships and merchants at Malacca, and conceived a high opinion of a nation, whose very sailors had more politeness, a better sense of decorum, more good nature and humanity, than were, at that time, to be found among the European nobility. He invited the Chinese to continue their commerce with Malacca. From them he procured a particular account of the strength, riches, and manners of their extensive empire, and communicated his intelligence to the court of Portugal.

THE Chinese nation was utterly unknown in Europe. Mark Paul, a Venetian, who had travelled to China by land, had given a description of it which was looked upon as fabulous. It corresponded, however, with the particulars since transmitted by Albuquerque. Credit was given to this officer's testimony, and to his account of the lucrative trade that might be carried on in this country.

IN the year 1518 a squadron sailed from Lisbon to carry over an ambassador. As soon as it arrived at the islands in the neighbourhood of Canton, it was surrounded by Chinese vessels, which came to reconnoitre it. Ferdinand D'Andreade, who commanded it, did not attempt to defend himself : he suffered the Chinese to
 come

come on board ; communicated the object of his voyage to the Mandarins that presided at Canton, and sent his ambassador on shore, who was conducted to Pekin.

THIS ambassador was every moment presented with some new wonder, that struck him with amazement. If we consider the largeness of towns, the multitude of villages, the variety of canals, of which some are navigable across the empire, and others contribute to the fertility of the soil : the art of cultivating their lands, and the abundance and variety of their productions, the sagacious and mild aspect of the inhabitants, the perpetual interchange of good offices which appeared in the country, and on the publick roads, and the good order preserved among those numberless crouds who were engaged in the hurry of business, we shall not wonder at the surprize of the Portuguese ambassador, who had been accustomed to the barbarous and ridiculous manners of Europe.

LET us take a short view of this people. The history of a nation so well governed, is the history of men : the rest of the world resembles the chaos of matter before it was wrought into form. After a long series of devastation, society has at length risen to order and harmony. States and nations are produced from each other, like individuals, with this difference, that in families nature brings about the death of some, and provides for the births of others, in a constant and regular succession : but in states, this rule is violated and destroyed by the disorders of society, where it sometimes happens that ancient monarchies stifle rising republics in their births, and that a rude and savage people, rushing like a torrent, sweep away multitudes of states, which are disunited and broken in pieces.

CHINA alone has been exempted from this fatality. This empire, bounded on the north by Russian Tartary, on the south by the Indies, by Thibet on the west, and
by

B O O K by the ocean on the east, comprehends almost all the eastern extremity of the continent of Asia. It is eighteen hundred leagues in circumference. It is said to have lasted through a successive series of four thousand years, nor is this antiquity at all to be wondered at. The narrow bounds of our history, and the small extent of our kingdoms, which rise and fall in a quick succession, are the consequence of wars, superstition, and the unfavourable circumstances of our situation. But the Chinese, who are encompassed and defended on all sides by seas and deserts, have, like the ancient Egyptians, given a lasting stability to their empire. Since their coasts, and the inland parts of their territories have been peopled and cultivated, this happy nation must of course have been the center of attraction to all the surrounding people; and the wandering or cantoned tribes must necessarily have gradually attached themselves to a body of men, who speak less frequently of the conquests they have made, than of the attacks they have suffered; and are happier in the thought of having civilized their conquerors, than they could have been in that of having destroyed their invaders.

IN a country where the government is so ancient, we may every where expect to find deep traces of the continued force of industry. The plains have been levelled with the exactest care; and, in general, have no greater declivity than is necessary to facilitate the watering of the land, which they consider, with reason, as one of the greatest helps in agriculture. They have but few, even of the most useful trees, as their fruits would rob the corn of its nourishment. There are gardens, it is true, interspersed with flowers, fine turf, shrubberies and fountains; but however agreeable these scenes might be to an idle spectator, they seem to be concealed and removed from the public eye, as if the owners were afraid

afraid of shewing how much their amusements had encroached upon the soil that ought to be cultivated for the support of life. They have no parks or extensive forests, which are not near so serviceable to mankind by the wood they furnish, as prejudicial by preventing agriculture; and while they contribute to the pleasure of the great by the beasts that range in them, prove a real misfortune to the husbandman. In China, the beauty of a country-seat consists in its being happily situated, surrounded with an agreeable variety of cultivated fields, and interspersed with trees planted irregularly, and with some mounts of a porous stone, which at a distance have the appearance of rocks or mountains.

THE hills are generally cut into terraces, supported by dry walls. Here they have reservoirs, constructed with ingenuity, for the reception of rain and spring water. It is not uncommon to see the bottom, summit and declivity of a hill watered by the same canal, by means of a number of engines of a simple construction, which save manual labour, and perform with two men what could not be done with a thousand in the ordinary way. These heights commonly yield three crops in a year. They first sow a kind of radish, which produces an oil, then cotton, and after that potatoes. This is the common method of culture; but this rule is not without exception.

UPON most of the mountains which are incapable of being cultivated for the use of man, proper trees are planted for building houses or ships. Many of them contain iron, tin and copper mines, sufficient to supply the empire. The gold mines have been neglected, either because their produce did not defray the expence of working them, or because the gold dust, washed down by the torrents was found sufficient for the purposes of exchange.

THE

BOOK

I.

THE sandy plains, saved from the ravages of the ocean, which changes its bed as rivers do their course, in a space of time so exactly proportioned to their different moments, that a small encroachment of the sea, causes a thousand revolutions on the surface of the globe, form, at this day, the provinces of Nankin and Teche-kiang, which are the finest in the empire. As the Egyptians checked the course of the Nile, the Chinese have ravished, restrained, and given laws to the ocean. They have re-united to the continent, tracts of land which had been disjoined by the element. They still exert their endeavours to oppose that over-ruling effect of the earth's motion, which protrudes the ocean from east to west. To the movements of the globe, the Chinese oppose the efforts of industry : and while nations, the most celebrated in history, have, by the rage of conquest, increased the ravages that time is perpetually making upon this globe ; they use such efforts to retard the progress of universal devastation, as might appear supernatural, if daily experience did not afford us strong evidence to the contrary.

To the improvements upon land, this nation adds, if we may be allowed the expression, the improvement of the water. The rivers, which communicate with each other by canals, and run under the walls of most of the towns, present us with the prospect of floating cities, composed of an infinite number of boats filled with people, who live constantly upon the water, and whose sole employment is fishing. The sea itself is covered with barks, whose masts, at a distance, appear like moving forests. Anson finds fault with the fishermen belonging to these boats, for not giving themselves a moment's intermission from their work to look at his ship, which was the largest that had ever appeared in these latitudes. But this

this inattention to an object, which appeared to a Chinese sailor to be of no use, though it was in the way of his profession, is, perhaps, a proof of the happiness of a people, who prefer business to matters of mere curiosity.

THE manner of culture is by no means uniform throughout this empire, but varies according to the nature of the soil and the difference of the climate. In the low countries towards the south they sow rice, which being always under water, grows to a great size, and yields two crops in a year. In the inland parts of the country, where the situation is lofty and dry, the soil produces a species of rice, which is neither so large, well-tasted, or nourishing, and makes the husbandman but one return in the year for his labour. In the northern parts they cultivate the same kinds of grain as in Europe, which grow in as great plenty, and are of as good a quality as in any of our most fertile countries. From one end of China to the other, there are large quantities of vegetables, particularly in the South, where that and fish supply the place of meat, which is the general food of the other provinces. But the improvement of lands is universally understood and attended to. All the different kinds of manure are carefully preserved, and skilfully distributed to the best advantage; and that which arises from fertile lands, is applied to make them still more fertile. This grand system of nature, which is sustained by destruction and re-production, is better understood and attended to in China than in any other country in the world.

A PHILOSOPHER, whom the spirit of observation has led into their empire, has found out and explained the causes of the rural oeconomy of the Chinese.

THE first of these causes is that character of industry by which this nation is particularly distinguished, and

B O O K
I.

BOOK

I.

and is one of those, which in its nature requires a less share of repose. Every day in the year is devoted to labour, except the first, which is employed in paying and receiving visits among relations; and the last, which is sacred to the memory of their ancestors. The first is a social duty, the latter a part of domestic worship. In this nation of sages, whatever unites and civilizes mankind is religion, and religion itself is nothing more than the practice of the social virtues. These sober and rational people want nothing more than the controul of civil laws to make them just; their private worship consists in the love of their parents whether living or dead; and their public worship in the love of labour; and that labour which is held in the most sacred veneration is agriculture.

THE generosity of two of their emperors is much revered, who, preferring the interests of the state to those of their family, kept their own children from the throne to make room for men taken from the plow. They revere the memory of these husbandmen, who sowed the seeds of the happiness and stability of the empire in the fertile bosom of the earth; that inexhaustible source of whatever conduces to the nourishment, and consequently to the numbers of mankind.

IN imitation of these royal husbandmen, the emperors of China become husbandmen officially. It is one of their public functions to break up the ground in the spring; and the parade and magnificence that accompanies this ceremony, draws together all the farmers in the neighbourhood of the capital. They flock in crowds to see their prince perform this solemnity in honour of the first of all the arts. It is not, as in the fables of Greece, a god, who tends the flocks of a king; it is the father of his people, who, holding the plow with his own hands, shews his children what are the true riches of the state.

In

In a little time he repairs again to the field he has ploughed himself, to sow the seed that is most proper for the ground. The example of the prince is followed in all the provinces; and at the same seasons, the vice-roys repeat the same ceremonies in the presence of a numerous concourse of husbandmen. The Europeans, who have been present at this solemnity at Canton, never speak of it without emotion; and make us regret that this festival, whose political aim is the encouragement of labour, is not established in our climate, instead of that number of religious feasts, which seem to be invented by idleness to make the country a barren waste.

It is not to be imagined, however, that the court of Peking are really engaged in the labours of a rural life. The arts of luxury are grown to so great a height in China, that these performances can only pass for mere ceremonies. But the law which obliges the prince to show this token of respect to the profession of husbandmen, has a tendency to promote the advantage of agriculture. The deference paid by the sovereign to public opinions contributes to perpetuate it; and the influence of opinion is the principal spring that actuates the political machine.

THIS influence is preserved in China by conferring honours on all husbandmen, who excel in the cultivation of the ground. When any useful discovery is made the author of it is called to court to communicate it to the prince; and is sent by government into the provinces, to instruct them in his method. In a word, in this country, where nobility is not hereditary, but a mere personal reward indiscriminately bestowed upon merit; several of the magistrates and persons raised to the highest employments in the empire are chosen out of families who are solely employed in the cultivation of land.

BOOK

I.

THESE encouragements which belong to their manners, are further seconded by the best political institutions. Whatever is in its nature incapable of being divided, as the sea, rivers, canals, &c. is enjoyed in common, and is nobody's property. Every one has the liberty of going upon the water, fishing, and hunting; and a subject who is in possession of an estate, whether acquired by himself or left by his relations, is in no danger of having his right called in question by the tyrannical authority of the feudal laws.

THE smallness of the taxes is still a farther encouragement to agriculture. Till lately, the proportion paid to government out of the produce of the lands, was from a tenth down to a thirtieth part of the income, according to the quality of the soil. This was the only tribute levied in China. The leading men never entertained a thought of increasing it; not venturing to push a point of this nature in opposition to custom and opinion, which determine every thing in this empire. Some emperors and ministers, no doubt, would have been glad to attempt an innovation of this kind; but as such an undertaking would require time, and they could not hope to live to see its success, they did not choose to engage in it. Men of bad principles aim at immediate enjoyment, while the virtuous subject extending his benevolence beyond the present generation, contents himself with forming designs, and propagating useful truths, without expecting to reap any advantage from them in his own person.

It is but lately that conquest and commerce have introduced new taxes into China. The Tartar emperors have laid a duty upon certain articles of provisions, metals, and merchandise. In short, if we may believe the Jesuit Amyot, customs are established there as well as in Europe.

It

It were to be wished, that the Europeans would imitate the Chinese in the mode of levying their taxes; which is just, humane, and not expensive. Every year, at the time of harvest, the fields are measured, and rated in proportion to their actual produce. Whether the Chinese are as dishonest as they are represented, or whether they are only faithless and deceitful in their dealings with strangers, as several nations among the ancients, I shall not take upon me to determine; but it should seem that government reposes considerable confidence in them, as they are not teized and molested by those searchings and troublesome visits, so common in the mode of taxation in Europe. The only penalty inflicted on persons liable to be taxed, and who are too slow in the payment of the tribute demanded by the public, is to quarter old, infirm, and poor people upon them, to be maintained at their expence till they have discharged the debt due to government. This manner of proceeding has a tendency to awaken pity and humanity in the breast of a citizen, when he sees miserable objects, and hears the cries of hunger: instead of giving disgust, and exciting his resentment by forcible seizures and the menaces of an insolent soldiery, who come to live at discretion in a house exposed to the numberless extortions of the exchequer.

IN China, the taxes are levied without having recourse to those oppressive methods that are practised in Europe. The mandarins take the tenth part of the produce of the earth in kind. The officers in the municipal towns give in their account of this tribute and all other taxes to the receiver-general of the province; and the whole is lodged in the public treasury. The use that is made of this revenue prevents all frauds in collecting it: as it is well known, that a part of these duties is allotted for the maintenance of the magistrates and soldiers. The

B O O K

I.

~~~~~

money arising from the sale of this proportion of the product of the lands is never issued from the exchequer but in public exigencies. It is laid up in the magazines against times of scarcity, when the people receive, what they lent, as it were, in times of plenty.

It may naturally be expected that a nation, enjoying so many advantages, will be extremely populous: especially in a climate where, whatever reason may be assigned for it, the women are remarkably prolific, and the men do no injury to the natural vigour of their constitution by the use of strong liquors; where the weather is wholesome and temperate, and few children die in proportion to the numbers born: where the soil overpays the labour of cultivating it, not to mention their simple and plain manner of living, which is regulated by the strictest oeconomy.

THE Jesuits, however, who were employed by the court of Pekin to make charts of the empire, in the course of their undertaking, discovered some considerable tracts of desert land, which had escaped the notice of the merchants who frequented only the sea-ports, and of travellers who went only by the road of Canton to the capital.

It would be impossible to account for the want of population in some countries remote from China, if it were not known, that, in these extensive states, a great number of children are destroyed soon after they are born; that several of those who escape this cruel fate, suffer the most shameful mutilation; and of those who are not thus barbarously robbed of their sex, many are reduced to a state of slavery, and deprived of the comforts of marriage by tyrannical masters: that polygamy, so contrary to reason and the spirit of society, is universally practised; that the vice which nature rejects with the utmost abhorrence, is very common; and that the con-

vents

vents of the Bonzes contain little less than a million of persons devoted to celibacy. **BOOK**  
**I.**

BUT if a few scattered cantons, which are hardly known even in China, be destitute of hands to cultivate them ; are there not many more in which men are assembled in such numbers as to incommode each other ? This inconvenience is observable in the neighbourhood of great cities and public roads, and particularly in the southern provinces. Accordingly it appears, by the records of the empire, that a bad harvest has seldom failed to produce an insurrection.

WE need go no further to find the reasons which prevent despotism from making any advances in China. It is evident from these frequent revolutions, that the people are fully sensible that a regard to the rights of property, and a submission to the laws, are duties of a lower class, subordinate to the original rights of nature, and that communities are formed for the common benefit of those who enter into them. Accordingly, when the more immediate necessities of life fail, the Chinese cease to acknowledge an authority which does not provide for their subsistence. The right of kings is founded on the regard they pay to the preservation of the people. . Neither religion nor morality teach any other doctrine in China.

THE emperor is well aware, that he presides over a people who submit to the laws no longer than while they promote their happiness. He is sensible, that if the spirit of tyranny, which is so common and infectious in other countries, should seize him but for a moment, such a violent opposition would be raised, that he would be driven from the throne. Accordingly, finding himself invested with the supreme authority by a people who observe and criticise his conduct, he is far from attempting to make himself a religious phantom,

B O O K

I.

and doing just as he pleases. He does not violate the sacred contract, by virtue of which he holds the sceptre. He is convinced that the people are so well acquainted with their rights, and the manner of defending them, that whenever a province complains of the Mandarin that governs it, he recalls him without examination, and delivers him up to a tribunal, which proceeds against him if he is in fault : but should he even prove innocent, he is not reinstated in his employment, as it is deemed a crime to have drawn upon himself the resentment of the people. He is considered as an ignorant tutor, who should attempt to prevent children from entertaining the affection which they owe to their father. This compliance, which, in other countries, would nourish perpetual discontent, and occasion an infinite number of intrigues, is not attended with any inconvenience in China, where the inhabitants are naturally disposed to be mild and just, and the constitution of the state is so ordered, that its delegates have seldom any rigorous commands to execute.

THE necessity of justice in the prince tends to make him more wise and intelligent. He is in China what one would gladly believe princes in all countries were, the idol of his people. It should seem that their manners and laws conspire to establish this fundamental principle, that China is a family of which the emperor is the patriarch. He does not possess his authority as a conqueror, or a legislator, but as a father : as a father he governs, rewards, and punishes. This pleasing sentiment gives him a greater power than the tyrants of other nations can possibly derive from the number of their troops, or the artifices of their ministers. It is not to be imagined what esteem and affection the Chinese have for their emperor, or, as they express it, their common, their universal father.

THIS



THIS public worship is founded upon that which is established by private education. In China, the father and mother claim an absolute right over their children at every period of life, even when raised to the highest dignity. Paternal authority, and filial affection, are the sources of every thing in this empire : by this the manners are regulated, and it is the grand tie that unites the prince to his subjects, the subjects to their princes, and citizens to one another. The Chinese government has gradually arrived at that point of perfection, from which all others seem to have finally and irrevocably degenerated. I mean the patriarchal government, a government established by nature itself.

B O O K  
I.

NOTWITHSTANDING this sublime system of morals, that for so many ages has contributed to the prosperity of the Chinese empire, it would probably have experienced an insensible change, if the chimerical distinctions allowed to birth had not destroyed that original equality established by nature among mankind, and which ought only to give place to superior abilities, and superior merit. In all the states of Europe, one class of men assume from their infancy a pre-eminence independent of their moral character. The attention paid them from the moment of their birth, gives them the idea that they are formed for command ; they soon learn to consider themselves as a distinct species, and being secure of a certain rank and station, take no pains to make themselves worthy of it.

THIS system, to which we owe so many indifferent ministers, ignorant magistrates, and bad generals, has no place in China, where nobility does not descend by hereditary right. The figure any citizen makes, begins and ends with himself. The son of the prime minister of the empire has no advantages at the moment of his birth, but those he may have derived from nature.

B O O K

I.

ture. The rank of nobility is sometimes conferred upon the ancestors of a man who has done some signal services to his country ; but this mark of distinction, which is merely personal, dies with its possessor : and his children derive no other advantage from it than the memory and example of his virtues.

IN consequence of this perfect equality, the Chinese are enabled to establish an uniform system of education, and to inculcate correspondent principles. It is no difficult task to persuade men who are upon an equal footing by birth, that they are all brethren. This opinion gives them every advantage which would be lost if a contrary idea prevailed. A Chinese, who should abstract himself from this common fraternity, would become a solitary and miserable being ; and wander as a stranger in the heart of his country.

INSTEAD of those frivolous distinctions, which are allotted to birth in almost every other country, the Chinese substitute real ones, founded entirely on personal merit. A set of wise and intelligent men, who are honoured with the title of the learned mandarins, devote themselves to the study of all sciences necessary to qualify them for the administration of public affairs. None can be admitted into this respectable society, who are not recommended by their talents and knowledge : for riches give no claim to this honour. The mandarins are at their option to fix upon proper persons to associate with them ; and they never chuse any person without a previous and strict examination. There are different classes of mandarins, the succession to which is regulated by merit, and not by seniority.

OUT of the class of mandarins, the emperor, according to a custom as ancient as the empire, elects ministers, magistrates, governors of provinces, and officers of every denomination, who are called to any employment

ployment in the state. As his choice can only fall upon men of tried abilities, the welfare of the people is always lodged in the hands of those who are worthy of such a trust.

BOOK  
I.

IN consequence of this institution, no dignity is hereditary except that of the crown; and even that is not always conferred on the eldest son; but to him whom the emperor and the council of mandarins judge most worthy. By this method, a spirit of virtuous emulation prevails even in the imperial family. The throne is given to merit alone, and it is assigned to the heir only in consideration of his abilities. The emperors rather chuse to appoint a successor from a different family, than to intrust the reins of government to unskilful hands.

THE viceroys and magistrates enjoy the affection of the people, at the same time that they partake of the authority of the sovereign; and any mistakes in their administration meet with the same indulgence that is shown to those of the supreme legislator. They have not that tendency to sedition which prevails in this part of the world. In China there is no set of men to form or manage a faction; as the mandarins have no rich and powerful family connections, they can derive no support but from the crown, and their own prudence. They are trained up in a way of thinking that inspires humanity, the love of order, beneficence, and respect for the laws. They take pains to inculcate these sentiments into the people, and secure their attachment to every law, by shewing them its useful tendency. The sovereign passes no edict that does not convey some moral or political instruction. The people necessarily become acquainted with their interests, and the measures taken by government to promote them ;  
and

**B O O K** and the better informed they are, the more likely they  
 I. will be to remain quiet.

**SUPERSTITION**, which excites disturbances in all other countries, and either establishes tyranny, or overthrows government, has no influence in China. It is tolerated, injudiciously perhaps, by the laws: but, at least, it never makes laws itself. No person can have any share in the government who does not belong to the class of literati, which admits of no superstition. The bonzes are not allowed to ground the duties of morality upon the doctrines of their sects, nor consequently to dispense with them. If they impose upon some part of the nation, their artifices do not affect those whose example and authority are of the greatest importance to the state.

**CONFUCIUS**, in whose actions and discourses precept was joined to example, and whose memory and doctrine are equally embraced and revered by all classes and sects whatsoever, was the founder of the national religion of China. His code contains a system of natural law, which ought to be the ground-work of all religions, the rule of society, and standard of all governments. He taught that reason was an emanation of the Deity; and that the supreme law consisted in the harmony between nature and reason. The religion that runs in opposition to these two guides of human life, does not come from heaven.

As the Chinese have no term for God, they say that heaven is God. *But, says the emperor Chang-chi, in an edict published in 1710, it is not to the visible and material heaven that we offer our sacrifices, but to the Lord of Heaven.* Thus atheism, though not uncommon in China, is not publicly professed. It is neither the characteristic of a sect, nor an object of persecution; but is tolerated as well as superstition.

THE

THE emperor, who is sole pontiff, is likewise the judge in matters of religion ; but as the national worship was made for the government, not the government for it ; and as both were designed to be subservient to the ends of society, it is neither the interest nor inclination of the sovereign to employ the two fold authority lodged in his hands, for the purposes of oppression. If on the one hand the doctrines and ceremonies of the hierarchy do not prevent the prince from making an ill use of absolute authority ; he is more powerfully restrained on the other, by the general influence of the national manners.

ANY attempt to change these manners would be attended with the greatest difficulty, because they are inculcated by a mode of education which is, perhaps, the best we are acquainted with. They do not make a point of instructing their children till they are five years old. They are then taught to write words or hieroglyphics, which represent sensible objects, of which at the same time they endeavour to give them clear ideas. Afterwards their memory is stored with sententious verses containing precepts of morality, which they are taught to reduce to practice. As they advance in years they are instructed in the philosophy of Confucius. This is the manner of education among the ordinary ranks. The children who are designed for posts of honour, begin in the same manner ; but intermix other studies relative to human conduct in the different stations of life.

IN China, the manners take their complexion from the laws, and are preserved by common usage, which are likewise prescribed by the laws. The Chinese have a greater number of precepts, relating to the most common actions, than any other people in the world. Their code of politeness is very voluminous ; the lowest citizen is instructed in it, and observes it with the same exactness as the mandarines and the court.

THE



## B O O K

I.



THE laws in this code, like all the rest, are formed with a view of keeping up the opinion that China is but one great family, and of promoting that regard and mutual affection in the citizens, which is due to each other as brethren. These rights and customs tend to preserve the manners. Sometimes, indeed, ceremonies are substituted for sentiment; but how often are they the means of reviving it! They compose a kind of constant homage that is paid to virtue; and is calculated to engage the attention of youth. It preserves the respect due to virtue herself; and if it sometimes leads to hypocrisy, it encourages a laudable zeal. Tribunals are erected to take cognizance of transgressions against the customs; as well as to punish crimes and reward merit. Moderate penalties are inflicted upon crimes, and virtue is distinguished by marks of honour. Honour is accordingly one of the principles that actuate the Chinese government: and though it is not the leading one, operates more strongly than fear, and more feebly than affection.

UNDER the influence of such institutions, one should expect, that China would be the country in the whole world, where men would be most humane. Accordingly the humanity of the Chinese is conspicuous on those occasions, where it should seem, that virtue could have no other object but justice; and that justice could not be executed without severity. Their prisoners are confined in neat and commodious apartments, where they are well taken care of even to the moment when they suffer. It frequently happens, that the only punishment inflicted on a rich man amounts to no more than obliging him for a certain time to maintain or clothe some old men and orphans at his own expence. Our moral and political romances, form the real history of the Chinese, who have regulated all the actions of men with

with such an exact nicety, that they have scarcely any need of sentiment. Yet they do not fail to cultivate the latter in order to give a proper estimation to the former.

B O O K  
I.  
}

THE spirit of patriotism, that spirit, without which states are mere colonies, and not nations, is stronger, perhaps, and more active among the Chinese, than it is found in any republic. It is common to see them voluntarily contributing their labour to repair the public roads : the rich build places of shelter upon them for the use of travellers ; others plant trees there. Such actions, which are proofs of a beneficent humanity, rather than an ostentation of generosity, are far from being uncommon in China.

THERE have been times, when they have been frequent ; and others, when they have been less so ; but the corruption which was the cause of the latter, brought on a revolution, and the manners of the people were reformed. They suffered by the late invasion of the Tartars : they are now recovering in proportion, as the princes of that victorious nation lay aside the superstitions of their own country, to adopt the principles of the nation they have conquered ; and in proportion as they improve in the knowledge of those books, which the Chinese call canonical.

It cannot be long before we see the amiable character of this nation entirely revived ; that fraternal, and kindred principle ; those enchanting social ties, which soften the manners of the people, and attach them inviolably to the laws. Political errors and vices cannot take deep root in a country where they never promote any men to public employments, but such as are of the sect of the learned. whose sole occupation is to instruct themselves in the principles of morality and government. As long as real knowledge shall be held in estimation, as long as it shall continue to lead to public honours, there

**B O O K** there will exist among the people of China a fund of  
 I. reason and virtue, which will not be found among other  
 nations.

If this picture of the manners of the Chinese should be different from that drawn by other writers, it is not, perhaps, impossible to reconcile opinions so seemingly contradictory. China may be considered in two distinct points of view. If we study the inhabitants as they appear in the sea-ports, and great towns, we shall be disgusted at their cowardice, knavery and avarice : but in the other parts of the empire, particularly in the country, we shall find their manners domestic, social and patriotic. It would be difficult to point out a more virtuous, humane and intelligent people.

It must, however, be acknowledged, that the greatest part of those improvements, which depend upon theories at all complicated, are not so far advanced there, as one should naturally expect from an ancient, active and diligent people, who have so long had a clue to them. But this riddle is not inexplicable. The Chinese language requires a long and laborious study, scarcely to be comprehended within the term of a man's life. The rites and ceremonies, which they observe upon every occasion, afford more exercise for their memory than their sensibility. Their manners are calculated to check the impulses of the soul, and weaken its operations. Too much taken up in the pursuit of what is useful, they have no opportunity of launching out into the extensive regions of imagination. An excessive veneration for antiquity, makes them the slaves of whatever is established. All these causes united, must necessarily have stifled, among the Chinese, the spirit of invention. It requires ages with them to bring any thing to perfection ; and whoever reflects on the state, in which arts and sciences were found among them three hundred

hundred years ago, must be convinced of the extraordinary antiquity of their empire. **B O O K**  
**I.**

THE low state of learning, and the fine arts in China, may perhaps be further owing to the very perfection of its government. This paradox has its foundation in reason. Where the study of the laws holds the first rank in a nation, and is rewarded with an appointment in the administration, instead of a post in an academy; where learning is applied to the regulation of manners, or the maintenance of the public weal; where the same nation is exceedingly populous, and requires a constant attention in its learned members to make subsistence keep an equal pace with population; where every individual, besides the duties he owes to the public, which take a considerable time to be well understood, has particular duties arising from the claims of his family or profession: in such a nation the speculative and ornamental parts of science cannot be expected to arrive at that height of splendor they have attained in Europe. But the Chinese, who are only our scholars in the arts of luxury and vanity, are our masters in the science of good government. They study how to increase, not how to diminish the number of inhabitants.

ONE of the arts in which the Chinese have made the least progress is that of war. It is natural to imagine, that a nation, whose whole conduct, like that of infants, is influenced by ceremonies, precepts, and customs either of private or public institution, must consequently be pliant, moderate and inclined to tranquillity both at home and abroad. Reason and reflection, while they cherish sentiments like these, leave no room for that enthusiasm, which constitutes the hero and the warrior. The spirit of humanity, which they imbibe in their tender years, makes them look with abhorrence on those sanguinary scenes of rapine and massacre, that  
are

B O O K

I.

are so familiar to nations of a warlike turn. With such dispositions, can we wonder that the Chinese are not warriors? They have soldiers without number, but totally undisciplined, except in the single article of obedience, being still more deficient in practice than in courage. In their wars with the Tartars, the Chinese knew not how to fight, and only stood to be killed. Their attachment to their government, their country and their laws, may supply the want of a warlike spirit, but will never supply the want of good arms, and military skill. When a nation has found the art of subduing its conquerors by its manners, it has no occasion to overcome its enemies by force of arms.

SUCH is the empire of China, so much talked of, and so little known. Such it was, when the Portuguese landed there. They might have learned in it lessons of wisdom and government, but they thought of nothing but of enriching themselves, and propagating their religion. Thomas Perez their ambassador, found the court of Peking disposed to favour his nation, whose fame had spread itself throughout Asia. It had already attracted the esteem of the Chinese, and the conduct of Ferdinand Andrada, who commanded the Portuguese squadron, tended still farther to increase their esteem. He visited all the coasts of China, and traded with the natives. When he was on the point of departure, he made proclamation in the ports he had put into, that if any one had been injured by a Portuguese, and would make it known he should receive satisfaction. The ports of China were now upon the point of being opened to them: Thomas Perez was just about concluding a treaty, when Simon Andrada, brother to Ferdinand, appeared on the coasts with a fresh squadron. This commander treated the Chinese in the same manner as the Portuguese had, for some time treated all the people of Asia. He built a fort without permission, in the island

island of Taman, from whence he took opportunities of pillaging, and extorting money from all the ships bound from, or to the ports of China. He carried off young girls from the coast; he seized upon Chinese men and made them slaves; he gave himself up to the most licentious acts of piracy, and the most shameful dissoluteness. The sailors and soldiers under his command, followed his example. The Chinese enraged at these violences fitted out a large fleet: The Portuguese defended themselves courageously, and escaped by making their way through the enemy's fleet. The emperor imprisoned Thomas Perez, who died in confinement, and the Portuguese nation was banished from China for some years; after this the Chinese relaxed and gave permission to the Portuguese to trade at the port of Sancian, to which place they brought gold from Africa, spices from the Molucca islands, and from Ceylon, elephants teeth, and some precious stones. In return they took silks of every kind, china, gums, medicinal herbs and tea, which is since become so necessary a commodity to the northern nations of Europe.

THE Portuguese contented themselves with the sheds, and offices they had at Sancian, and the liberty granted to their trade by the Chinese government, till an opportunity offered of establishing themselves upon a footing more solid, and less dependent upon the mandarins, who had the command of the coast.

A PIRATE, named Tokang-si-loo, whose successors had made him powerful, had seized upon the island of Macao, from whence he blocked up the ports of China, and even proceeded so far as to lay siege to Canton. The neighbouring mandarins had recourse to the Portuguese, who had ships in the harbour of Sancian; they hastened to the relief of Canton, raised the siege,

B O O K

I.



and obtained a complete victory over the pirate, whom they pursued as far as Macao, where he killed himself.

THE emperor of China being informed of the service the Portuguese had rendered him on this occasion, bestowed Macao on them, as a mark of his gratitude. They received this grant with joy, and built a town which became very flourishing, and was advantageously situated for the trade they soon after entered into with Japan.

The beginning of the Portuguese trade in Japan, the state of the Japanese islands.

IN the year 1542, it happened that a Portuguese vessel fortunately was driven by a storm on the coast of those celebrated islands. The crew was hospitably received, and obtained of the natives every thing they wanted to refresh, and refit them for the sea. When they arrived at Goa, they reported what they had seen, and informed the viceroy, that a new country, not less rich than populous, presented itself to the zeal of missionaries, and the industry of merchants. Both missionaries, and merchants embarked without delay for Japan.

THEY found a great empire, which is, perhaps, the most ancient of any in the world, except that of China; its annals are not without a great mixture of fable, but it appears beyond a doubt, that in the year 660, Sinchu founded the monarchy, which has ever since been continued in the same family. These sovereigns called Dairos, were at the same time the kings, and the pontiffs of the nation; and by virtue of these united powers got the whole extent of the supreme authority into their hands. The person of the Dairos was sacred, they were considered as the descendants, and representatives of the gods. The least disobedience to the most trifling of their laws, was looked upon as a crime scarcely to be expiated by the severest punishments; nor were they confined to the offender alone, his whole family was involved in the consequences of his crime.

ABOUT

ABOUT the eleventh century these princes, who, no **BOOK**  
doubt, were more jealous of the pleasing prerogatives **I.**  
of priesthood, than of the troublesome rights of royalty,  
divided the state with several governments, and intrust-  
ed the administration of them to such of the nobility as  
were most distinguished for their knowledge and wis-  
dom.

By this means the unlimited power of the Dairos  
suffered a considerable change. The affairs of the em-  
pire were left to fluctuate at all adventures. The rest-  
less and quick sighted ambition of their viceroys took  
advantage of this inattention to make a thousand revo-  
lutions. By degrees they began to depart from the al-  
legiance they had sworn to preserve. They made war  
upon each other, and even upon their sovereign: an  
absolute independence was the consequence of these  
commotions, such was the state of Japan, when it was  
discovered by the Portuguese.

THE great islands, of which this empire is composed,  
being situated in a tempestuous climate surrounded by  
storms, agitated by volcanos, and subject to those great  
natural events, which impress terror on the human  
mind, were inhabited by a people entirely addicted to  
superstition, but divided into several sects. That of  
Xinto is the ancient established religion of the country:  
it acknowledges a supreme being, and the immortality  
of the soul; and pays adoration to a multitude of gods,  
saints, or camis, that is to say the souls of great men,  
who have been the support and ornament of their coun-  
try. The high-priest of this sect held the government  
of Japan under the name of Dairo. He was descended  
from the gods, and in that quality reigned despotically  
over his subjects. Being both emperor and high-priest,  
he has rendered religion, in some respects, useful to  
his people, which is not absolutely impossible in coun-  
tries



B O O K

I.

{

tries where the sacerdotal and civil power are united in the same person.

It does not appear that the sect of Xinto has had the madness, which of all others is the most dangerous to morality, to fix a criminal stigma on actions innocent in themselves. Far from encouraging that gloomy fanaticism, and fear of the gods, which is inspired by almost all other religions, the Xinto sect had applied itself to prevent, or at least to moderate this disorder of the imagination, by instituting festivals, which were celebrated three times in every month. They were dedicated to friendly visits, feasts, and rejoicings. The priests of Xinto taught, that the innocent pleasures of mankind are agreeable to the deity, and that the best method of paying devotion to the Camis is to imitate their virtues, and to enjoy in this world, that happiness they enjoy in another. In consequence of this tenet, the Japanese after having put up their prayers in the temples, which are always situated in the midst of groves, resorted to courtezans, who commonly inhabited places consecrated to love, and devotion, and composed a religious community under the direction of an order of monks who received a share of the profits, arising from this pious compliance with the dictates of nature.

The Budzoists are another sect in Japan, of which Budzo was the founder. Their doctrine was nearly the same with that of the sect of Xinto; over which they hoped to gain a superiority by the severity of their morals. Besides Amida, the deity of the Xintoists, the Budzoists worshipped a kind of mediator between God and mankind. They likewise worshipped other mediatorial divinities between men and Amida. The professors of this religion, flattered themselves, that they should prevail over the religion of Xinto by the multitude

rude of their precepts, the excess of their austerity, **B O O K**  
 their devotions and mortifications. **I.**

THE spirit of Budzoiism is dreadful. It breathes nothing but penitence, excessive fear, and cruel severity. Of all fanaticisms it is the most terrible. The monks of this sect oblige their disciples to pass one half of their lives in penance, to expiate imaginary sins; and inflict upon them the greatest part of that penance themselves, with a tyranny and cruelty, of which one may conceive an idea, from the inquisitors in Spain; with this difference, that the Japanese fathers are themselves the butchers of these voluntary victims to superstition; whereas the inquisitors are only the judges of those sins and punishments, which they have themselves devised and invented. The Budzoists priests keep the minds of their followers in a continual state of torture, between remorse and expiations. Their religion is so over-loaded with precepts, that it is not possible to observe them. They represent their gods as always desirous to punish, and always offended.

It may readily be imagined, what effects so horrible a superstition must have on the character of the people, and to what degree of ferocity it hath brought them. The lights of a wholesome morality, a little philosophy, a prudent system of education might have remedied these laws, this government, and this religion; which conspire to make mankind more savage in society with his own species, than if he lived in the woods, and had no companions but the monsters that roam the deserts.

IN China, they put into the hands of children books of instruction, which contain a detail of their duties, and teach them the advantages of virtue. The Japanese children are made to get by heart poems in which the actions of their forefathers are celebrated; a contempt  
 I 3 of

## BOOK

## I.

of life is inculcated, and suicide is set up as the most heroic of all actions. These songs and poems, which are said to be full of energy and beauty, beget enthusiasm. The Chinese education tends to regulate the soul, and keep it in order; the Japanese, to inflame and excite it to heroism. These are guided through life by sentiment; the Chinese by reason and custom.

THE Chinese aim only at truth in their writings, and place their happiness in a state of tranquillity. The Japanese have a quick relish of pleasures, and would rather suffer, than be without feeling. In fine, the Chinese seem to wish to counteract the violence and impetuosity of the soul; the Japanese to keep it from sinking into a state of languor and inactivity.

It is natural to imagine that people of this character must be fond of novelty. The Portuguese were accordingly received with all possible demonstrations of joy. All the ports were open to them. All the petty princes of the country invited them to their provinces: each contending who should give them the most valuable advantages, grant them the most privileges, and shew them the greatest civilities. These merchants established a prodigious trade. The Portuguese carried thither the commodities of India which they brought from different markets; and Macao served as a repository for their European goods. Immense quantities of the productions of Europe and Asia were consumed by the Dairo, the usurpers of his rights, the grandees, and the whole nation. But what have they to give in return?

THE country of Japan is in general mountainous, strong, and by no means fertile. Its produce in rice, barley, and wheat, which are the only crops it admits of, is not sufficient for the maintenance of its numerous inhabitants; who notwithstanding their activity, foresight,

fight, and frugality, must perish with famine, if the sea did not supply them with great quantities of fish. The empire affords no productions proper for exportation ; nor do the mechanic arts furnish any article of trade but their works of steel, which are the best we are acquainted with.

**B O O K**  
**I.**

WERE it not for the advantages it derives from its mines of gold, silver, and copper, which are the richest in Asia, and perhaps in the whole world, Japan could not support its own expences. The Portuguese every year carried off quantities of these metals, to the amount of fourteen or fifteen millions of livres. (upon an average, about 634,000*l.*) They married also the richest of the Japanese heiresses, and allied themselves to the most powerful families.

WITH such advantages the avarice, as well as the ambition of the Portuguese, might have been satisfied. They were masters of the coasts of Guinea, Arabia, Persia, and the two Peninsulas of India. They were possessed of the Moluccas, Ceylon, and the isles of Sunda, while their settlement at Macao insured to them the commerce of China and Japan.

Extent of  
the Portu-  
guese do-  
minions in  
the Indies.

THROUGHOUT this immense tract, the will of the Portuguese was the supreme law. Earth and sea acknowledged their sovereignty. Their authority was so absolute, that things and persons were dependent upon them, and moved entirely by their directions. No nation or private person dared to make voyages, or carry on trade, without obtaining their permission and passport. Those who had this liberty granted them, were prohibited from trading in cinnamon, ginger, pepper, timber, iron, steel, lead, tin, and arms, of which the conquerors reserved to themselves the exclusive benefit. A thousand valuable articles, by which so many nations have since enriched themselves, and which then bore a

**B O O K**  
**I.**  
 higher price on account of their novelty, were entirely engrossed by the Portuguese. In consequence of this monopoly, the price of the produce and manufactures both in Europe and Asia were regulated at their discretion.

IN the midst of so much glory, wealth, and conquest, the Portuguese had not neglected that part of Africa, which lies between the Cape of Good Hope and the Red sea, and has in all ages been famed for the richness of its productions. The possession of this country was on many accounts an important object; the Arabians had been settled there for several ages, and their numbers were greatly increased. They had formed along the coast of Zanguebar several small independent sovereignties, some of which made a considerable figure, and almost all of them were in good condition. The flourishing state of these settlements was owing to mines of gold and silver, which they found within their respective territories, the produce of which enabled them to purchase the commodities of India. To possess themselves of this treasure, and to deprive their competitors of it, was looked upon as an indispensable duty by the Portuguese. Agreeable to this principle, these Arabian merchants were attacked, and without difficulty subdued, about the year 1508. Upon their ruins was formed an empire, which extended from Sofala as far as Melinda, of which the island of Mosambique was made the center. This island is separated from the continent only by a narrow channel, and is no more than two leagues in circumference. Its port, which is excellent, and wants nothing but a purer air, was fixed upon as a place for the vessels of the conqueror to put in at, and as a staple for all their merchandise. Here they were used to wait for those settled winds, which at certain times of the year blow without intermission from the  
 African

African to the Indian coasts, as at other times of the year they blow in an opposite direction from the coasts of India to those of Africa.

B O O K  
I.

THESE successes properly improved might have formed so considerable a power, that could not be shaken; but the vices and folly of some of their chiefs, the abuse of riches and of power, the wantonness of victory, the distance of their own country, had changed the character of the Portuguese. The religious zeal, which had added so much force and activity to their courage, now produced in them nothing but ferocity. They made no scruple of pillaging, cheating, and enslaving idolaters. They supposed that the Pope, in bestowing the kingdoms of Asia upon the Portuguese monarchs, had not withheld the property of individuals from their subjects. Being become absolute masters of the eastern seas, they extorted a tribute from the ships of every country; they ravaged the coasts, insulted the princes, and became in a short time the terror and scourge of all nations.

Corrupti-  
on of the  
Portuguese  
in India.

THE king of Sidor was carried off from his own palace, and murdered with his children, whom he had entrusted to the care of the Portuguese.

AT Ceylon. the people were not suffered to cultivate the earth, except for their new masters, who treated them with the greatest barbarity.

AT Goa they had established the inquisition, and whoever was rich became a prey to the ministers of that infamous tribunal.

FARIA, who was sent out against the pirates from Malacca, China, and other parts, made a descent on the island of Calampui, and plundered the sepulchres of the emperors of China.

SOUZA caused all the pagodas on the Malabar coast to be destroyed, and his people inhumanly massacred the

**B O O K** the wretched Indians, who went to weep over the  
 I. ruins of their temples.

**CORREA** terminated an obstinate war with the king of Pegu, and both parties were to swear on the books of their several religions to observe the treaty. Correa swore on a collection of songs, and thought by this vile stratagem to elude his engagements.

**NUNO da Cunha** would make himself master of the island of Damanag on the coast of Cambaya; the inhabitants offered to surrender it to him, if he would suffer them to carry off their treasures. This request was refused and Nuno put them all to their sword.

**DIEGO de Silveira** was cruizing in the red sea. A vessel richly laden saluted him. The captain came on board, and gave him a letter from a Portuguese general, which was to be his passport. The letter contained only these words: *I desire the captains of ships belonging to the king of Portugal to seize upon this moorish vessel, as a lawful prize.*

**IN** a short time the Portuguese preserved no more humanity or good faith with each other than with the natives. Almost all the states, where they had the command, were divided into factions.

**THERE** prevailed every where in their manners a mixture of avarice, debauchery, cruelty and devotion. They had most of them seven or eight concubines, whom they kept to work with the utmost rigour, and forced from them the money they gained by their labour. Such treatment of women was very different from the spirit of chivalry.

**THE** chiefs, and principal officers, admitted to their table a multitude of those singing and dancing women, with which India abounds. Effeminacy introduced itself into their houses and armies. The officers marched to meet the enemy in palankeens. That brilliant courage, which had subdued so many nations, existed

no longer among them. The Portuguese were with difficulty brought to fight, except where there was a prospect of plunder. In a short time the king of Portugal used to receive the produce of the tribute, which was paid him by more than one hundred and fifty eastern princes. This money was lost in its way from them to him. Such corruption prevailed in the finances, that the tributes of sovereigns, the revenues of provinces, which ought to have been immense, the taxes they levied in gold, silver, and spices, on the inhabitants of the continent and islands, were not sufficient to keep up a few citadels, and to fit out the shipping that was necessary for the protection of trade.

It is a melancholy view to contemplate the fall of nations. Let us hasten to the administration of Don Juan da Castro, who restored to the Portuguese some part of their virtue.

CASTRO was much enlightened considering the age he lived in. He possessed a noble and elevated soul; and the study of the ancients had preserved in him that love of glory and of his country, which was so common among the Greeks and Romans.

In the beginning of his wise and glorious administration, Cojé-Sophao, minister of Mahmoud, king of Cambaya, had inspired his master with a design of attacking the Portuguese. This man, whose father is said to have been an Italian, and his mother a Greek, had raised himself from slavery to the conduct of the state, and the command of armies. He had made himself a Mussulman, and, though he had really no religion, he knew how to avail himself of the aversion the people had conceived against the Portuguese, on account of the contempt they shewed for the religions of the country. He engaged in his service experienced officers, veteran soldiers, able engineers, and even founders, whom he  
got



**B O O K** got from Constantinople. His preparations seemed intended against the Mogul or the Patans, and when the Portuguese least expected it, he attacked and made himself master of Diu, and laid siege to the citadel.

**I.**

**THIS** place, which is situated on a little island upon the coast of Guzurat, had always been considered as the key of India in those times, when navigators never launched out from the coast; and Surat was the great staple of the east. From the arrival of Gama, it had been constantly an object of ambition to the Portuguese, into whose hands it fell at length in the time of d'Acughna. Mascarenhas, who was governor of it at the juncture we are speaking of, should have had nine hundred men, of which he had only three: the rest of his garrison, by an abuse very common in those days, were employed in trade at the different towns upon the coast. He must have surrendered, if he had not received immediate assistance. Castro sent him a reinforcement under the command of his son, who was killed in the attempt. Cojè-Sophar was killed also; but his death did not slacken the operations of the siege.

**CASTRO** instituted funeral games in honour of those who fell in defence of their country. He congratulated their parents in the name of the government, and received congratulations himself on the death of his eldest son. His second presided at the funeral games, and marched immediately after for Diu, to deserve, as it were, the honours he had just been paying to his brother. The garrison repulsed the enemy in every attack, and signalized themselves every day by extraordinary actions. In the eyes of the Indians the Portuguese were more than men. *Happily, said they, Providence has decreed that there should be but few of them as there are of tygers and lions, lest they should exterminate the human species.*

**CASTRO**

CASTRO himself headed a larger reinforcement than those he had sent. He threw himself into the citadel with provisions, and above four thousand men. It was debated, whether they should give battle. The reasons on both sides were discussed. Garcias de Sá, an old officer, commanded silence; *Ye have all spoke, said he, now let us fight.* Castro was of the same opinion. The Portuguese marched out to the enemy's intrenchments, and gained a signal victory. After having raised the siege, it was necessary to repair the citadel. They were in want of money, and Castro borrowed it on his own credit.

At his return to Goa he wished to give his army the honours of a triumph after the manner of the ancients. He thought that such honours would serve to revive the warlike spirit of the Portuguese, and that the pomp of the ceremony might have a great effect on the imagination of the people. At his entry the gates of the city were ornamented with triumphal arches; the streets were lined with tapestry; the women appeared at the windows in magnificent habits, and scattered flowers and perfumes upon the conquerors; while the people danced to the sound of instruments of music. The royal standard was carried before the victorious soldiers, who marched in order. The viceroy crowned with branches of palm rode on a superb car: the generals of the enemy followed his car, and after them the soldiers that had been made prisoners. The colours that had been taken from them, were carried in procession reversed and dragging on the ground, and were followed by their artillery and baggage. Representations of the citadel they had delivered, and of the battle they had gained, enhanced the splendor of the spectacle. Verses, songs, orations, firing of cannon, every thing concurred

**BOOK** I. curred to render the festival magnificent, agreeable, and striking.

ACCOUNTS of this triumph were brought to Europe. The wits condemned it as ridiculous, the bigots as profane. The queen of Portugal said upon the occasion, *That Castro had conquered like a christian hero and triumphed like a pagan one.*

THE vigour of the Portuguese, which Castro had re-animated, did not long continue. Corruption made daily advances among the citizens of every class. One of the viceroys set up boxes in the principal towns, in which any person might put memorials and articles of intelligence. Such a method might be very useful and tend to a reformation of abuses in an enlightened country, where the morals of the people were not totally spoiled, but among a superstitious and corrupt people of what service could it be?

THE original conquerors of India were none of them now subsisting, and their country exhausted by too many enterprizes and colonies was not in a capacity to replace them. The defenders of the Portuguese settlements were born in Asia; their opulence, the softness of the climate, the manner of living, and, perhaps, the food had taken from them much of the intrepidity of their forefathers. At the same time that they gave themselves up to all those excesses which make men hated, they did not retain courage enough to make themselves feared. They were monsters; poison, fire, assassination, every sort of crime was become familiar to them; nor were they private persons only who were guilty of such practices, men in office set them the example! They cut the throats of the natives; they tore each other in pieces. The governor, who was just arrived, loaded his predecessor with irons, that he might strip him of his wealth. The distance of the scene, false

false witnesses and large bribes secured every crime from punishment. **BOOK I.**

**Decline of the Portuguese power in India.**

THE island of Amboyna was the first to avenge itself. A Portuguese had at a public festival seized upon a very beautiful woman, and regardless of all decency, had committed the greatest of outrages against her. One of the islanders, named Genulio, armed his fellow-citizens; after which he called together the Portuguese, and addressed them in the following manner: “ To revenge affronts of so cruel a nature as those we have received from you, would require actions, not words. Yet we will speak to you. You preach to us a Deity, who delights, you say, in generous actions; but theft, murder, obscenity, and drunkenness are your common practice; your hearts are enflamed with every vice. Our manners can never suit with yours: nature foresaw this, when she separated us by immense seas, and ye have overleaped her barriers. This audacity, of which ye are not ashamed to boast, is a proof of the corruption of your hearts. Take my advice; leave to their repose these nations that resemble you so little; go, fix your habitations among those, who are as brutal as yourselves; an intercourse with you would be more fatal to us than all the evils which it is in the power of your God to inflict upon us. We renounce your alliance for ever: your arms are superior to ours; but we are more just than you, and we do not fear you. The lions are from this day your enemies; fly from their country, and beware how you approach it again.”

THIS harangue, which thirty years before would have brought on the destruction of Amboyna, was listened to with a patience that fully demonstrated what a change the Portuguese had undergone.

**EQUALLY**

## BOOK

## I.

EQUALLY detested in every part, they saw a confederacy forming to expel them from the east. All the great powers of India entered into the league, and for two or three years carried on their preparations in secret. The court of Lisbon was informed of them; and the king Sebastian, who, if it had not been for his superstition, would have been a great prince, dispatched Ataida and all the Portuguese, who had distinguished themselves in the wars of Europe, to India.

THE general opinion on their arrival was to abandon the distant settlements, and assemble their forces on the Malabar coast, and in the neighbourhood of Goa. Although Ataida was of opinion that they had formed too great a number of settlements, he did not like the appearance of sacrificing them. *Comrades*, said he, *I mean to preserve all, and so long as I live the enemy shall not gain an inch of ground.* Immediately upon this he sent succours to all the places that were in danger, and made the necessary dispositions for defending Goa.

THE Samorin attacked Manjalar, Cochin, and Cannanor. The king of Cambaya attacked Chaul, Daman, Baichaim. The king of Achem laid siege to Malacca. The king of Ternate made war upon them in the Moluccas, Agalachem, a tributary to the Mogul, imprisoned the Portuguese merchants at Surat. The queen of Gareopa endeavoured to drive them out of Onor.

ATAIDA, in the midst of the care and trouble attending the siege of Goa, sent five ships to Surat, which obliged Agalachem to set the Portuguese, whom he had seized, at liberty. Thirteen ships were dispatched to Malacca, upon which the king of Achem and his allies abandoned the siege. Besides these, Ataida would fit out even the vessels, which were employed every year to carry tribute and merchandise to Lisbon. It was represented

represented to him, that instead of depriving himself of the assistance of men who were to go on board this fleet, he should preserve them for the defence of India. *We shall be enough without them*, said he, *the state is in distress and its hopes must not be deceived*. This reply surprised his opponents, and the fleet sailed. At the time when the place was most rigorously pressed by Idalcán, Ataida sent troops to the succour of Cochin and ships to Ceylon. The archbishop, whose authority was unlimited, interposed to prevent it. *Sir*, replied Ataida, *you understand nothing of these affairs, content yourself with recommending them to the blessing of God*. The Portuguese, who came from Europe, exhibited prodigies of valour during this siege. It was oftentimes with difficulty, that Ataida could restrain them from throwing away their lives. Many of them would sally out in the night contrary to his orders to attack the besiegers in their lines.

THE viceroy did not depend so entirely on the force of his arms, as to reject the assistance of policy. He was informed, that Idalcán was governed by one of his mistresses, and that she was in the camp with him. Women, who devote themselves to the pleasures of princes are generally slaves to ambition, and unacquainted with those virtues, which love inspires. The mistress of Idalcán suffered herself to be corrupted, and sold to Ataida her lover's secrets. Idalcán was aware of the treason, but could not discover the traitor. At last, after ten months spent in toil and action, his tents destroyed, his troops thinned, his elephants killed, and his cavalry unable to serve, this prince overcome by the genius of Ataida, quitted the siege, and retreated in shame and despair.

ATAIDA marched without delay to the assistance of Chaul, which was besieged by Nizamalve, king of Cambaya,

**B O O K**  
**I.**

baya, at the head of more than a hundred thousand men. The defence of Chaul had been conducted with as much intrepidity as that of Goa. It was followed by a great victory, which Ataida, with a handful of men, obtained over a numerous army, disciplined by a long siege.

ATAIDA, after this, marched against the Samorin, defeated and obliged him to sign a treaty, by which he engaged never to keep up any ships of war.

THE Portuguese became throughout the east what they were under the immediate conduct of Ataida. A single ship, commanded by Lopez Carasco, fought for three days successively against the whole fleet of the king of Achem. In the middle of the engagement word was brought to Lopez's son, that his father was killed: *We have one brave man the less*, said he; *we must conquer, or deserve to die as he has done*. Saying this, he took the command of the ship, and forcing his way in triumph through the enemy's fleet, anchored before Malacca:

NOR was courage the only virtue that revived among the Portuguese at this period, so powerful is the ascend-ent of a great man, even over the most corrupt nations. Thomas de Sofa had got for a slave a beautiful girl, who had not long before been promised to a young man that was in love with her. He getting intelligence of the misfortune of his mistress, flew to throw himself at her feet, and partake of her chains. Sofa was present at their interview; they embraced, and melted into tears. *I give you your liberty*, said the Portuguese general, *go and live happy elsewhere*.

THE management of the public money was likewise reformed by Ataida, who restrained those abuses, which are most injurious to states, and most difficult to be restrained. But this good order, this returning heroism; this glorious moment, did not survive his administration.

AT

At the death of Sebastian, Portugal sunk into a kind of anarchy, and was by degrees reduced under the dominion of Philip the Second. From this æra the Portuguese in India ceased to consider themselves as of the same country. Some made themselves independent, others turned pirates, and paid no respect to any flag. Many entered into the service of the princes of the country, and these almost all became ministers or generals, so great were the advantages this nation still maintained over those of India. There was not one among the Portuguese, who pursued any other object than the advancement of his own interest: there was no zeal, no union for the common good. Their possessions in India were divided into three governments, which gave no assistance to each other, and even clashed in their projects and interests. Neither discipline, subordination, nor the love of glory, animated either the soldiers or the officers. Men of war no longer came out of the ports, or whenever they came out were badly equipped. Manners became more and more depraved. Not one of their commanders had power enough to restrain the torrent of vice, and the majority of these commanders were themselves corrupt. The Portuguese at length lost all their former greatness, when a free and enlightened nation, actuated with a proper spirit of toleration, appeared in India, and contended with them for the empire of that country.

It may be affirmed, that at the time when Portugal first made its discoveries, the world was very little acquainted with the political principles of trade, the real power of different states, the advantages of conquest, the manner of establishing and preserving colonies, and the benefits the mother country might derive from them.

It was a wise project to endeavour to find a passage by Africa to go to the Indies, and to bring merchandise.



## B O O K

## I.

The benefits which the Venetians derived by less direct roads, had justly excited the emulation of the Portuguese ; but it was proper there should be some limits to so laudable an ambition.

THIS small nation becoming a sudden mistress of the richest and most extensive commerce of the globe, soon consisted of nothing else but merchants, factors, and sailors, who were destroyed by long voyages. Thus the Portuguese lost the foundation of all real power, which consists in agriculture, natural industry, and population ; and there was consequently no proportion between their commerce and the means of keeping it up.

THEY carried these destructive measures still further ; and, animated with the rage of conquest, extended themselves over a vast track of land, which no European nation would have been able to preserve, without impairing their own strength.

THUS this small country, which of itself was not very populous, constantly exhausted itself in soldiers, sailors and inhabitants, sent to supply the colonies.

THE spirit of religious intolerance that prevailed amongst them, would not allow them to admit into the class of their own citizens the people of the east and of Africa, and they were therefore obliged to be perpetually at war with their new subjects.

As the government soon changed its schemes of trade into projects of conquest ; the nation, which had never been guided by the true commercial spirit, soon assumed that of rapine and plunder.

TIME-PIECES, fire arms, fine cloths, and other articles, which have been since carried into India, not being then brought to that degree of perfection they have lately acquired, the Portuguese could not carry any thing there but money. They soon grew tired of this,  
and

and carried away from the Indians by force what they **B O O K**  
had before obtained by purchase. **I.**

**THEN** was to be seen throughout the kingdom of Portugal the utmost profusion of riches, joined to the most extreme poverty. The only opulent persons were those who had held some employment in the Indies; while the husbandman, who found no one to assist him in his toil, and the artists, who were unable to procure workmen, being soon compelled to forego their several employments, were reduced to the lowest state of misery.

**ALL** these misfortunes had been foreseen. When the discovery of the Indies engaged the attention of Portugal, that court flattered itself that the bare appearance of their ships in that mild climate, would insure the possession of it; that the trade of these countries would prove as far an inexhaustible source of riches to the nation, as it had been to those people who had hitherto been masters of it; and that by the treasure arising from it, the state, notwithstanding its small extent of territory, would become equal in strength and grandeur to the most formidable powers. There were some, however, who were not misled by these delusive hopes. The most penetrating and moderate of the ministers ventured to affirm, that the consequence of running in search of rich minerals, and glittering merchandise, would be an inattention to objects of real advantage, agriculture, and manufactures; that wars, shipwrecks, epidemical diseases, and other accidents, would weaken the whole empire beyond recovery; that the state thus carried out from its centre by the impulse of an extravagant ambition, would either by force or art attract the subjects to the most distant parts of Asia; that even if this enterprize succeeded, it would raise a powerful confederacy, which it would be impossible for the crown of

**B O O K**  
I.

Portugal to defeat. Attempts were in vain made, some time after this, to convince these discerning men of their error, by shewing them that the Indians were subdued; the Moors repulsed, and the Turks defeated: and by exhibiting the tide of wealth that flowed into Portugal. Their opinions were too well grounded in experience to be shaken by the report of these flattering successes. They still insisted that a few years would discover the folly of pushing these pursuits to extremity, and that they must inevitably lead to a corruption of morals, and end in ravages and universal confusion. Time, the great arbiter of political matters, has since shewn the truth of their predictions.

Present  
state of the  
Portuguese  
affairs in  
India.

Of all the conquests which the Portuguese had made in India, they possess none at present but Macao, Diu, and Goa; and the united importance of these three settlements, in their intercourse with India and Portugal, is very inconsiderable.

MACAO annually sends two vessels to Goa laden with china and other goods, that are rejected at Canton; the owners of which are generally Chinese merchants. These ships bring back as much of the sandal, Indian saffron, ginger and pepper, as the two frigates belonging to Goa are able to procure on the southern coast. The vessel which trades to the north carries a part of the cargo that comes from China to Surat, where it takes in some linens, and completes its lading at Diu, which is not what it was formerly. A ship arrives every year from Europe, which procures at Goa a small and indifferent cargo, consisting of goods picked up from China, Guzarat, and a few English counting houses, and sells them at Mosambique, Brasil, Angola, or the capital.

SUCH is the declining state into which the Portuguese affairs in India are fallen, from that pinnacle of glory to which they had been raised by the bold adventurers  
who

who discovered, and the intrepid heroes who conquered that country. The scene of their glory and opulence is become that of their ruin and disgrace. Their situation, however, is not so desperate as it may appear. Their remaining possessions are more than sufficient to intitle them to a large share in the affairs of India. But this change can only be effected by the aids of philosophy and a spirit of liberty. If the Portuguese knew their true interests, if their ports were declared free, and those who settled in them had their fortunes and the liberty of conscience secured to them, Indians who are now oppressed by their government, and the Europeans who are injured by their monopolizing companies, would resort to their settlements in great numbers, and their flag, which has long been despised, would again become respectable. Its power cannot, however, be equal to that of the Dutch, a persevering and considerate people, whose enterprizes we are going to relate.

END OF THE FIRST BOOK

## B O O K II.

*The settlements, wars, policy, and trade of the Dutch in the East-Indies.*

**B O O K**  
**II.**

**T**H E republic of Holland, has, from its first rise, been an object of universal admiration, and cannot fail to engage the curiosity and attention of the remotest posterity. The inhabitants have every where distinguished themselves by their industry and enterprizing genius: but are particularly celebrated for their knowledge of maritime affairs, and their expeditions to the continent of India. But before we attend them in their progress to these opulent and extensive regions, let us trace their history to its earliest æra. Such a retrospect is peculiarly proper in a work of this nature, as it will comprehend at one glance, all those characteristic marks by which the genius of a nation is distinguished. It is necessary that a reader who reflects may be enabled to judge of himself if the original state of this nation were such as afforded a presage of its future power; and whether the heroic associates of Civilis, who defied the Roman power, did not transfuse their spirit into those brave republicans, who, under the auspices of Nassau, opposed the dark and odious tyranny of Philip the Second.

Ancient  
revolu-  
tions in  
Holland.

It is a fact established by the best historical authority, that in the century preceding the christian æra, the Bat-  
tæ, dissatisfied with their situation in Hesse, settled upon  
the

the island formed by the Naal and the Rhine; which **BOOK**  
 was marshy, and had few or no inhabitants. They **II.**  
 gave the name of Batavia to their new country. Their  
 government was a mixture of monarchy, aristocracy,  
 and democracy. Their chief was, properly speaking,  
 nothing more than a principal citizen, whose office was  
 rather to advise than to command. The principal men  
 who exercised jurisdiction and commanded the troops in  
 their respective districts, were chosen, as well as the  
 kings, in a general assembly. A hundred persons, se-  
 lected from among the people, presided over every coun-  
 try, and acted as chiefs in the different hamlets. The  
 whole nation was, in some measure, an army always in  
 readiness. Each family composed a body of militia,  
 which served under a captain of its own choosing.

SUCH was the state of Batavia, when Cæsar passed  
 the Alps. This Roman general defeated the Helveti-  
 ans, several tribes of the Gauls, the Belgæ and Ger-  
 mans, who had crossed the Rhine, and extended his  
 conquests beyond that river. In consequence of this ex-  
 pedition the boldness and success of which were equally  
 astonishing, the protection of the conqueror was court-  
 ed on all sides.

SOME writers, too zealous for the honour of their  
 country, affirm that the Batavians entered into an alli-  
 ance with Rome; but the truth is, they submitted on  
 condition that they should be governed by their own  
 laws, pay no tribute, and be obliged only to perform  
 military services.

CÆSAR soon distinguished the Batavians from the  
 other nations that were subdued by the Romans. This  
 conqueror of the Gauls, when by Pompey's influence  
 he was recalled to Rome, and refused to obey the senate's  
 orders; when relying on the absolute authority which  
 his conduct had at length given him over the legions  
 and

**B O O K**  
**II.**

and auxiliaries, he attacked his enemies in Spain, Italy, and Asia : at this juncture, sensible that the Batavians had a principal share in his victories, he gave them the glorious appellation of *the friends and brethren of the Roman people*.

**AFTER** this, irritated by the unjust proceedings of certain governors, they obeyed the dictates of that noble impulse, so becoming men of spirit, which prompts them to take arms to revenge an insult. They shewed themselves as formidable as enemies, as they were faithful as allies ; but these troubles subsiding, the Batavians were pacified, but not subdued.

**WHEN** Rome, after having risen to a pitch of greatness unknown before, and which has never since been equalled by any state, no longer retained those manly virtues and strict principles which were the ground-work of that noble superstructure ; when their laws had lost their force, their armies, their discipline, and the citizens the love of their country : the barbarians, who by the terror of the Roman name had been driven to the north where they had been confined by force to remain, poured like a torrent into the southern countries. The empire was torn in pieces, and the finest provinces became a prey to those whom the Romans had always either degraded or oppressed. The Franks, in particular, seized upon the countries belonging to the Gauls ; and Batavia became a part of that extensive and famous kingdom, which was founded by these conquerors in the fifth century.

**THE** new monarchy experienced those inconveniences which are almost inseparable from rising states ; and are indeed too frequently felt in the best established governments. It was sometimes under the dominion of a single person ; and at others was subject to the caprice of a number of tyrants. It was constantly engaged ei-  
 ther

ther in foreign wars, or exposed to the rage of intestine dissensions. Sometimes it made the neighbouring states tremble for their safety ; but much oftener suffered from the incursions of the northern people who ravaged its provinces. It was equally the victim of the weakness of several of its princes, and of the unbounded ambition of their favourites and ministers. The overbearing spirit of the pontiffs, undermined the power of the throne, and their insolence brought both the laws and religion into disgrace. Anarchy and tyranny followed each other so close, that the most sanguine despaired of ever seeing affairs put upon a tolerable footing. The glorious æra of Charlemagne's government was only a transient gleam of light. As his great actions were the effect of his genius, and not in the least owing to the influence of any good institutions ; after his death, affairs returned to that state of confusion from which they had been retrieved by his father Pepin, and more particularly by his own endeavours. The French monarchy, the limits of which he had extended too far, was divided. Germany to which the Rhine served as a natural barrier, fell to the share of one of his grandsons : and, by an unaccountable arrangement, Batavia, to which the Normans in their excursions, had a little before given the name of Holland, was included in that allotment.

In the beginning of the tenth century, the German branch of the Carloviniens became extinct. As the other princes of France had neither courage nor power to assert their rights, the Germans easily disengaged themselves from a foreign yoke. Those of the nation, who, by virtue of a delegated power from the monarch, governed the five circles of which the state was composed, chose a chief out of their own body. This chief, fearing lest these powerful men might be tempted to throw off their dependance, if any severer conditions were



**B O O K**  
**II.**

were required of them, contented himself with their fidelity and homage, and exacted only such services as they were obliged to by the feudal laws.

At this memorable juncture, the counts of Holland, who, as well as the rest of the provincial chiefs, had hitherto exercised a precarious and dependent authority, obtained the same rights as the other great vassals of Germany: and as they afterwards enlarged their territories by conquest, marriages, and grants from the emperors, they in time became totally independent of the empire. They were not equally successful in their unjust attempts against the public liberty. Their subjects were not to be intimidated by force, cajoled by flattery, or corrupted by largesses. War and peace, taxes, laws, and treaties were managed by the three united powers of the count, the nobles, and the towns. The republican spirit still prevailed in the nation, when by some extraordinary events, it fell under the dominion of the house of Burgundy, whose former power, though before considerable, was greatly strengthened by this re-union.

Those who had the sagacity to investigate probabilities, foresaw, that this state, which was formed as it were by the gradual accretion of many others, would one day be of great weight in the political system of Europe. The genius of its inhabitants, its advantageous situation, and its real strength, afforded almost a certain prospect of its future greatness. These projects and expectations which were just ripening into realities, were disappointed by an event, which though it happens every day, never fails to baffle the designs of ambition. The male line in that house became extinct; and Mary, who was sole heiress to its dominions, by her marriage in 1477, transferred to the house of Austria the advantages that had been gained by several struggles,

gles, a great number of intrigues, and some acts of injustice. BOOK  
II.

At this æra, so famous in history, each of the seventeen provinces of the Low Countries had particular laws, extensive privileges, and almost a distinct government. The excellent principle of union which equally contributes to the welfare and security both of empires and republics, was universally disregarded. The people having been, from time immemorial, accustomed to this state of confusion, had no idea that it was possible to enjoy a more rational form of government. This prejudice was of so long a standing, so generally adopted, and so firmly established, that Maximilian, Philip and Charles, the three Austrian princes who first inherited the dominions of the house of Burgundy, thought it prudent not to attempt any innovation. They flattered themselves, that some happier conjuncture might enable their successors to execute with safety a plan, which they could not even attempt without danger.

At this time a great change was preparing in the minds of men in Europe. The revival of letters, the extension of commerce, the invention of printing and the discovery of the compass, brought on the æra when human reason was to shake off the yoke of some of those prejudices which had gained ground in the barbarous ages. Rise of the  
republic of  
Holland.

THE intelligent part of the world were for the most part cured of the Romish superstitions. They were disgusted at the abuse the popes made of their authority; the contributions they raised upon the people; the sale of indulgences; and more particularly at those absurd refinements with which they had disguised the simple religion of Jesus Christ.

BUT these discerning people were not the first who attempted a revolution. This honour was reserved for  
a tur-

**B O O K**  
**II.**

a turbulent monk, whose barbarous eloquence roused the northern nations. Some of the most enlightened men of the age, contributed to undeceive the rest. Some of the European princes embraced the reformed religion; others held communion with the church of Rome. The former found no difficulty in bringing over their subjects to their opinions; while the latter had much ado to prevent theirs from embracing the new doctrines. They had recourse to a variety of measures which were too often pursued with rigour. That spirit of fanaticism, which had destroyed the Saxons, the Albigenes, and the Hussites, was revived. Gibbets were erected and fires kindled anew, to check the progress of the new doctrine.

No sovereign was so ready to make use of these expedients as Philip II. His tyranny was felt in every part of his extensive monarchy; and his zeal for his religion prompted him to persecute all those who fell under the denomination of heretics or infidels. Designs were formed to deprive the inhabitants of the Low Countries of their privileges; and millions of citizens were condemned to the scaffold. The people revolted: and the same scene was renewed which the Venetians had shewn the world many centuries before, when flying from oppression, and finding no retreat upon land, they sought an asylum upon the waters. Seven small provinces lying on the northern side of Brabant and Flanders, which were rather overflowed than watered by large rivers, and often covered by the sea, whose violence was with difficulty restrained by dikes; having no wealth but what accrued from a few pasture-lands, and a little fishing; formed one of the richest and most powerful republics in the world; and which may, perhaps, be considered as the model of commercial states. The first efforts of this united people had not the desired

fired success; but though they were frequently defeated, they ended with victories. The Spanish troops they had to encounter, were the best in Europe, and at first gained several advantages. But by degrees the new republicans recovered their losses. They resisted with firmness; and gaining experience from their own mis-carriages, as well as from the example of their enemies, they at length became their superiors in the art of war: and the necessity they lay under of disputing every inch of ground in so confined a country as Holland, gave them opportunities of improving the art of fortifying a country or a town in the best manner.

THE weak state of Holland, at its rise, obliged it to seek for arms and assistance from every quarter where there was any prospect of obtaining it. It granted an asylum to pirates of all nations, with a view of employing them against the Spaniards; and this was the foundation of their naval strength. Wise laws, an admirable order, a constitution which preserved equality among mankind, an excellent police and a spirit of toleration, soon erected this republic into a powerful state. In the year 1590, the Hollanders more than once humbled the pride of the Spanish flag. They had already established a kind of trade, the most suitable that could be to their situation. Their vessels were employed as they are still, in carrying the merchandize of one nation to another. The Hanse Towns, and some towns in Italy, were in possession of these transports: and the Hollanders, in competition with them, by their frugality soon gained the advantage. Their ships of war protected their merchantmen. Their merchants grew ambitious of extending their commerce: and got the trade of Lisbon into their hands, where they purchased Indian goods which they sold again to all the states of Europe.

PHILIP

**B O O K**  
**II.**

PHILIP II. having made himself master of Portugal, enjoined his new subjects in 1594 to hold no correspondence with his enemies. This arbitrary prince did not foresee that this prohibition, which he thought must weaken the Hollanders, would in fact render them more formidable. Had not these discerning navigators been excluded from a port, upon which the whole success of their naval enterprizes depended, there is reason to believe that they would have contented themselves with the large commerce they carried on in the European seas, without thinking of sailing to remoter climates. But as it was impossible to preserve their trade without the productions of the east, they were forced to go beyond a sphere which was, perhaps, too confined for a situation like theirs; and resolved to seek their riches at the fountain-head.

The first  
 voyages of  
 the Hol-  
 landers to  
 India.

It appeared to be the best plan to fit out ships, and send them to India: but the Hollanders wanted pilots who were acquainted with the seas, and factors who understood the commerce of Asia. They were alarmed at the danger of making long voyages, where the enemy was master of the coasts, and of having their vessels intercepted during a passage of six thousand leagues. It was judged more adviseable to attempt the discovery of a passage to China and Japan through the northern seas, which would be shorter as well as more wholesome and secure. The English had made the attempt in vain: and the Hollanders renewed it with no better success.

WHILE they were engaged in this enterprize, Cornelius Houtman, a merchant of that nation, a man of a penetrating and daring genius, being detained at Lisbon for debt, gave the merchants at Amsterdam to understand, that if they would procure his enlargement, he would communicate to them many discoveries he had made, which might turn to their advantage. He had  
 in

in fact informed himself of every particular relating to the passage to India, and the manner of carrying on trade in those parts. His proposals were accepted, and his debts discharged. The information he gave proving answerable to the expectations he had raised, those who had released him from his confinement, formed an association under the name of the Company of distant Countries, and gave him the command of four vessels to conduct them to India by the Cape of Good Hope.

THE principal object of this voyage was to observe the coasts, the inhabitants, and the trade of different places, avoiding, as much as possible, the Portuguese settlements. Houtman reconnoitred the coasts of Africa and Brazil; made some stay at Madagascar, touched at the Maldives, and visited the islands of Sunda: where finding the country abounding in pepper, he bought a quantity of it, together with some others of the most valuable spices. His prudence procured him an alliance with the principal sovereign of Java; but the Portuguese, notwithstanding they were hated, and had no settlement upon the island, created him some enemies. Having got the better in some skirmishes he was unavoidably engaged in, he returned with his small squadron to Holland; where, though he brought little wealth, he raised much expectation. He brought away some negroes, Chinese, and inhabitants of Malabar, a young native of Malacca, a Japanese, and Abdul a pilot of the Guzurat, a man of great abilities, and perfectly well acquainted with the coast of India.

THE account given by Houtman, and the discoveries made in the course of the voyage, encouraged the merchants of Amsterdam to form the plan of a settlement at Java, which, at the same time that it would throw the trade of pepper into their hands, place them near the islands that produce more valuable spices, and facilitate

B O O K  
 II.  
 {

their communication with China and Japan, would fix them at a distance from the centre of that European power, which they had the most reason to dread in India. Admiral Van Neck, who was sent upon this important expedition with eight vessels, arrived at the island of Java, where he found the inhabitants prejudiced against his nation. They fought and negotiated by turns. Abdul the pilot, the Chinese, and above all the hatred that prevailed against the Portuguese, proved of service to the Dutch. They were permitted to trade, and, in a short time, fitted out four vessels laden with spices and some linens. The admiral, with the rest of his fleet, sailed to the Moluccas, where he learnt that the natives of the country had forced the Portuguese to abandon some places, and that they only waited for a favourable opportunity of expelling them from the rest. He established factories in several of these islands, entered into treaty with some of the sovereigns, and returned to Europe laden with riches.

It is impossible to describe the joy that prevailed at his return. The success of his voyage raised a fresh emulation. Societies were formed in most of the maritime and trading towns in the Low Countries. These associations soon became so numerous, that they injured each other : as the rage of purchasing raised the value of commodities to an exorbitant degree in India, and the necessity of selling them made them bear a low price in Europe. They were on the point of being ruined by their own efforts, and by the want of power in each of them to resist a formidable enemy, fully bent upon their destruction : when the government, which is sometimes wiser than individuals, opportunely stepped in to their assistance.

Establish-  
 ment of the  
 India com-  
 pany.

IN 1602 the states general united these different so-  
 cieties into one body, to which they gave the name of  
 East

East India company. It was invested with authority to make peace or war with the eastern princes, to erect forts, chuse their own governors, maintain garrisons, and to nominate officers for the conduct of the police, and the administration of justice.

BOOK  
II.

THIS company, which had no parallel in antiquity, and was the pattern of all succeeding societies of the same kind, set out with great advantages. The private associations which had been previously formed proved of service to it by their misfortunes, and even by their mistakes. The great number of vessels which they fitted out had contributed to make all the branches of trade perfectly understood; to form many officers and seamen; and to encourage citizens of repute to undertake these foreign expeditions; persons only of no estimation or fortune having been exposed in the first voyages.

So many united assistances could not fail of being improved to advantage, when prosecuted with vigour; and, accordingly, the new company soon acquired a considerable degree of power. It was a new state, erected within the state itself, which enriched it, and increased its strength abroad; but might, in time, weaken the influence of the democratical principle, which inspires the love of equality and parsimony, of the laws, and of one's own countrymen.

SOON after its establishment, the company fitted out for India fourteen ships and some yachts, under the command of Admiral Warwick, whom the Hollanders look upon as the founder of their commerce, and of their powerful colonies in the east. He built a factory in the island of Java, and secured it by fortifications; he likewise built another in the territories of the king of Johor; and formed alliances with several princes in Bengal. He had frequent engagements with the Portuguese, in which he had almost always the advantage. In



**B O O K**  
**II.**

those parts where the Portuguese had appeared in the character of merchants only, he found it necessary to remove the prejudices they had raised against his countrymen, whom they had represented as a set of banditti, avowed enemies to all regal authority, and addicted to all manner of vices. The behaviour of the Hollanders and the Portuguese soon convinced the people of Asia which of these nations had the advantage in point of manners. A bloody war soon ensued between these two powers.

Wars of  
 the Hol-  
 landers  
 and Portu-  
 guese.

THE Portuguese had on their side the advantage of a thorough knowledge of these seas ; they were accustomed to the climate, and had the assistance of several nations, which, though they hated them, were compelled through fear to fight for their oppressors. The Hollanders were animated by the critical situation of their affairs ; by the hopes of procuring an absolute and lasting independency, which at present they could not boast of ; by the ambition of establishing a vast commerce upon the ruins of that of their old masters ; and by the hatred which a difference in religious opinions had rendered implacable. These passions, at the same time that they inspired all the activity, strength, and perseverance necessary for the execution of great designs, did not hinder them from taking their measures with precaution. Their humanity and honesty attached the people to their cause ; and many of them soon declared against their ancient oppressors.

THE Hollanders were continually sending over fresh colonists, ships and troops, while the Portuguese were left without any forces but their own. Spain did not send them any fleets of merchant men, or grant them the protection of the squadron which had hitherto been kept in India ; she neither repaired their places of strength, or renewed their garrisons. It should seem that

that she wanted to humble her new subjects whom she thought not so submissive as might be wished, and to perpetuate her authority by exposing them to repeated losses. She proceeded still further; and to prevent the Portuguese from deriving any succours from home, seized upon the inhabitants and sent them to Italy, Flanders, and other countries where she was at war.

NOTWITHSTANDING this, the scale continued even for a long time, and the success was various on both sides. Nor is this at all surprizing. The Portuguese, on their arrival in India, had nothing to encounter at sea but a few weak vessels, ill built, ill armed and ill defended; nothing by land but effeminate men, voluptuous princes and dastardly slaves: whereas those who came to wrest the sceptre of Asia out of their hands, had vessels to board of the same construction as their own; regular fortresses to assault, and to conquer and subdue Europeans, grown haughty by a long series of victories, and by being the founders of an immense empire.

THE time was now come, when the Portuguese were to expiate their perfidy, their robberies and their cruelties: and the prediction of one of the kings of Persia was fulfilled, who asking an ambassador just arrived at Goa, how many governors his master had beheaded since the establishment of his power in India, received for answer, *None at all. So much the worse,* replied the monarch, *his authority cannot be of long duration in a country where so many acts of outrage and barbarity are committed.*

It does not, however, appear, in the course of this war, that the Hollanders possessed that daring rashness, that unshaken intrepidity, which had marked the enterprises of the Portuguese; but there was a consistency and unremitting perseverance observable in all their designs.

B O O K  
II.

*figm.* Often repulsed, but never discouraged, they renewed their attempts with fresh vigour and on a better plan. They never exposed themselves to the danger of a total defeat. If, in any engagement, their ships had suffered, they thiered off; and as they never lost sight of their commercial interests, the vanquished fleet, while it was repairing on the coasts belonging to some of the Indian princes, purchased merchandise, and returned to Holland. By this method the company acquired a new fund which enabled them to undertake fresh enterprizes. If the Hollanders did not always perform great actions, they never attempted useless ones. They had neither the pride nor the vain glory of the Portuguese, who had frequently engaged in war rather perhaps through the love of fame than of power. The Hollanders steadily pursued their first plan without suffering themselves to be diverted from it either by motives of revenge, or projects of conquest.

In the year 1607, they endeavoured to open a communication with the ports belonging to the vast empire of China, which, at that time, was cautious of admitting strangers. The Portuguese found means, by bribery, and the intrigues of their missionaries, to get the Hollanders excluded. They resolved to extort by force what they could not obtain by intreaty, and determined to intercept the vessels belonging to the Chinese. This piratical proceeding did not answer their expectations. A Portuguese fleet sailed from Macao to attack the pirates who thought proper to retire. The inequality of their numbers, the impossibility of refitting in seas where they had no shelter, and the fear of committing the character of their nation in the eyes of a great empire whose good opinion it was their interest to preserve; all these considerations determined them to decline the encounter: but this was only for a short time.

SOME

BOOK  
II.

SOME years after the Hollanders besieged a place of which they had learned the importance. The enterprize did not succeed; but as they never lost any advantage that could be gained by their armaments, they sent that which they had employed against Macao to form a colony in the Piscadore-isses. These are rocks where no water is to be had in dry seasons, and no provisions at any time. These inconveniences were not counterbalanced by any solid advantages, because the people of the neighbouring continent were forbidden, on the severest penalties, to hold any correspondence with strangers which might be dangerous so near the coasts. The Hollanders had determined to abandon a settlement which they despaired of making useful, when, in the year 1624, they were invited to fix at Formosa, and had assurances given them that the Chinese merchants would be allowed full liberty to go there and trade with them.

THIS island, though it lies opposite to the province of Fokien, at the distance of only thirty leagues from the coast, was not subject to the dominion of the Chinese, whose genius does not incline them to conquest, and who, through an inhuman and ill-judged policy, would rather suffer a decrease of population, than transplant their supernumerary subjects to the neighbouring countries. Formosa was found to be a hundred and thirty or forty leagues in circumference. Its inhabitants, if we may judge from their manners and their appearance, seemed to be descended from the Tartars in the most northern part of Asia: and probably found their way through the country of Corea. They lived chiefly by fishing and hunting, and went almost naked.

The Hollanders form a settlement at Formosa.

THE Hollanders, having, without difficulty informed themselves of every particular that prudence suggested, thought it most adviseable to fix their settlement on a

**B O O K**  
**II.**

small island that lay contiguous to the larger one. This situation afforded them three considerable advantages ; they could easily defend themselves if hatred or jealousy should incline their neighbours to give them any disturbance ; the two islands afforded them an harbour, and they could easily carry on a safe communication with China during the Monsoons ; which they could not have done in any other position they could have pitched upon.

THE new colony insensibly gained strength without attracting any notice, 'till it rose at once to a degree of consequence that astonished all Asia. This unexpected prosperity was owing to the conquest of China by the Tartars. Thus it is that torrents enrich the vallies with the stores they carry down from the desolated mountains. Above a hundred thousand Chinese, who resolved not to submit to the conqueror, fled for refuge to Formosa. They carried with them that activity which is peculiar to their character, the manner of cultivating rice and sugar, and were the means of drawing thither from their own nation an infinite number of vessels. In a short time the island became the centre of all the correspondence that was carried on between Java, Siam, the Philippine islands, China, Japan and the rest of those countries ; and in a few years was considered as the first mart in India. The Hollanders flattered themselves with the prospect of still greater advantages ; but fortune deceived their expectations.

A CHINESE, called Equam, of obscure birth, whose turbulent disposition had made him turn pirate, had attained, by the strength of his talents, to the rank of high-admiral. He defended his country against the Tartars for a considerable time, but seeing his master obliged to submit, he endeavoured to make terms for himself

himself with the conquerors. He was decoyed to Pekin where he was seized, and condemned by the usurper to perpetual imprisonment, in which he is supposed to have died of poison. Coxinga saved himself on board his father's fleet, vowed eternal enmity to the oppressors of his family and country, and concluded he should be able to take the severest revenge upon them, if he made himself master of Formosa. He made a descent upon it, and the minister Hambroeck was taken prisoner in the attempt.

BEING appointed with some other prisoners to be sent to the fort of Zealand, to prevail with his countrymen to capitulate, this republican called to mind the example of Regulus ; he exhorted them to be firm, and used every argument to persuade them that if they strenuously persevered, they would oblige the enemy to retire. The garrison being aware that this generous man would, on his return to the camp, fall a sacrifice to his magnanimity, used their utmost efforts to detain him. Their remonstrances were seconded by the tenderest solicitations of two of his daughters, who were in the citadel. His answer was, *I have pledged my honour to return to my confinement : I hold myself obliged to perform my promise. My memory shall never be sullied with the reproach, that out of regard to my own safety I was the cause of severer treatment, or perhaps of death, to the companions of my misfortune.* After this heroic speech he calmly returned to the Chinese camp, and the siege began.

NOTWITHSTANDING the fortifications were in a bad condition, and the fort ill stored with ammunition and provisions ; notwithstanding the garrison was weak, and the succours sent to attack the enemy had retreated with disgrace, Coyet the governor made an obstinate defence. In the beginning of the year 1662, being forced

B O O K  
II.

forced to capitulate, he repaired to Batavia, where his superiors had recourse to those iniquitous state-intrigues which are frequently practised in all governments. They cast reflections upon his conduct, to prevent any suspicion that the loss of so important a settlement was owing to their own folly, or negligence. The attempts made to recover it, proved unsuccessful; and the Hollanders were at last reduced to the necessity of carrying on a trade with Canton on the same conditions, and under the same restrictions as other nations.

It may appear somewhat singular, that since the year 1683 when Formosa fell under the dominion of China, no Europeans have ever attempted to form any settlement there, upon the same conditions at least, as that of the Portuguese at Macao. But besides that the suspicious temper of the nation to whom that island belongs, gives no room to expect such a piece of complaisance from them, one may venture to pronounce that such an enterprise would be a bad one. Formosa was a place of importance only so long as the Japanese had a communication with it; and its produce was allowed a free importation into Japan.

THE Hollanders seemed to be for ever excluded from this empire. After some unsuccessful attempts, they began to despair of getting any footing there; when one of their captains, who was thrown upon the coasts of Japan by a storm in 1609, informed them that the people were favourably disposed towards them.

Trade of  
the Hol-  
landers to  
Japan.

ABOUT a century before this, the government of Japan had been changed. A magnanimous people had been made furious by a tyrant. Taycosama who from a soldier became a general, and from a general an emperor, had usurped the whole power, and abolished all the rights of the people. Having stripped the Dairo of the

the little remains of his authority, he had reduced all the petty princes of the country under his subjection. Tyranny is arrived at its height when it establishes despotism by law. Taycosama went still further, and strengthened it by sanguinary laws. His civil legislation was actually a code of criminal prosecutions, exhibiting nothing but scaffolds, punishments, criminals, and executioners.

THE Japanese, alarmed at this prospect of slavery, had recourse to arms. Torrents of blood were shed throughout the empire : and though liberty might be supposed to be superior in courage to tyranny, the latter triumphed over it. Tyranny became still more ferocious, when animated by the spirit of revenge. An inquisition, public as well as private, dismayed the citizens ; they became spies, informers, accusers, and enemies to each other. An error in the administration of the police was construed into a crime against the state ; and an unguarded expression was made high-treason. Persecution assumed the character of legislation. Three successive generations were doomed to welter in their own blood ; and rebel parents gave life to a proscribed posterity.

DURING a whole century, Japan resembled a dungeon filled with criminals, or a place of execution. The throne, which was planted upon the ruins of the altar, was surrounded with gibbets. The subjects were become as cruel as their tyrant. They fought, with a strange avidity, to procure death, by committing crimes which were readily suggested under a despotic government. For want of executioners, they punished themselves for the loss of liberty, or revenged themselves of tyranny by putting an end to their own existence. To enable them to face death, and to assist them in suffering it, they derived new courage from christianity, which the Portuguese had introduced amongst them.

THE



B O O K  
II.

THE oppressions the Japanese laboured under afforded an opportunity for the professors of this new worship to make numerous proselytes. The missionaries who preached a suffering religion, were listened to with attention. In vain did the doctrine of Confucious try to gain reception among a people who bordered upon China. Some erroneous tenets of christianity, which bore a considerable affinity to those of the Budzoists, and the penances, equally enjoined by the two systems, procured the Portuguese missionaries several proselytes. But setting aside this resemblance, the Japanese would have chosen to embrace christianity merely from a motive of hatred to the prince.

IF the new religion was discountenanced at court, it could not fail to meet with a favourable reception in the families of the dethroned princes. It added fresh fuel to their resentment: they were fond of a strange God whom the tyrant did not love. Taycosama ruled with a rod of iron, and persecuted the christians as enemies to the state. He proscribed the doctrines imported from Europe, and this proscription made them strike the deeper root. Piles were kindled, and millions of victims threw themselves into the flames. The emperors of Japan transcended those of Rome in the art of persecuting the christians. During the space of forty years the scaffolds were stained with the innocent blood of martyrs. This proved the seed of christianity, and of sedition also. Near forty thousand christians in the kingdom or province of Darima took up arms in the name, and for the name of Christ; and defended themselves with such fury, that not a single person survived the slaughter occasioned by persecution.

THE navigation, trade, and factories of the Portuguese were preserved during this great crisis. The  
court

court and the people had, however, for a long time, been jealous of them ; they had incurred the suspicion of government by their ambition, their intrigues, and perhaps by their secret conspiracies : and had rendered themselves odious to the people by their avarice, their pride, and their treachery. But as the merchandise they brought was grown into fashion, and could not be procured by any other channel, they were not excluded from Japan till the end of the year 1638 ; when other merchants were in a situation to supply their place.

THE Hollanders, who had, for some time, entered into competition with them, were not involved in the disgrace. As these republicans had never shewn themselves ambitious of interfering with the government ; as they had suffered their artillery to be employed against the christians ; as they were at war with the proscribed nation ; as their strength was not thoroughly known, and they appeared to be reserved, pliant, modest, and intirely devoted to commerce ; they were tolerated, though at the same time they were subjected to great restraints. Three years after, whether it was that the spirit of intrigue and dominion seized them, or, which is more probable, that no conduct whatever could prevent the Japanese from harbouring suspicions, they were deprived of the liberty and the privileges they enjoyed.

EVER since the year 1641, they have been confined to the artificial island of Disnia, raised in the harbour of Nangasaque, and which has a communication with the city bridge. As soon as they arrive, their ships are stripped, and their powder, muskets, swords, guns, and even rudder, carried ashore. In this kind of imprisonment they are treated with a degree of contempt which is beyond conception ; and can transact no business but with commissaries appointed to regulate the price

B O O K  
II.

price and the quantity of their merchandize. It is impossible that the tameness with which they have endured this treatment more than a century, should not have lessened them in the eyes of the nation, who is witness of it; and that the love of gain should have produced such an extreme insensibility to insults, without tarnishing their character.

THE chief commodities which the Dutch carry to Japan are European cloths, silks, spices, printed linens, sugar, and dyer's wood. These articles were formerly of considerable importance. In the very year of the company's disgrace, its returns amounted to sixteen millions: (700,000*l*.) but the shackles, which from time to time have been imposed upon it, have gradually reduced their once flourishing trade to nothing. The cargo of the two vessels they send annually, cannot be sold for more than a million. (43,750*l*.) They receive in payment eleven thousand chests of copper, at forty-one livres four sols (1*l*. 16*s*. 04.  $\frac{1}{2}$ .) per chest, which weighs one hundred and twenty pounds. Their expences, including presents and the charge of the embassy they send every year to the emperor, generally amount to two hundred and eighty thousand livres, (12,250*l*.) and their profits do not exceed three hundred and ten thousand; (about 131,687*l*.) so that if the company gains forty thousand livres, (1,750*l*.) it is reckoned a good year.

THE trade of the Chinese, who, except the Hollanders, are the only foreigners admitted into the empire, is not more extensive than theirs, and subjected to the same restrictions. Ever since the year 1688 they are confined during the continuance of the sale of their goods, without the walls of Nangasacke, in a kind of prison, which is divided into several huts, surrounded with

with a palisade, and defended by a good ditch, and a guard placed at all the gates. These precautions have been taken in consequence of a discovery that some works, in favour of christianity, had been sold together with some books of philosophy and morality. The European missionaries had ordered some people of Canon to circulate them, and the desire of gain betrayed them into a piece of chicanery, which has cost them very dear.

**B O O K**  
**II.**

It is natural to suppose, that those who have changed the ancient government of the country into the most arbitrary tyranny upon earth, would look upon all intercourse with strangers as dangerous to their authority. There is the more reason for this conjecture, as the inhabitants are all forbidden, on pain of death, to go out of their country. This rigorous edict is become the fundamental maxim of the empire.

Thus the inhuman policy of the state has deprived it of the only means of acquiring a milder temper, by softening the national character. The Japanese, fiery as his climate, and restless as the ocean that surrounds him, required that the utmost scope should be given to his activity, which could only be done by encouraging a brisk trade. To prevent the necessity of restraining him by punishments, it was necessary to keep him in exercise by constant labour; and to allow his vivacity an uninterrupted career abroad, when it was in danger of kindling the flame of sedition at home. That energy of mind which has degenerated into fanaticism, would have been improved into industry; contemplation would have changed into action; and the fear of punishment into the love of pleasure. Instead of leading a detested life, fettered, abused, and maddened by a constant struggle with the severe restraints of law, the

**B O O K**  
**II.**

the Japanese would have been led by curiosity to traverse the ocean, and visit foreign nations. By a frequent change of place and climate he would insensibly have changed his manners, opinions, and character; and this change would have been as happy for him as it is for the generality of people. What he may chance to lose by this intercourse as a citizen, he will gain as a man: but the Japanese are become tygers through the cruelty of their tyrants.

WHATEVER may be said in praise of the Spartans, the Egyptians, and other distinct nations, who have owed their superior strength, grandeur, and permanency to the state of separation in which they kept themselves; human kind has received no benefit from these singular institutions. On the contrary, the spirit of intercourse is useful to all nations, as it promotes a mutual communication of their productions and knowledge. In a word, if it were useless or pernicious to some particular people, it was necessary for the Japanese. By commerce they would have become enlightened in China, civilized in India, and cured of all their prejudices among the Europeans.

The Moluccas submit to the Dutch.

THE Dutch had the good fortune to have resources which indemnified them for the loss they had sustained at Japan. They had not yet entertained in commerce with these, the most remarkable islands in the torrid Zone, when they attempted to secure to themselves that of the Moluccas. The Portuguese, who had long been in possession of them, were obliged to share their advantages with their masters the Spaniards; and, at length, to give up the trade almost entirely to them. The two nations, divided in their interests, and perpetually at war with each other, because the government had neither leisure nor art to remove their mutual antipathy, united to oppose the subject of the  
United

United Provinces. The latter, assisted by the natives of the country, who had not yet learned to fear or hate them, by degrees gained the superiority. The ancient conquerors were driven, out about the year 1627; and their place was supplied by others equally avaritious, though less turbulent, and better instructed.

As soon as the Dutch had established themselves firmly at the Moluccas, they endeavoured to get the exclusive trade of spices into their own hands: an advantage, which the nation they had just expelled was never able to procure. They skilfully availed themselves both of the forts they had taken sword in hand, and those they had imprudently been suffered to erect, to draw the kings of Ternate and Tidore, who were masters of this Archipelago, into their scheme. These princes found themselves obliged to consent, that the clove and nutmeg trees should be rooted up in the islands that were still under their dominion. The first of these sceptered slaves, in consideration of this great sacrifice, received a pension of 64,500 livres (about 2,821*l*.); and the other one of about 12,000. (525*l*.) A garrison of seven hundred men was appointed to secure the performance of this treaty: and to so low an ebb was the power of these kings reduced by war, tyranny, and misfortunes, that these forces would be more than sufficient to keep them in this state of dependance, if it were not necessary to have an eye upon the Philippine islands, whose vicinity constantly occasions some alarm. Notwithstanding the inhabitants are prohibited from carrying on any navigation, and that no foreign nation is admitted among them; the Dutch trade there is in a languishing state; as they have no means of exchange, nor any silver but what they carry over to pay their troops, their commissioners and pensions. This government, deducting the small

**B O O K**  
**II.**

profits, costs the company 140,000 livres (6125*l.*) a year.

THIS loss is fully compensated at Amboyna, where they have engrossed the cultivation of cloves. The tree that produces them is, as to its bark, very much like the olive-tree, and resembles the laurel in its height and the shape of its leaves. It produces at the extremity of its numerous branches, a prodigious quantity of flowers, which are white at first, then green, and at last grow red and pretty hard. When they arrive at this degree of maturity, they are, properly speaking, cloves. As it dries, the clove assumes a dark yellowish cast; when gathered, it becomes of a deep brown. No verdure is ever seen under this plant, which is doubtless owing to its exhausting all the nutritious juices of the soil that produces it.

THE season for gathering the cloves is from October to February. They shake the boughs of the tree forcibly, or beat down the cloves with long reeds. Large cloths are spread to receive them, and they are afterwards either dried in the sun, or in the smoke of the bamboo cane.

THE cloves which escape the notice of those who gather them, or are purposely left upon the tree, continue to grow till they are about an inch in thickness, and these falling off, produce new plants, which do not bear in less than eight or nine years. These cloves, which they call mother-cloves, though inferior to the common sort, are not without their value. The Dutch preserve them in sugar, and, in long voyages, eat them after meals to promote digestion; or make use of them as an agreeable remedy for the scurvy.

THE clove, to be in perfection, must be full sized, heavy, oily and easily broken; of a fine smell, and a hot aromatic taste, so as almost to burn the throat; it should

should make the fingers smart when handled, and leave an oily moisture upon them when pressed. The principal use of is for culinary purposes. In some parts of Europe, and in India in particular, it is so much admired as to be thought an indispensable ingredient in almost every dish. It is put into their food, liquors, wines, and enters likewise into the composition of perfumes. It is little used in medicine; but there is an oil extracted from it which is in considerable repute.

THE company have allotted the inhabitants four thousand parcels of land, on each of which they were at first allowed, and about the year 1720 compelled, to plant a hundred and twenty-five trees, amounting in the whole to five hundred thousand. Each of these parcels produces annually, on an average, upwards of two pounds of cloves: and consequently the collective produce must weigh more than a million.

THE cultivator is paid with the cash that is constantly returned to the company, and receives some blue and unbleached cottons which are brought from Coromandel. This small trade might, in some measure, be increased, if the inhabitants of Amboyna, and the small islands that depend upon it, would have attended to the culture of pepper and indigo, which has been tried with success. Miserable as these islanders are, as they are not tempted by an adequate reward for their labours, they remain in a state of indolence.

THE administration is somewhat different in the islands of Banda, which are thirty leagues distant from Amboyna. There are five of these islands, two of which are uncultivated and almost uninhabited; and the other three claim the distinction of being the only islands in the world that produce the nutmeg.

THE nutmeg grows to the same height as the pear-tree. It has a pithy wood, an ash-coloured bark, and



B O O K  
II.

flexible branches. The leaves are produced in pairs upon one single stem, and when bruised, emit an agreeable odour. The fruit succeeds the flowers, which resemble those of the cherry-tree. It is of the size of an egg, and of the colour of an apricot. The outer rind is very thick, and resembles that of our nuts as they hang upon the tree, opening in the same manner when ripe, and discovering the nutmeg covered with its mace. It is then time to gather it to prevent the mace or flower of the nutmeg from growing dry, and the nutmeg from losing that oil which preserves it, and in which its excellence consists. Those that are gathered before they are perfectly ripe are preserved in vinegar or sugar and are admired only in Asia.

It is nine months before this fruit comes to perfection. After it is gathered, the outer rind is stripped off, and the mace separated from it, and laid in the sun to dry. The nuts require more preparation. They are spread upon hurdles, or dried for six weeks by a slow fire, in sheds erected for that purpose. They are then separated from the shell, and thrown into lime-water, which is a necessary precaution to preserve them from worms.

THE nutmeg differs in goodness according to the age of the tree, the soil, the exposition, and method of culture. It is most esteemed when it is fresh, moist, heavy, and when it yields an oily juice upon being pricked. It helps digestion, expels wind, and strengthens the bowels.

If we except this valuable spice, the islands of Banda, like all the Moluccas, are barren to a dreadful degree. What they produce in superfluities they want in necessities. The land will not bring forth any kind of corn: and the pith of sago serves the natives of the country instead of bread.

As this food is not sufficient for the Europeans who settle in the Moluccas, they are allowed to fetch provisions from Java, Macassar, or the extremely fertile island of Bali. The company itself carries some commodities to Banda. BOOK  
II.

THIS is the only settlement in the East Indies that can be considered as an European colony ; because it is the only one where the Europeans are proprietors of lands. The company taking it into their heads that the inhabitants of Banda were savage, cruel, and treacherous, because they were impatient under their yoke, resolved to exterminate them. Their possessions were divided among the white people, who got slaves from some of the neighbouring islands to cultivate the lands. These white people are for the most part Creoles or Malecontents, who have quitted the service of the company. In the small isle of Rosising, there are likewise several banditti, whom the laws have branded with disgrace, and young men of abandoned principles, whose families wanted to get rid of them : so that Banda is called *the island of correction*. The climate is so unhealthy, that these unhappy wretches live but a short time. It is on account of the loss of so great a number of hands, that attempts have been made to transfer the culture of the nutmeg to Amboyna, and the company were likewise probably influenced by two other strong motives of interest, as their trade could be carried on with less expence and greater safety. But the experiments that have been made have proved unsuccessful, and matters remain in their former state.

TO secure to themselves an exclusive title to the produce of the Moluccas, which are, with good reason, stiled the *gold mines* of the company, the Dutch have been under a necessity of forming two settlements, one at Timor, and the other at Celebes.

**B O O K**  
**II.**

The Dutch  
form a set-  
tlement at  
Timor.

THE first of these islands is sixty leagues long, and fifteen or eighteen broad. It is divided into several sovereignties; in which there are numbers of Portuguese. These conquerors, who at their first arrival in India, had advanced with bold and unconscionable strides, and had pursued a long and dangerous career with a rapidity which nothing could stop; who were so well accustomed to acts of heroism, that they performed the most arduous enterprizes with ease; these conquerors, I say, when they were attacked by the Dutch, when their whole empire, grown too large, and tottering under its own weight, was ready to fall, displayed none of those virtues which had laid the foundation of their power. When they were dispossessed of a fort, driven out of a kingdom, dispersed in consequence of a defeat, they should have sought an asylum among their brethren, and should have rallied under standards that had hitherto been invincible; either to put a stop to the progress of the enemy, or to recover their settlements: but so far were they from forming a resolution so generous, that they solicited some employment, or some pension, from those very Indian princes they had so often insulted. Those who had contracted a habit of effeminacy and idleness above the rest, retreated to Timor, which, being a poor island, where no works of industry were carried on, would screen them they thought from the pursuit of an enemy intent upon useful conquests. They were, however, deceived. In the year 1613 they were driven from the town of Kupan by the Dutch, who found a fort there, which they have ever since garrisoned with fifty men. The company sends some coarse linens to them every year, and receives in return wax, tortoise shell, sanders wood, and cadiang, a small species of bean, commonly used by the Dutch on shipboard,

by

by way of variety of food for the crew. All these objects employ one or two sloops, which are dispatched from Batavia : nothing is either gained or lost by this settlement; the profits just answer the expences. The Dutch would have abandoned Timor long ago, if they had not been apprehensive that some active nation might fix there, and avail themselves of the opportunities that situation would give them to disturb the trade of the Moluccas. It was the same cautious principle which drew them to Celebes.

THIS island, which is about a hundred and thirty leagues in diameter, is very habitable, though it lies in the centre of the torrid Zone. The heats are allayed by the copious rains, and cooling breezes. The inhabitants are the bravest people in the south of Asia; they make a furious onset, but, after a contest of two hours, a total want of courage takes place of this strange impetuosity: the intoxicating fumes of opium, which are doubtless the cause of this terrible ferment, go off, when their strength is exhausted by transports that approach to madness. The *crid*, which is their favourite weapon, is a foot and a half long; it is shaped like a poniard, and the blade is serpentine. They never carry more than one to battle; but in private quarrels two are necessary: they parry with that in the left hand, and attack the adversary with the other. The wounds made by this weapon are very dangerous, and the duel most commonly ends in the death of both the combatants.

THE inhabitants of Celebes are rendered active, industrious, and robust, by a rigid education. Every hour in the day their nurses rub them with oil, or water just warm. These repeated unctions encourage nature to exert herself freely. They are weaned at a year old, an idea prevailing, that if they continued to suck any longer, it would hurt their understandings. When they

**B O O K**  
**II.**

are five or six years old, the male children of any distinction are intrusted to the care of some relation or friend, that their courage may not be weakened by the caresses of their mothers, and a habit of reciprocal tenderness. They do not return to their families till they arrive at the age of fifteen or sixteen, when the law allows them to marry: a liberty they seldom make use of, before they are thoroughly versed in the exercise of arms.

FORMERLY these people acknowledged no other gods but the sun and the moon. They sacrificed to them in the public squares, having no materials which they thought valuable enough to be employed in raising temples. According to the creed of these islanders, the sun and moon were eternal as well as the heavens, whose empire they divided. Ambition set them at variance. The moon, flying from the sun, miscarried; and was delivered of the earth; she was big with several other worlds which she will successively bring forth, but without violence, in order to repair the loss of those whom the fire of her conqueror will consume.

THESE absurdities were universally received at Celebes; but they had not so lasting an influence over either the nobles or the people as is found in the religious doctrines of other nations. About two centuries ago, some christians and mahometans having brought their opinions hither, the principal king of the country took a total dislike to the national worship. Alarmed at the terrible catastrophe, with which he was equally threatened by both the new systems of religion, he convened a general assembly. On the day appointed he ascended an eminence; where spreading out his hands towards heaven, and, in a standing posture, he addressed the following prayer to the Supreme Being.

“ GREAT

" GREAT God, I do not, at this time, fall down be-  
 " fore thee, because I do not implore thy clemency.  
 " I have nothing to ask of thee which thou oughtest  
 " not in justice to grant. Two foreign nations whose  
 " worship is widely different, are come to strike terror  
 " into me, and my subjects. They assure me that  
 " thou wilt punish me eternally if I do not obey thy  
 " laws: I have therefore a right to require that thou  
 " wouldst make them known to me. I do not ask thee  
 " to reveal the impenetrable mysteries that surround  
 " thy essence, and which to me are useless. I am  
 " come hither to inquire, together with my people,  
 " what those duties are which thou intendest to pre-  
 " scribe to us. Speak, O my God; since thou art the  
 " Author of nature, thou canst discern the bottom of  
 " our hearts, and knowest that it is impossible they  
 " should entertain any thoughts of disobedience. But  
 " if thou condescendest not to make thyself understood  
 " by mortals; if it is unworthy of thine essence to em-  
 " ploy the language of man to dictate the duties re-  
 " quired of man; I call my whole nation, the sun  
 " which enlightens me, the earth that supports me,  
 " the waters that encompass my dominions, and thy-  
 " self to witness; that in the sincerity of my heart I  
 " seek to know thy will: and I declare to thee this day,  
 " that I shall acknowledge, as the depositaries of thy  
 " oracles, the ministers of either religion whom thou  
 " shalt cause to arrive the first in our harbours. The  
 " winds and the waves are the ministers of thy power:  
 " let them be the signals of thy will. If, with these  
 " honest intentions, I embrace an error, my conscience  
 " will be at ease; and the blame will lie upon thee."

THE assembly broke up, determined to wait the or-  
 ders of heaven, and to follow the first missionaries that  
 should arrive at Celebes. The apostles of the Koran  
 were

**B O O K** were the most active, and the sovereign and his people  
 II. were circumcised, and the other parts of the island soon followed their example.

THIS unlucky circumstance did not hinder the Portuguese from gaining a footing at Celebes. They kept their ground there, even after they were driven out of the Moluccas. The motive of their stay, and the arrival of the English at this place was because they could easily procure spices which the natives of the country found means to get, notwithstanding the precautions that were taken to keep them at a distance from the places where they grew.

THE Dutch, who by this competition, were prevented from monopolizing the articles of cloves and nutmegs, attempted in 1660 to put a stop to this trade which they called contraband. To favour this design, they had recourse to means repugnant to all morality, but which an insatiable avarice had familiarized in Asia. By persevering in these cruel maxims, they succeeded so far as to drive out the Portuguese, keep off the English, and take possession of the harbour and fort of Macassar. From that time they were absolute masters of the island without having conquered it. The princes among whom it was divided, re-united in a kind of confederacy. They hold assemblies, from time to time, on affairs that concern the general interest. The result of their determinations becomes a law to each state. When any contest arises, it is decided by the governor of the Dutch colony, who presides at this diet. He observes these different sovereigns with a watchful eye, and keeps them in perfect equality with each other to prevent any of them from aggrandizing himself to the prejudice of the company. They have disarmed them all, under pretence of hindering them from injuring each other; but in reality with a view of depriving them of the power of breaking their chains.

THE

THE Chinese, who are the only foreigners permitted to come to Celebes, carry thither tobacco, gold wire, and unwrought silks. The Dutch sell the opium, spirituous liquors, gum lac, fine and coarse linens. They have but little gold from thence, but great quantities of rice, wax, slaves, and tripam, a species of mushroom, which the rounder and blacker it is, the more excellent it is esteemed. The customs bring in 80,000 livres (3,500*l.*) to the company: but it receives much larger profit from its trade, and the tenth part of the territory which it holds in full right of sovereignty. These advantages, however, taken all together, do not counterbalance the expences of the colony, which rise to 150,000 livres (about 6,562*l.*) more. It would certainly be given up if it was not with good reason looked upon as the key of the spice islands.

THE settlement at Borneo was formed with a less interesting view. It is one of the largest if not actually the largest island hitherto known. The ancient inhabitants live in the inland parts. The coasts are peopled with inhabitants from Macassar, with Javanese, Malays, and Arabs, who to the vices that are natural to them have added a ferocity hardly to be met with elsewhere. The most useful production of this large country is camphire, which is a volatile, subtile oil, or resinous substance. The tree from which it is drawn, grows in several of the Asiatic islands, and it has lately been discovered that this singular substance may be obtained in a greater or less quantity from all the trees that are of the laurel tribe.

The Dutch open a communication with Borneo.

To procure this camphire, the tree is cut into small pieces, like matches, which are put into a vessel shaped like a bladder: they are boiled in water, and the camphire forms a glutinous mass at the top. The Dutch

are



**B O O K** are the only people in Europe who possess the secret of  
 II. refining it in the gross.

THE camphire from Borneo is unquestionably the best of any. Its superior excellence is so well known, that the Japanese give five or six quintals of their own for one pound of that from Borneo; and the Chinese who look upon it as the best medicine in the world, give us no less than eight hundred livres (35*l*.) a pound for it. The Pagans in all the eastern countries use common camphire in their fire-works, and the Mahometans put it into the mouth of the dead at the time of burial.

ABOUT the year 1526 the Portuguese attempted to settle at Borneo. Too weak to make their arms respected, they tried to gain the good-will of one of the sovereigns of the country by offering him some pieces of tapestry. This weak prince took the figures wrought in it for enchanted men, who would strangle him in the night-time, if he suffered them to come near his person. The explanations they gave to remove his apprehensions had no effect; he obstinately refused to let the present be brought into his palace, and prohibited the donor from entering his capital.

HOWEVER, these voyagers afterwards gained admission; but it proved their misfortune, for they were all massacred. A factory which the English established some years after shared the same fate. The Dutch, who had met with no better treatment, appeared again, in the year 1748, with a squadron, which, though very weak, so far imposed upon the prince, who has the pepper entirely in his hands, that he determined to grant them the privilege of trading for it exclusively: with this single reserve, that he should be allowed to deliver five hundred thousand pounds of this article to the Chinese; who had always frequented his ports. Since this treaty, the company sends rice, opium, salt, and

and coarse linens to Bendermassen, from whence they bring some diamonds, and about six hundred thousand weight of pepper at one and thirty livres (1*l.* 7*s.* 0*d.*  $\frac{3}{4}$ ) a hundred weight. The profits arising from the goods they export are scarce sufficient to answer the expences of the colony, though they amount to no more than 32,000 livres (1,400*l.*) Sumatra proves of greater advantage to them.

THOUGH this island, before the arrival of the Europeans in the Indies, was divided into several kingdoms, Achen was the center of all trade. Its harbour was frequented by all the Asiatic states, and afterwards by the Portuguese and other nations, who raised themselves upon their ruins. Here all the productions of the east were bartered for gold, pepper, and other articles of merchandize with which this more opulent than healthy climate abounded. The disturbances which threw this famous emporium into confusion, put a stop to all industry, and drove the foreign merchants away.

Settle-  
ments of  
the Dutch  
at Suma-  
tra.

WHEN this declension happened, the Dutch formed the project of making settlements in other parts of the island, which enjoyed more tranquillity. Those that were allowed to fix in the empire of Indrapore are much reduced, since the English established themselves on the same coast. The factory of Iamby is of still less use, as the neighbouring kings have stript the prince of this district of his possessions. The company makes itself amends for these misfortunes at Palinban, where for sixty thousand livres, (2,625*l.*) it maintains a fort, a garrison of eighty men, and two or three sloops, which keep cruising continually. It purchases annually two million weight of pepper, at one and twenty livres (18*s.* 4*d.*  $\frac{1}{2}$ ) a hundred, and a million and an half of calin at fifty-seven livres ten sols (2*l.* 10*s.* 3*d.*  $\frac{3}{4}$ ) a hundred. This, though it seems to be a moderate price, is of advantage

**B O O K**  
**II.**

vantage to the king, who buys it from his subjects at a still lower rate. Though he takes some part of the provision and clothing for his states from the merchants at Batavia, they are obliged to settle accounts with him in piastres. The treasures he has amassed of the silver, and of the gold found in his rivers, are known to be immense. A single European vessel might take possession of all these riches; and, with some troops for landing, maintain a post, which would be won without difficulty. It seems very extraordinary, that avarice should never have prompted any adventurer to undertake so lucrative and easy an enterprise.

CIVILIZED nations, who, to make themselves masters of the universe, have trampled upon all the rights, and stifled all the dictates of nature, will hardly shrink at one additional act of injustice or cruelty. There is not a nation in Europe which does not think it has a just right to seize the treasures of the east. Setting aside religion, which it is no longer fashionable to plead, since its very ministers have brought it into disrepute, by their unbounded avarice and ambition, how many pretences are still remaining to justify the rage of invasion? They who live under a monarchy are desirous of extending the glory and empire of their master beyond the seas. These happy people are ready to venture their lives in the extreme parts of the globe, to increase the number of fortunate subjects who live under the laws of the best of princes. A free nation, which is its own master, is born to command the ocean; it cannot secure the dominion of the sea, without seizing upon the land, which belongs to the first possessor; that is, to him who is able to drive out the ancient inhabitants: they are to be enslaved by force or fraud, and exterminated in order to get their possessions. Moreover, the interests of commerce, the national

tional debt, and the majesty of the people, require it. Republicans, who have happily shaken off the yoke of foreign tyranny, must impose it on others in their turn. If they have broken their chains, it is to forge new ones. They hate monarchy, but they are in want of slaves. They have no land of their own: why should they not seize upon those of others?

THE trade of the Dutch at Siam was at first very considerable. A tyrannic prince, who oppressed this unhappy country, having, about the year 1660, shewn a want of respect to the company, it punished him by abandoning the factories it had established in his dominions, as if it would have been a favour to have continued them. These republicans, who affected an air of grandeur, chose at that time to have their presence looked upon as a favour, a security, and an honour: and they inculcated this singular prejudice with so much success, that in order to engage them to return, a pompous embassy was sent, asking pardon for what had past, and giving the strongest assurances of a different conduct for the future.

Trade of  
the Dutch  
at Siam.

THERE was a time, however, when this deference was to cease, and it was hastened by the naval enterprises of other powers. The affairs of the company at Siam have always been in a declining state. Having no fort, it has never been in a condition to maintain the exclusive privilege it had obtained. The king, notwithstanding the presents he requires, sells merchandise to traders of all nations, and takes goods from them on advantageous terms: with this difference only, that they are obliged to stop at the mouth of the Menan, whereas the Dutch go up the river as far as the capital of the empire, where their agent constantly resides. Their affairs derive no great activity from this privilege. They send only one vessel laden with Javanese

**B O O K**  
**II.**

these horses, sugar, spices and linens, and receive in return calin, at 70 livres (3*l.* 1*s.* 3*d.*) a hundred weight; gum lac, at 52, (2*l.* 5*s.* 6*d.*) some elephants teeth, at five livres six sols (4*s.* 7*d.* $\frac{1}{2}$ ) a pound; and a little gold, at 175 livres 10 sols (7*l.* 13*s.* 1*d.* $\frac{1}{2}$ ) a mark. One may venture to assert, that their connections here are kept up purely on account of the sappan wood, which is necessary for the stowing of their ships; and for which they give no less than five livres (4*s.* 4*d.* $\frac{1}{2}$ ) a hundred weight. Were it not for this want, they would long ago have given up a trade where the expence exceeds the profits; because the king, who is the only merchant in his dominions, sets a very low price upon the commodities that are imported. A more interesting object turned the ambitious views of the Dutch towards Malacca.

Situation  
of the  
Dutch at  
Malacca.

THESE republicans, who knew the importance of this place, used their utmost efforts to make themselves masters of it. Having miscarried in two attempts, they had recourse at last, if we may believe a satirical writer, to an expedient, which a virtuous people will never employ; but which frequently answers the purpose of a degenerate nation. They endeavoured to bribe the Portuguese governor, whom they knew to be covetous. The bargain was struck, and he introduced the enemy into the city in 1641. The besiegers hastened to his house and massacred him to save the payment of the 500,000 livres (21,875) they had promised him. But truth obliges us to declare, for the honour of the Portuguese, that they did not surrender till after a most obstinate defence. The commander of the victorious party asked the commander of the other, in a boasting strain, which is not natural in his nation, when he would return? *When your crimes are greater than ours*, replied the Portuguese gravely.

THE

THE conquerors found a fort, which, like all the works of the Portuguese, was built with a degree of strength, which has never since been imitated by any nation. They found the climate very healthy, though hot and moist: but the trade there was entirely decayed; the continual exactions having deterred all nations from resorting thither. It has not been revived by the company, either on account of some insuperable difficulties, or the want of moderation, or the fear of injuring Batavia. The business is confined at present to the sale of a small quantity of opium, and a few blue linens, and to the purchase of elephants teeth, calin, which costs 70 livres (3*l.* 1*s.* 3*d.*) a hundred weight, and a small quantity of gold, at 180 livres (7*l.* 17*s.* 6*d.*) a mark. Their affairs would be carried on with more spirit and to a greater amount, if the princes adhered more faithfully to the exclusive treaty subsisting between them. Unfortunately for their interests, they have formed connections with the English, who furnish them with the commodities they want, at a cheaper rate, and give a greater price for their merchandise. Their farms and customs make them some little amends, bringing in 200,000 livres (8,750*l.*) a year. These revenues, however, and the advantages of commerce taken together, are not sufficient to maintain the garrison and people employed; which costs the company 40,000 livres. (1,750*l.*)

THIS might for a long time appear to be a small sacrifice. Before the Europeans doubled the Cape of Good Hope, the Moors, who were the only maritime people in India, sailed from Surat and Bengal to Malacca, where they found ships from the Molucca Islands, Japan, and China. When the Portuguese became masters of this place, they went themselves to Bantam for pepper, and to Ternate for spices. To make their re-

**B O O K**  
**II.**

turn the shorter, they attempted a passage by the Sunda islands, and succeeded. The Dutch who had got possession of Malacca and Batavia were masters of the two only straits that were then known. They cruised there in times of war, and intercepted the enemy's vessels. This situation has ceased to be respectable, since the strait of Bali was discovered by the French at the end of the war in 1744, and that of Lomboc, by the English, in the last war. Batavia will always continue to be the staple of an immense trade; but Malacca loses the only advantage that gave it any importance.

Settlement  
of the  
Dutch at  
Ceylon.

THOUGH the company did not foresee this event, yet at the same time that they were enlarging and strengthening their power in the eastern parts of Asia, they formed the project of securing to themselves that part of India, where the Portuguese continued to counteract their operations, and of taking from them the island of Ceylon. It is observable that this nation, so distinguished for the justness of its commercial views, endeavoured to get those productions into its hands, which were either absolutely necessary or nearly so, before it turned its attention to articles of luxury. It owes its grandeur in Asia to the spice trade, and in Europe to the herring fishery. The Moluccas supply it with nutmegs and cloves; and Ceylon furnishes it with cinnamon.

SPIILBERG, the first of their admirals who had the courage to display his colours on the coast of this delicious island, found the Portuguese employed in subverting the government and the religion of the country: in setting the sovereigns, among whom it was divided, to destroy each other; and in raising themselves upon the ruins of the states that were thus successively demolished. He offered the court of Candy the assistance of his country, which was joyfully accepted. *You may assure*  
*your*

*your masters, said the monarch, that if they will build a fort, myself, my wife, and children will be foremost in bringing you the necessary materials.* BOOK II.

THE people of Ceylon looked upon the Dutch in no other light than as the enemies of their oppressors, and joined them. By their united forces, the Portuguese were, in the year 1658, entirely dispossessed, after a long, bloody, and obstinate war. All their settlements fell into the hands of the company, who still keep possession of them, excepting a small district on the eastern coast, without any port, from whence the sovereign of the country had his salt; these settlements formed a regular string, extending from two to twelve leagues into the inland parts of the island.

THE fort of Jaffranapatan, as well as those erected on the islands of Manar and Calpentine, were destined to prevent all correspondence with the inhabitants of the neighbouring continent. At Negombo, designed to comprehend the district in which the best cinnamon is produced, there is an harbour large enough to admit sloops: but it is not frequented on account of a navigable river that leads from it to Columbo. This place, which the Portuguese had fortified with the greatest care, as the center of opulence, is become the principal station in the colony. It is not improbable, that, independent of the sums that had been expended upon it, the badness of its road might have determined the Dutch to fix the strength of their government at the promontory of Gallo, where there is an harbour: which, though the entrance is indeed difficult, and the basin very confined, has every other advantage that can be wished. It is here that the company take in their cargoes for Europe.

MATAR is the magazine for coffee and pepper, the culture of which has been introduced by the company.



B O O K

II.

It has no other fortification than a redoubt built upon a river that is only navigable for boats. Trinquimale is the finest and best harbour in the Indies. It is composed of several bays, where the most numerous fleets may anchor in security. No trade is carried on there. The country furnishes no one article of merchandise; and even provisions are very scarce: in short, it is protected by its barrenness. Other settlements of inferior note that are scattered upon the coast, serve to make the communication easy, and to keep off strangers.

By these wise precautions, the company have appropriated all the productions of the island. The several articles which constitute so many branches of trade are;

1. Amethysts, sapphires, topazes, and rubies, which are very small, and very indifferent. The Moors, who come from the coast of Coromandel, buy them, paying a moderate tax; and, when they are cut, sell them at a low price in the different countries of India.

2. PEPPER, which the company buy for eight sols a pound; coffee, for which they only pay four; and cardamom, which has no fixed price. The natives of the country are so indolent, that these productions, which are all of an inferior quality, will never turn to any great advantage.

3. A HUNDRED bales of handkerchiefs, pagnes and gingham, of a fine red colour, which are fabricated by the Malabars at Jaffranapatan, where they have long been settled.

4. A SMALL quantity of ivory, and about fifty elephants, which are carried to the coast of Coromandel. Thus this gentle and peaceful animal, which is too useful to mankind, to be suffered to remain upon an island, is transported to the continent, to aggravate and bear a part in the dangers and horrors of war.

5. ARECA,

5. **ARECA**, which the company buys at the rate of ten livres (8s. 9d.) the ammonan, and sells upon the spot at the rate of thirty-six or forty livres (about 1l. 13s.) to the merchants of Bengal, Coromandel, and the Maldives; who gave in return rice, coarse linens, and cowries. The areca, which grows upon a species of the palm-tree, is a fruit not uncommon in most parts of Asia, and is in great plenty at Ceylon. It is oval, and would not be much unlike the date, if its extremities were less pointed. The bark is thick, smooth, and membranaceous, and covers a kernel of a whitish cast, shaped like a pear, and of the bigness of a nutmeg. When eaten by itself, as it sometimes is by the Indians, it impoverishes the blood, and causes the jaundice. It is not attended with these inconveniences when mixed with betel.

THE betel is a creeping and climbing plant like the ivy, but does no injury to the agoti, which it embraces as its support, and is remarkably fond of. It is cultivated in the same manner as the vine. Its leaves a good deal resembles those of the citron, though they are longer and narrower at the extremity. The betel grows in all parts of India, but flourishes best in moist places.

AT all times of the day, and even in the night, the Indians chew the leaves of the betel, the bitterness of which is corrected by the areca that is wrapped up in them. There is constantly mixed with it the chunam, a kind of burnt lime made of shells. The rich frequently add perfumes, either to gratify their variety or their sensuality.

IT would be thought a breach of politeness among the Indians to take leave for any long time, without presenting each other with a purse of betel. It is a pledge of friendship that relieves the pain of absence.

B O O K

II.

No one dares to speak to a superior unless his mouth is perfumed with betel; it would even be rude to neglect this precaution with an equal. The women of gallantry are the most lavish in the use of betel, as being a powerful incentive to love. Betel is taken after meals; betel is chewed during a visit; betel is offered when you meet, and when you separate; in short, nothing is to be done without betel. If it is prejudicial to the teeth, it assists and strengthens the stomach. At least, it is a general fashion that prevails throughout the Indies.

6. THE pearl fishery, which is one of the sources of the revenue of Ceylon. It is no improbable conjecture, that this island, which is only fifteen leagues from the continent, was, in some distant period or other separated from it by some great convulsion of nature. The tract of sea which at present divides it from the land, is so full of shallows, that no ships can sail upon it; and there are only a few places where small boats may pass in four or five feet water. The Dutch, who assume the sovereignty here, have always two armed sloops to enforce the payment of the taxes they have imposed. In this strait the pearl fishery is carried on, which was formerly of so much importance; but this source of wealth has been so much exhausted, that it is but rarely resorted to. The bank, indeed, is visited every year, to see how it is replenished with oysters; but, in general, it is five or six years before a sufficient quantity is to be found. The fishery is then farmed out; and, every thing computed, it may produce to the revenues of the company 200,000 livres. (8,750*l*.) Upon the same coasts is found a shell-fish called xanxus, of which the Indians at Bengal make bracelets. The fishery is free, but the trade is exclusive.

AFTER

AFTER all, the great object of the company is cinnamon. The root of the tree that produces it is large, and divides it into several branches covered with a bark, which on the outer side is of a greyish brown, and on the inner of a reddish cast. The wood of this root is hard, white, and has no smell. The body of the tree, which grows to the height of eight or ten toises, is covered as well as its numerous branches, with a bark which at first is green, and afterwards red. The leaf, if it were not longer and narrower, would not be much unlike that of the laurel. When first unfolded it is of a flame colour: but after it has been for some time exposed to the air and grows dry, it changes to a deep green on the upper surface, and to a lighter on the lower. The flowers are small and white, and grow in large bunches at the extremity of the branches; they have an agreeable smell, something like that of the lily of the valley. The fruit is shaped like an acorn, but is not so large. It is commonly ripe in September. When boiled in water it yields an oil which swims at top, and takes fire. If left to cool, it hardens into a white substance, of which candles are made, which have an agreeable smell, and are reserved for the use of the king of Ceylon. No part of the tree that produces the cinnamon is valuable except the under bark. The best season for raising and separating it from the outer bark, which is grey and rugged, is the spring, when the sap flows in the greatest abundance. It is cut into thin slices and exposed to the sun; and curls up in drying.

THE old trees produce only a coarse kind of cinnamon, which is only in perfection when the trees are not older than three or four years. When the trunk has been stripped of its bark it receives no further nourishment, but the root is still alive and continues to throw

**H O O K**  
**II.**

out fresh shoots. Besides this, the fruit of the cinnamon-tree contains a seed from which it is raised.

THERE are some of the company's territories where this tree does not grow. It is only to be found in those of Negombo, Columbo, or the promontory of Gallo. The prince's forests supply the deficiency which sometimes prevails in the magazines. The mountains inhabited by the Bedas abound with the tree; but neither the Europeans or the Cinglasses are denied access to them, and there is no way of sharing the riches of the Bedas but by declaring war against them.

As the Cinglasses, as well as the Indians upon the continent, are divided into casts which never make any alliances with one another, each constantly adhering to the same profession; the art of barking the cinnamon-trees is a distinct occupation, and the meanest of all others, and is confined to the cast of the Cooleys. Every other islander would look upon it as a disgrace to be employed in this trade.

THE cinnamon is not reckoned excellent unless it is fine, smooth, brittle, thin, of a yellow colour inclining to red, fragrant, aromatic, and of a poignant, yet agreeable taste. The connoisseurs give the preference to that, the pieces of which are long but slender. It adds to the delicacies of the table, and is of sovereign use in medicine.

THE Dutch purchase the greatest part of their cinnamon of the Indians who are subject to them. They have engaged to take a limited quantity of the king of Candy, at an advanced price. Setting one against the other, it does not cost them twelve sols a pound. It would not be impossible for the ships that frequent the ports of Ceylon, to procure the tree that produces the cinnamon; but it has degenerated at Malabar, Batavia, the

the isle of France, and in all parts where it has been transplanted.

**B O O K**  
**II.**

FORMERLY the company thought it necessary to maintain four thousand black or white soldiers, to secure the advantages they derived from Ceylon. The number is now reduced to fifteen or sixteen hundred. Their annual expences, nevertheless, amount to 2,200,000 livres (96,250*l.*); and their revenues, and small branches of commerce, produce no more than 2,000,000 of livres. (87,500*l.*) This deficiency is supplied out of the profits arising from cinnamon. They are likewise obliged to provide for the expence attending the wars they are from time to time engaged in with the king of Candy, who is at present the sole sovereign of the island.

THE Dutch freely own that these ruptures are fatal to them. As soon as they break out, most of the people who inhabit the coasts retire into the inland parts of the country. Notwithstanding the despotism that awaits them, they look upon the yoke of the Europeans as an evil still more insupportable. The Cooleys are so far from always waiting for the commencement of hostilities as a signal for their removal, that they sometimes resolve to take this desperate step as soon as they perceive the least misunderstanding between the king and the Dutch. On these occasions, besides the loss of a harvest, a long train of expence and fatigue follows, to enable them to penetrate, sword in hand, into a country, encompassed on all sides by rivers, woods, hollow vales, and mountains.

THESE important considerations had determined the company to engage the good will of the prince of Candy, by shewing him all imaginable civilities. Every year they sent an ambassador laden with rich presents. They offered their ships to convey his priests to Siam, to be

**B O O K**  
**II.**

be instructed in the religion of that country, which is the same with his own. Notwithstanding they had taken the forts and the lands which were occupied by the Portuguese, they contented themselves with receiving from this prince the appellation of *guardians of his coasts*. They also made him several other concessions.

THESE singular instances of management, have not, however, been always sufficient to maintain good harmony, which has several times been interrupted. The war which ended on the 14th of February, 1766, had been the longest and the most active of any that had been occasioned by distrust, and an opposition of interests. As the company prescribed terms to a monarch who was driven from his capital, and obliged to wander in the woods, they made a very advantageous treaty. Their sovereignty was acknowledged over all the countries they were in possession of before the troubles broke out; and that part of the coasts which remained in the occupation of the natives was ceded to them. They are to be allowed to gather cinnamon in all the plains, and the court is to sell them the best sort that is produced in the mountainous parts at the rate of forty-one livres five sols (1*l.* 16*s.* 1*d.*) for eighteen pounds. Their commissaries are authorised to extend their trade to all parts where they think it can be carried on with advantage. The government engages to have no connection with any other foreign power: and ever to deliver up any Europeans who may happen to stray into the island. In return for so many concessions, the king is to receive annually the value of the produce of the ceded coasts; and from thence his subjects are to be furnished gratis with salt sufficient for their consumption. It should seem that the company may derive great advantages from so favourable a situation.

THE

THE property of the lands in Ceylon belongs more of right to the sovereign than in any other part of India. This pernicious system has, in that island been attended with fatal consequences inseparable from it: The people are in a state of total inactivity. They live in huts, have no furniture, and subsist upon fruits; and those who are most at their ease, have no other covering than a piece of coarse linen wrapped about their waist. It were to be wished that the Dutch would do one thing, which all the nations who have established colonies in Asia, are to blame never to have attempted, and that is, to distribute the lands among the families and make them their own property. They would forget, and perhaps hate their former sovereign: they would attach themselves to a government that consulted their happiness; they would become industrious, and occasion a greater consumption. Under such circumstances the island of Ceylon would enjoy that opulence which was designed it by nature: it would be secure from revolutions, and be enabled to support the settlements of Malabar and Coromandel, which it is bound to protect.

BOOK  
II.

THE Portuguese, in the time of their prosperity, had formed some tolerable settlements on the coast of Coromandel. That at Negapatan was taken from them by the Dutch in 1658. It gradually increased to ten or twelve villages, which were all inhabited by weavers. In 1690, it was thought proper to build a fort to secure their tranquillity, and in 1742 the tower was surrounded by walls. This is the centre of trade, where all the investments of white, blue, painted, printed, fine and coarse linens are made by the company for the consumption in Europe or India. Whether at Bimilipatnam, Petticate, Sadraspatan; or at its factories on the fishing coast. Their investments, which commonly amount

Trade of  
the Dutch  
on the coast  
of Coro-  
mandel.



**B O O K**  
**II.**

mount to four or five thousand bales are carried to Negapatan, by two sloops stationed in these seas for that purpose.

THE Dutch sell, on the coast of Coromandel, iron, lead, copper, calin, tutenague, pepper, and spices. These united articles produce a million of livres (43,750*l.*) to which we may add eighty thousand (3,500*l.*) arising from the customs. The expences of their several establishments amount to eight hundred thousand livres, (35,000*l.*) and we may venture to assert without the fear of being accused of exaggeration, that the freight of the ships swallow up the rest of the profits. The net produce therefore of the Coromandel trade to the company, is the profit arising from the linens they export. Their trade on the Malabar coast is still less advantageous to them. It commenced pretty nearly at the same period, and was established at the expence of the same nation.

Trade of  
the Dutch  
on the coast  
of Mala-  
bar.

It appears to be no difficult task to guess at the motives that led to this new enterprise. After the Portuguese had lost Ceylon, they sold the wild cinnamon of Malabar in Europe at almost the same price at which they had always sold the right sort. Though this rivalry could not continue long, it gave uneasiness to the Dutch, who, in 1662, ordered Vangoens, their general, to attack Cochin.

THE place was no sooner invested, than intelligence was received of a peace being concluded between Holland and Portugal. This news was kept secret. The operations were carried on with vigour; and the besieged, harrassed by continual assaults, surrendered on the eighth day. The next day a frigate arrived from Goa with the articles of peace. The conquerors gave themselves no further trouble to justify their treachery, than by saying, that those who complained in so haughty a  
style

stile, had observed the same conduct at Brazil a few years before. BOOK  
II.

AFTER this conquest, the Dutch thought themselves firmly established at Malabar. Cochin seemed to be necessary to protect Cananor, Cranganor, and Quillon, of which they had just before made themselves masters, and the factory of Porcat, which they had formed the plan of at that time, and have since actually established. The event has not answered their expectation. The company have not succeeded in their hopes of excluding other European nations from this coast. They procure no kind of merchandise there, but what they are furnished with from their other settlements; and being rivalled in their trade they are obliged to give a higher price here, than in the markets where they enjoy an exclusive privilege.

THEIR articles of sale consist of a small quantity of alum, benzoin, camphire, tutenague, sugar, iron, calin, lead, copper, and quicksilver. The vessel that carries this slender cargo returns to Batavia laden with caire, or cocoa-tree bark, for the use of the port. By these articles the company gain, at most 360,000 livres, (15,750*l.*) which, with 120,000 (5,250*l.*) arising from the customs, make the sum of 480,000 livres. (21,000*l.*) In times of profound peace the maintenance of these settlements cost 464,000 livres, (20,300*l.*) so that 16,000 (700*l.*) only, remain to defray the expences of their shipping, for which that sum is certainly not sufficient.

IT is true the company gets two millions weight of pepper at Malabar, which is carried in sloops to Ceylon, where it is put aboard the ships fitted out for Europe. It is likewise true, that, by virtue of these capitulations, they pay only 192 (8*l.* 8*s.*) livres the candil, which weighs five hundred pounds, for which other companies

**B O O K** companies give 240, (10*l.* 10*s.*) and private merchants  
 II. 288; (12*l.* 12*s.*) but whatever advantage may be made  
 of this article, it is reduced to nothing by the bloody  
 wars that are occasioned by it.

These observations had doubtless escaped the notice of Golness, the director-general of Batavia, when he ventured to affirm that the settlement at Malabar which he had long superintended, was one of the most important settlements belonging to the company. "I am so far from being of your opinion, said general Mossel, that I could wish the sea had swallowed it up about a century ago."

The Dutch  
 settlement  
 at the Cape  
 of Good  
 Hope.

BE this as it may, the Dutch, in the height of their success, found the want of a place where their vessels might put in to get refreshments, either in going to, or returning from India. They were undetermined in their choice, when Van-Riebec the surgeon, in 1650, proposed the Cape of Good Hope, which the Portuguese had imprudently despised. This judicious man, during a stay of some weeks, was convinced that a colony might be placed to advantage on this southern extremity of Africa, which might serve as a staple for the commerce of Europe and Asia. The care of forming this settlement was committed to him; and his measures were concerted upon a good plan. He caused it to be stipulated that every man who chose to fix there should have sixty acres of land allotted him. Corn, cattle and utensils were to be provided for those who wanted them. Young women taken from alms-houses were given them as companions to soften, and to share their fatigues. All those, who after three years found the climate, did not agree with them, had liberty to return to Europe, and to dispose of their possessions in what manner they pleased. Having settled these arrangements he set sail.

THE

THE large tract of country which it was proposed to cultivate, was inhabited by the Hottentots, who, according to a French traveller, are divided into several clans, each of which forms an independent village. Their habitations are huts covered with skins, which cannot be entered without creeping upon their hands and knees, and are disposed in a circle. These huts are hardly of any other use than to hold a few provisions and household furniture. The Hottentots never enter them but in the rainy season. They are always found lying at their doors; and if they interrupt their repose it is to smoke a strong herb which serves them instead of tobacco.

THE management of cattle is the sole employment of these savages. As there is but one herd in each town which is common to all the inhabitants, each of them is appointed to guard it in his turn. This post requires constant vigilance, the country being full of wild beasts, which are more voracious at this extremity of Africa than any where else. The shepherd sends out scouts every day. If a leopard or tyger is seen in the neighbourhood, the whole town takes up arms, and flies to the enemy, who seldom escapes from so many poisoned arrows, and sharp stakes hardened in the fire.

As the Hottentots neither have, nor appear to have riches; and their oxen and sheep, which is all the property they have, are in common; it is natural to imagine that there is little occasion for disputes among them. They are accordingly united to each other by the closest ties of friendship: nor do they ever engage in any war, even with their neighbours; setting aside the quarrels between the shepherds on account of cattle that may have strayed, or been carried off.

It has often been remarked, that public customs gave rise to the first colonies. Marks of distinction were adopted to make men unite and recognize one another.

A broken

**BOOK**  
**II.**

A broken nose, a flat head, bored ears, paintings, burnings, head-dresses, are the characteristics of the savage world. As no plan of morality or education prevails among them, it follows of course, that universal customs must with them supply the place of policy and government. These rude men, the children of nature, depend entirely on the temper of the climate: and hence the Hottentots have the manners of herdsmen.

WHEN the Dutch arrived there, they were, like all the people who lead a pastoral life, full of benevolence; and partook in some degree of the slovenliness and stupidity of the animals they kept. They had instituted an order, with which they honoured those who had subdued any of the monsters that were destructive to their sheep-folds: and they revered the memory of the heroes who had done service to mankind. The apotheosis of Hercules had the same origin.

RIEBECK, in conformity to the notions unhappily prevailing among the Europeans, began to take possession of the most commodious part of the territory; and he afterwards designed to fix himself there. This behaviour displeased the natives. *On what pretence, said their envoy to these strangers, have you sown our lands? Why do you employ them to feed your cattle? How would you behave if you saw your own fields invaded in this manner? You fortify yourselves with no other view than to reduce the Hottentots to slavery.* These remonstrances were followed by some hostilities, which brought the founder of the colony back to those principles of justice and humanity, that were agreeable to his natural character. He purchased the country he wanted to occupy for the sum of 90,000 livres (3,973*l.* 10*s.*) which was paid in merchandise. All parties were reconciled, and from that time to this, there has been no further disturbance.

It

It has been proved that the company have expended 46,000,000 of livres (2,012,500*l.*) in raising the colony to its present state. A few particulars will enable us to judge how so considerable a sum has been employed.

B O O K  
II.

It is computed that there are at the Cape of Good Hope about twelve thousand Europeans, Dutch, Germans, and French Refugees. Some part of these numbers reside in the capital, and two considerable towns: the rest are dispersed along the coast which extends fifty leagues into the country. The soil of the Hottentots being sandy, and only good by intervals; the husbandmen chuse to confine themselves to those places where they meet with water, wood and fertile land; three advantages seldom found together.

THE company formerly procured slaves from Madagascar, who alleviated the burthen of the white people. Since the French appeared as rivals, this communication has been discontinued. The present planters consist of a few Malays, who are unaccustomed to the climate, and are scarce fit for the work that is required of them.

If it were practicable to make the Hottentots steady, great advantages might accrue, which cannot be hoped for from their present character. All that has yet been done, has been to prevail with the poorest of them to engage in their service for one, two, or three years. They are of a docile temper, and perform the work that is expected from them; but, at the expiration of their agreement, they take the cattle that are allowed them for wages, rejoin their clan, and never make their appearance again till they have oxen or sheep to barter for knives, tobacco, and brandy. They find an inexpressible charm in the independent and indolent life they lead in their deserts: Nothing can wean them from this attachment. One of their children was taken from the

B O O K  
II.

cradle, and instructed in our manners and religion; he made a progress answerable to the pains that were bestowed upon his education; he was sent to India, and usefully employed in trade. Happening, by accident, to revisit his country, he went to see his relations in their hut. He was struck with the simplicity that appeared there; he cloathed himself with a sheep-skin, and went to the fort to carry back his European habiliments. *I am come, said he to the governor, to renounce for ever the mode of life you have taught me to embrace. I am resolved to follow, till death, the manners and religion of my ancestors. As a token of my affection, I will keep the collar and sword you have given me: all the rest you will permit me to leave behind.* He did not wait for an answer, but ran away, and was never heard of after.

THOUGH the character of the Hottentots is not such as the Dutch could wish, the company derive solid advantages from this colony. Indeed, the tenth-part of the corn and wine, together with their customs and other duties, do not exceed 240,000 livres. (10,500*l.*) They gain no more than forty thousand (1,750*l.*) by their thick cloths, common thread and cotton pieces, hardware, coals, and other inconsiderable articles, which they vend at this place.

THEY receive a still smaller profit from sixty lecques of red wine, and eighty or ninety of white, which they carry to Europe every year. The lecque weighs about twelve hundred pounds. There are only two places in the neighbourhood of Constantia that produce this wine. The company might have it entirely genuine, and at a very low rate. Happily the governor finds it his interest to allow the cultivators to mix it with the produce of the adjacent vineyards. By this management what remains of this celebrated wine, the genuine excellent cape wine, is sold to foreign vessels that hap-  
pen

pen to touch at the coasts at four livres (3s. 6d.) a bottle. It is generally preferable to that which is extorted by tyranny ; nothing good being to be expected where it is not voluntarily obtained.

As the expences necessary for the support of so large a settlement, swallow up, at least, all these profits taken together, its utility must rest upon some other foundation.

THE Dutch ships that sail to and from India find a safe asylum at the cape ; a delightful, serene, and temperate sky ; and learn every thing of importance that happens in both those parts of the globe. Here they take in butter, meal, wine, large quantities of pickled vegetables for their voyage, and for the use of the colonies. They might draw much greater advantages from hence, if the company blinded by their avidity, were not perpetually checking the industry of the planters. They oblige them to part with their provisions at so low a price, that they have not, for a long time, been able to procure cloathing and other absolute necessities.

THIS tyrannical conduct might, perhaps, be borne with, if the victims of it were authorised to sell their superfluous produce to foreign navigators, whom the convenience of their situation, or other reasons might invite into their ports. But a spirit of jealousy in trade, which is one of the greatest evils that can befall humanity, has deprived them of this resource. The Dutch have long flattered themselves, that by withholding this conveniency from other trading nations, they should make them abandon India in disgust. Notwithstanding they have experienced the reverse of this, their conduct is not altered ; though it was easy to discern, that all the wealth that flowed into the colony would, sooner or later, return to the company. The governor only is authorised to supply the most pressing necessities of those



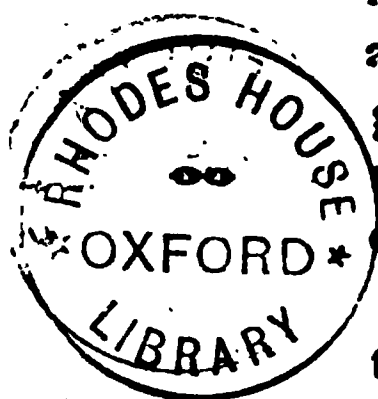
**B O O K**  
**II.**

who touch at the Cape. These wrong measures, have deservedly been the source of a thousand inconveniencies. We must do justice to M. Tolbac, who at present presides over this colony. This generous man, during the last war, set an example of benevolence and disinterestedness, which was not to be found in any of his predecessors. As his understanding raised him above prejudice, and that he had a sufficient degree of firmness to deviate from the absurd orders he received, he encouraged the nations who endeavoured to supplant one another to repair to his colony for subsistence. The price was regulated by so just a standard, that while it was so moderate as to invite purchasers, it was high enough to animate the cultivators to industry. May this wise magistrate long enjoy the pleasing consciousness of having made the fortune of his fellow-citizens, and the glory of having neglected his own!

If the company should adopt his plan, they will imitate the spirit of their founders, who did nothing by chance, and, without waiting for the happy events we have been describing, set themselves to find out a place, which they might make the center of their power. They had cast their eyes upon Java as early as the year 1609.

Dominions  
of the  
Dutch in  
the island  
of Java.

THE people of this island, which is two hundred leagues in length and thirty or forty in breadth, traced their origin from China, though they retained nothing either of its religion or its manners. A very superstitious species of mohammedanism constituted the prevailing worship. Some idolaters were still remaining in the interior part of the country; and these were the only inhabitants of Java that were not arrived at the last stage of depravity. This island, which was formerly under the dominion of a single monarch, was at that time divided among several sovereigns, who were perpetually



tually at war with each other. These eternal dissensions, while they kept up a military spirit among the people, made them neglect manners. Their enmity to strangers, and want of confidence in each other, would lead one to conclude, that this nation breathed no sentiment but hatred. Here men were wolves to each other, and seemed to unite in society more for the sake of committing mutual injuries, than of receiving mutual assistances. A Javanese never accosted his brother without having a poniard in his hand; ever watchful to prevent, or prepared to commit some act of violence. The grandees had a great number of slaves, either bought, taken in war, or detained for debt, whom they treated with the utmost inhumanity. They cultivated the lands, and performed all kinds of hard labour. The Javanese chewed betel, smoked opium, lived with his concubines, fought, or slept. These people possessed a considerable share of understanding, but retained few traces of any moral principle. They had not so much the character of an unenlightened, as of a degenerated nation: in short, they were a set of men, who, from a regular government had fallen into a kind of anarchy; and gave full scope to the impetuous emotions which nature excites in these climates.

THIS depraved character of the inhabitants did not alter the views of the company with respect to Java. They might be counteracted by the English, who were then in possession of a part of the trade of this island. But this obstacle was soon removed. The weakness of James the First, and the corruption of his council, had so damped the spirits of these haughty Britons, that they suffered themselves to be supplanted, without making those efforts that might have been expected from their bravery. The natives of the country, deprived

B O O K  
II.

of their support, were forced to submit ; but it required time, address, and policy, to accomplish that scheme.

It was one of the fundamental maxims of the Portuguese to persuade those princes they wanted to engage or retain in a state of dependence, to send their children to Goa to be educated, at the expence of the court of Lisbon, and initiated early into its manners and principles. But this, which was in itself a good project, was spoiled by the conquerors, who admitted these young people to a participation of the most criminal pleasures, and the most shameful scenes of debauchery. The consequence was, that when these Indians arrived at maturity, they could not help detesting, or, at least, despising such abandoned instructors. The Dutch adopted the same plan, and improved upon it. They endeavoured to convince their pupils of the weakness, inconstancy, and treachery of their subjects ; and still more of the power, wisdom, and good faith of the company. By this method they strengthened their usurpations ; but we are obliged to say, that the Dutch employed means that were treacherous and cruel.

THE government of the island, which was founded entirely on the feudal laws, seemed calculated to promote discord. Fathers and sons turned their arms against each other. They supported the pretensions of the weak against the strong, and of the strong against the weak, as they saw occasion. They sometimes took the monarch's part, and sometimes that of his vassals. If any person of formidable genius ascended the throne, they raised up rivals to oppose him. Those who were not to be seduced by gold or promises, were subdued by fear. Every day was productive of some revolution, which was always begun by the intrigues of the tyrants, and always ended to their advantage. At length they became masters of the most important posts in the inland parts

parts of the country; and of the forts that were built upon the coasts.

B O O K  
II.

THIS plan of usurpation was only begun to be carried into execution, when a governor was appointed at Java, who had a palace and guards, and appeared in great pomp. The company thought proper to depart from the principles of oeconomy they had hitherto adopted; from a persuasion, that the Portuguese had derived a great advantage from the brilliant court kept by the viceroy of Goa: that the people of the East were to be dazzled in order to be the more easily subdued: and that it was necessary to strike the imagination and the eyes of the Indians, who are guided more by their senses than the inhabitants of our climates.

THE Dutch had another reason for assuming an air of dignity. They had been represented in Asia as pirates, without a country, without laws, and without a ruler. To silence these calumnies, they endeavoured to prevail with several states adjoining to Java to send ambassadors to prince Maurice of the house of Orange.

THE execution of this project procured them a double advantage: as it gave them credit with the eastern nations, and flattered the ambition of the Stadtholder, whose protection was necessary to be obtained, for reasons which we are going to explain.

WHEN the company obtained their exclusive privilege, the straits of Magellan, which could have no connection with the East Indies, were improperly enough included in the grant. Isaac Lemaire, one of those rich and enterprizing merchants, who ought every where to be considered as the benefactors of their country, formed the project of penetrating into the South Sea by the southern coasts. Access being denied by the only track that was known at that time; he fitted out two ships which passed a strait, since called by his name,

B O O K  
II.

running between Cape Horne and the Staten Land; and were driven by the force of accidents to the coast of Java, where they were condemned, and the crew sent prisoners to Europe.

THIS tyrannical proceeding gave offence to the people, already prejudiced against an exclusive commerce. It was thought absurd, that instead of giving those who attempted discoveries, the encouragement they deserved, a state purely commercial should forge shackles to confine their industry. The monopoly, which the avarice of individuals had endured with impatience, became more odious when the company stretched the concessions that had been made them beyond their due bounds. It was found that as their pride and influence increased with their power, the interest of the nation would at length be sacrificed to the interest, or even to the caprice of this formidable body. It is probable, that they must have sunk under the public resentment; and that the charter, which was near expiring, would not have been renewed, if they had not been supported by prince Maurice, favoured by the States-General, and encouraged to brave the storm by the strength they derived from their settlement at Java.

THOUGH the tranquility of this island may have been disturbed by various commotions, several wars, and some conspiracies, it continues to be as much in subjection to the Dutch as they wish it to be.

BANTAM extends over the western part. One of its sovereigns having resigned the crown to his son, was recalled to the throne in 1680 by the natural restlessness of his temper, the bad conduct of his successor, and a powerful faction. His party was on the point of prevailing, when the young monarch, besieged in his capital by an army of thirty thousand men, without any adherents, except the companions of his debaucheries, implored

implored the protection of the Dutch. They flew to his assistance, beat his enemies, delivered him from his rival, and re-established his authority. Though the expedition was brisk, short, and rapid, and consequently could not be expensive; they contrived to make the charges of the war amount to a prodigious sum. The situation of things would not admit of a scrutiny into the sum demanded for so great a piece of service, and the exhausted state of the finances made it impossible to discharge it. In this extremity this weak prince determined to entail slavery on himself and his descendants, by granting to his deliverers the exclusive trade of his dominions.

THE company maintain this great privilege with three hundred and sixty-eight men, who are stationed in two bad forts, one of which serves as a habitation for the governor, the other as a palace for the king. The expences of this settlement amount to no more than 100,000 livres, (4,375*l.*) which are regained upon the merchandize sold there. Their clear profits consist of what they gain upon three millions weight of pepper, which they oblige the inhabitants to sell at twenty-five livres twelve sols (1*l.* 2*s.* 4*d.*  $\frac{3}{4}$ .) a hundred.

THESE profits are inconsiderable in comparison of what the company receives from Tſieribon, which it subjected without any efforts, without intrigues, and without expence. The Dutch were scarce settled at Java, when the sultan of this narrow but very fertile state, put himself under their protection, to avoid submitting to a neighbouring prince more powerful than himself. He sells them annually a thousand lasts of rice, each weighing three thousand three hundred pounds, at seventy-six livres sixteen sols (about 3*l.* 7*s.* 2*d.*  $\frac{3}{4}$ .) a last. A million weight of sugar, the finest of which costs thirteen livres nine sols (about 11*s.* 9*d.*) a hundred;

**B O O K**  
**II.**

hundred; one million two hundred thousand pounds of coffee, at four sols (2*d.*) a pound; a hundred quintals of pepper, at four sols eight deniers (about 2*d.*  $\frac{1}{2}$ .) a pound; thirty thousand pounds of cotton, the finest of which costs no more than one livre eight sols (about 1*s.* 2*d.*  $\frac{1}{2}$ .) a pound; six hundred thousand pounds of areca, at twelve livres (10*s.* 6*d.*) a hundred. Though fixing these prices so low is a manifest imposition upon the weakness of the inhabitants, the people of Tseribon who are the most gentle and civilized of any in the island, have never been provoked by this injustice to take up arms. A hundred Europeans are sufficient to keep them in subjection. The expences of this settlement amount to no more than 41,000 livres, (1,793*l.* 15*s.*) which is gained by linens imported thither.

THE empire of Mataran, which formerly extended over the whole island, and at present takes up the greatest part of it, was the last that was reduced to subjection. Often vanquished, and sometimes vanquishing, it continued its struggles for independency, when the son and brother of a sovereign, who died in 1704, disputed the succession. The nation was divided between the two rivals. He who was intitled to the crown by order of succession, had so visibly the advantage, that he must soon have got the supreme power entirely into his hands, if the Dutch had not declared in favour of his rival. The party, espoused by these republicans, at length prevailed after a series of contests, more active, frequent, well conducted, and obstinate, than could have been expected. The young prince, whom they wanted to deprive of the right of succession to the king his father, displayed so much intrepidity, prudence and firmness, that he would have triumphed over his enemies, had it not been for the advantage they derived from their magazines,

gazines, forts, and ships. His uncle usurped his throne; but shewed himself unworthy to fill it.

B O O K  
II.

WHEN the company restored him to the crown, they dictated laws to him. They chose the place where his court was to be fixed, and secured his attachment by a citadel in which a guard was maintained, with no other apparent view than to protect the prince. After all these precautions, they employed every artifice to lull his attention by pleasures, to gratify his avarice by presents, and to flatter his vanity by pompous embassies. From this æra, the prince and his successors, who were educated suitably to the part they were to act, were nothing more than the despicable tools of the despotism of the company. All that is necessary for their support, is three hundred horse and four hundred soldiers, whose maintenance, including the pay of the agents, costs them 760,000 livres. (33,250*l*.)

THE company are amply reimbursed for this expence by the advantages it secures them. The harbours of this state afford docks for the construction of all the small vessels and sloops employed in the company's service. They are supplied from hence with all the timber that is wanted in their several Indian settlements, and in part of their foreign colonies. Here too they load their vessels with the productions with which the kingdom is obliged to furnish them; consisting of five thousand lasts of rice, at forty-eight livres (2*l* 2*s*.) a last; as much salt as they require, at twenty-eight livres sixteen sols (about 1*l* 5*s* 2*d*.) a last; a hundred thousand pounds of pepper, at nineteen livres four sols (16*s* 9*d* ½) a hundred; all the indigo that is raised, at three livres (about 2*s* 7*d* ½) a pound; cadjang, for the use of their ships, at seventy-six livres sixteen sols (about 3*l* 7*s* 2*d* ½) a last; cotton yarn, from twelve sols to one livre (from about 6*d*. to 1*s* 3*d*. a pound, according to its



**B O O K**  
**II.**

its quality: and the small quantity of cardamomum is produced there, at a shameful price.

THE island of Madura, which is separated from the ports of Mataran only by a narrow channel, is obliged, by a garrison of fifteen men, to furnish rice at a very low rate. This island, in common with the people of Java, labours under a still more odious oppression. The company's commissaries make use of false measure in order to procure a larger quantity of goods from the people that are to furnish them. This fraud, practised for their own private advantage, has not hitherto been punished; and there is no reason to hope that it ever will. Balambangan is the only district in the island of Java, that is not exposed to these iniquitous practices. The Dutch who slighted it, on account of its not furnishing any article of trade, have held no correspondence with it.

FOR the rest, the Dutch having abated the turbulence of the Javanese, by gradually undermining the laws that maintain it; and satisfied with having forced them to give some attention to agriculture, and with having secured to themselves a commerce perfectly exclusive, have not attempted to acquire any property in the island. Their territory extends no farther than the small kingdom of Jacatra. The ravages committed by the Dutch when they conquered this state, and the tyranny that followed that conquest, had turned it into a desert. It still remains uncultivated and inactive.

THE Dutch, those of them in particular who go to India to seek their fortunes, were hardly qualified to recover this excellent soil from its exhausted state. It was several times proposed to have recourse to the Germans; and by the encouragements of some advances, and some gratuities, to exercise their industry in a manner the most advantageous to the company. What these

these laborious people might have done in the fields, the silk manufacturers from China, and the linen-weavers from Coromandel, might have executed in the workshops, for the improvement of manufactures. As these useful projects did not favour any private views, they continued to be nothing more than projects. At length the Governors General Imhoff and Mossel, struck with a scene of such great disorder, endeavoured to find out a remedy.

WITH this view they sold to the Chinese and the Europeans, at a small price, the lands which the government had acquired by oppressive means. This management has not produced all the good that was expected from it. The new proprietors have seldom ventured to keep any thing upon their estates but sheep and cattle, for which they have an easy, certain, and advantageous market. They would have applied themselves to agriculture, which requires more care, greater pecuniary encouragements, and a greater number of hands, if the company did not insist on their furnishing the commodities at the same price they give for them in the rest of the island. At this present time there are no more than a hundred and fifty thousand slaves, who are under the direction of a small number of free men. The produce of their labours consists of two millions weight of coffee, a hundred and fifty thousand pounds of pepper, twenty five thousand pounds of cotton, ten thousand pounds of indigo, ten million of sugar, and six thousand leques of areca. The two last articles have been cultivated with more spirit than the rest, because private persons, having the liberty to purchase and export them, pay twenty per cent. dearer for them than the company.

THESE commodities, as well as all those that are produced in Javan, are carried to Batavia, which is built on the ruins of the ancient capital of Jacatra.

A CITY

**BOOK**  
**II.**

A CITY which has become so considerable a mart, must have received many successive improvements. It is well built ; the houses, though not magnificent, are pleasant, commodious, and well furnished ; the streets are broad, running in strait lines, with rows of large trees on each side, and canals cut through them ; they are always clean, though it has not been thought proper to pave them, for fear of increasing the heat by too strong a reflection of the sun's rays. All the public buildings have an air of grandeur ; and the generality of travellers look upon Batavia as one of the finest cities in the world.

THE number of inhabitants, including the suburbs and liberties, does not exceed an hundred thousand. The greatest part of this number are slaves. Here are likewise Malaysians, Javanese, free Macassars, who are all of them indolent enough ; and Chinese, who have the exclusive exercise of all trades, are the only cultivators of the sugar cane, and manage all the manufactures. The number of Europeans may amount to ten thousand ; of these, four thousand born in India, are, to an inconceivable degree, degenerated. This strange perversion is probably owing to the generally received custom, of committing the care of their education to slaves.

THE corruptions at Batavia have, however, been exaggerated. Dissolute manners are not more prevalent there than in other settlements, formed by the Europeans in Asia. It is true they drink to excess ; but the ties of marriage are held sacred. None but unmarried men keep concubines, who are generally of the rank of slaves. The priests have endeavoured to stop the progress of these connections, which are always secret, by refusing to baptize the offspring of them ; but they are become less rigid, since a carpenter belonging to the company,

company, who chose his son should be of some religion or other, took it into his head to have him circum-

**B O O K**  
**II.**

LUXURY has maintained its ground more successfully than concubinage. The ladies who are universally ambitious of distinguishing themselves by the richness of their dress; and the magnificence of their equipage, have carried their taste for finery to excess. They never stir out without a numerous train of slaves; and either ride in magnificent cars, or are carried in superb palanquins. They wear gold or silver tissues, or fine Chinese sattins, with a net of gold thrown over them; and their head-dress is loaded with pearls and diamonds. In 1758 the government attempted to reform these extravagancies, by prescribing a mode of dress suitable to each rank. These regulations were received with contempt, means were found to elude, or to purchase an immunity from them; and no change took place. It would, indeed, have been a strange singularity, if the use of precious stones had been discontinued in the country that gave them birth; and that the Dutch had regulated a species of luxury in India, which they brought from thence with a view of introducing, or increasing it in this part of the world. The force and example of an European government struggle in vain against the laws and manners of the climate of Asia.

THE heats which might naturally be expected to be excessive at Batavia, are allayed by an agreeable sea-breeze, which begins to blow every day at ten o'clock, and continues till four. The nights are rendered cool by land-breezes, which die away at day-break. It would contribute to make the air as pure as the sky is serene, if they made their canals somewhat deeper,  
and

**B O O K**  
**II.**

and erected sluices. Disorders are not, however, very frequent here. The mortality that prevails among the soldiers and sailors, is rather owing to debauchery, bad provisions and fatigue, than to the inclemency of the climate.

NOTHING can be more agreeable than the environs one or two leagues round the capital. The country is interspersed with delightful villas, plantations that yield an agreeable shade, and gardens finely ornamented, and even disposed with taste. It is the fashion to live there all the year, and the people in office only come to Batavia to transact public business. These charming retreats formerly owed their tranquillity to forts erected at a certain distance from one another, to prevent the incursions of the Javanese. Since these people have contracted a habit of slavery, these redoubts serve as barracks for the refreshment of the recruits, after the fatigues of a long voyage.

BATAVIA is situated at the bottom of a deep bay, containing several islands of a middling size, which resist the impetuosity of the sea. It is, properly speaking, a road; but is as safe a retreat from all winds, and in all seasons, as the best harbour. The only inconvenience is the difficulty of going, in stormy weather, aboard the ships that are obliged to anchor at a considerable distance. The ships undergo the necessary repairs at the small island of Onrust, which though two leagues and a half distant, is one of those that chiefly contribute to the goodness of the road. It forms an excellent dock, is well fortified, and never without three or four hundred European carpenters; and as vessels can easily take in their lading there, magazines are erected for the reception of the larger kinds of merchandise intended for exportation. A pretty considerable

river, after fertilizing the fields, and refreshing Batavia, seems to fall into the sea, on purpose to serve as a channel of communication between the town and the shipping. The lighters that are continually meeting each other in this passage, and formerly drew twelve feet water, are reduced to one-half: the sands and rubbish have formed a bank, which, if suffered to increase, will prove an inconvenience, and occasion a very considerable expence. It is well worth while, on account of the importance of Batavia, to pay a serious attention to every thing that may contribute to the improvement and utility of its road, which is the most important one in India.

ALL the vessels sent out by the company from Europe to Asia arrive there, and except what goes directly from Bengal and Ceylon, they are laden in their return with all the articles of those rich sales, which create among us so much surprise and admiration.

THE expeditions to the different sea-ports of India are hardly less, perhaps, they are more considerable. European vessels are employed in this service during the unavoidable stay they are obliged to make in these remote seas.

THIS two-fold navigation is founded upon that which connects all the Dutch settlements with Batavia. Those that lie to the east are led from their situation, the nature of their merchandise, and their wants, to keep up a brisker correspondence with it than the rest. But all of them are obliged to have pass-ports. Any ship belonging to a private person, that should neglect this precaution, which was taken to prevent fraudulent trade, would be seized by the sloops that are continually cruising in these latitudes. When they arrive at the place of their destination, they deliver to the company

**B O O K**  
**II.**

such of their commodities as they have reserved the exclusive trade of to themselves, and dispose of the rest to whom they please. The slave-trade constitutes one of the principal branches of the commerce last mentioned. Six thousand of both sexes are annually carried to Batavia, where they are employed in domestic service, the cultivation of the lands, or manufactures. The Chinese, who cannot bring or invite over any of their countrywomen, make their choice among the slaves.

To these articles of importation may be added those brought every year, by a dozen Chinese junks, from Emoy, Limpo, and Canton. Their cargo is valued at about three millions (131,250*l.*) : and consists of camphire, porcelain, silk and cotton stuffs, which are used in Batavia and the rest of the Dutch colonies ; of unwrought silks, which are bought by the company when they are in any considerable quantity, or which, when there are but few of them, are sold to those who choose to send them to Macassar or Sumatra, where the grandees have pagnes made of them : of tea, which was formerly engrossed by the company, but is now given up to private traders, who send it to Europe, where it is sold by the company who deduct forty per cent. for the freight. This tea is generally bad, and of the worst sort.

THE junks, which besides the aforementioned articles, regularly bring two thousand Chinese to Java, who come thither in hopes of making their fortunes, carry back stag's pizzles and the fins of the shark, which are reckoned among the delicacies of the table in China. Another article they receive in exchange from Batavia is tripam, to the annual amount of two thousand peculs. Each pecul, weighing a hundred and twenty-five pounds, sells from twelve to forty livres (from 10*s.* 6*d.* to 1*l.* 15*s.*) according to its quality. It grows only two feet

feet from the sea upon the barren rocks of the east, and of Cochin-china, from whence it is carried to Batavia, together with those bird's nests so much celebrated all over the east which are found in the same places. A pecul of the last-mentioned merchandise sells from 1,400 to 2,800 livres, (from 61*l.* 5*s.* to 122*l.* 10*s.*) and the Chinese carry away one thousand. These nests are of an oval shape; an inch high, three inches round, and weigh about half an ounce. They are formed by a species of the swallow; its head, breast, and wings are of a fine blue; and its body milk white. They are composed of the spawn of fish, or of a glutinous froth which the agitation of the sea leaves upon the rocks, to which they are fastened at the bottom and on the side. When seasoned with salt and spices, they make a nourishing, wholesome and delicious jelly, and are an article of the highest luxury at the tables of the eastern mohammedans. Their whiteness constitutes their delicacy. The Chinese likewise carry away calin and pepper, though the company reserved the exportation of those articles to themselves. Their principal agents pretend for their own advantage, that these exportations are not prejudicial to the body which has intrusted its interests to their management:

THE traffic of the Chinese at Batavia, besides the merchandise they export from thence; brings them in some ready money. This wealth is increased by the considerable sums that the Chinese settled at Java remit to their families, and by the sums sooner or later amassed by those, who, content with their fortune, return to their own country, of which they seldom lose sight.

THE Europeans are not so well treated at Batavia as the Chinese. None are admitted there as merchants but the Spaniards. Their ships come from Manilla with gold, which is the produce of the island; and



**B O O K**  
**II.**

with cochineal and piastres brought from Mexico. They take, in exchange, linens for their own use and that of Acapulco; but the principal article is cinnamon; the consumption of which is much increased by the general use of chocolate in the new world, and the progress it is daily making in Europe. Since the English and French have sailed to the Philippines, the former branch of this trade has considerably declined; the latter suffered a change in the year 1759. Before that time, cinnamon was sold to the Spaniards at a moderate price; but, at present, they are expected to give the same that it bears in Europe. This innovation occasions a coolness between the two colonies. The consequences of this misunderstanding have not come to our knowledge.

ALL we know is, that the French hardly ever go to Batavia but in time of war. They purchase rice and arrack there for the use of their ships and their settlements, and make their payments for these commodities in silver or bills of exchange.

THE English are oftener seen there. All their vessels coming from Europe to China put in at this harbour under pretence of taking in fresh water; but in reality with a view of vending the goods, which are the property of the ship's company, consisting of cloths, hardware, glasses, arms, Madeira wines, and Portugal oils. This clandestine trade seldom exceeds a million of livres. (43,750*l*.)

BESIDES the English vessels sent from Europe, there are three or four belonging to the same nation, which are every year fitted out for Batavia from different parts of India. They have attempted to sell opium and linens there, but have been obliged to discontinue this importation, which was too prejudicial to private interest to be permitted. Their trade is limited to the purchase

chase of sugar, which they export to all parts, and of arrack, prodigious quantities of which are consumed in their colonies. Arrack is a kind of brandy made of rice, syrup of sugar, and cocoa-tree, which, after being fermented together, are distilled. This is one among other branches of trade which the Dutch by their industry, have deprived the Portuguese of. The art of making arrack, which was originally established at Goa, has for the most part been transferred to Batavia.

ALL imported or exported commodities pay this city a tax of five per cent. The revenue arising from the customs is farmed at the rate of 1,828,000 livres. (79,975*l*.) The extent of the trade must not be estimated by this rule, which, however, is always the most to be depended upon. The people in office pay what they think proper, and the company pay nothing, as that would be paying to themselves. Though they are here, as well as in other places, the only merchants in the island, the profits arising from the productions peculiar to Batavia, do not defray the expences of this celebrated mart, which amount to six millions. (262,500*l*.)

ONE of the articles of this expence, which is undoubtedly very great, is the maintenance of a council, which gives laws to all the settlements in India, and has the sole direction of affairs. This council is composed of the governor of the Dutch Indies, the director-general, five directors in ordinary, and a small number of extraordinary counsellors, which last have no votes, and only supply the place of the deceased counsellors in ordinary, till successors are appointed.

The manner of conducting the affairs of the Dutch company in India, and in Europe.

THE power of nomination to these offices is vested in the direction at home. They are open to all who have money, or are relations or retainers to the governor-general. On his demise, the directors in ordinary

**B O O K**  
**II.**

provisionally appoint a successor, who seldom fails to be confirmed in his employment. If the contrary happens, he is not admitted into the council; but may enjoy all the honours granted to the presidents that retire.

THE governor-general reports to the council the state of all affairs in the island of Java; and each counsellor that of the province intrusted to his care. The director has the inspection of the chest and magazines at Batavia, which supply the rest of the settlements. All purchases, and all sales are directed by him. The signature of the company is indispensably necessary in all commercial transactions.

THOUGH all points ought, strictly speaking, to be decided in the council by a majority of votes, the governor-general seldom fails to exercise an uncontrouled authority. This influence is owing to the care he takes to admit none but persons of inferior abilities, and to the interest they find in making their court to him, in order to advance their fortunes. If, on any occasion, he meets with an opposition that thwarts his designs, he is at liberty to take his own measures, making himself answerable for the consequences.

THE governor-general, like all the rest of the officers, is appointed only for five years, but usually holds his place during life. There have formerly been instances of governors-general, who have retired from business, to pass their days in tranquillity at Batavia; but the ill treatment experienced from their successors, has, of late years, determind them to remain in their post till death. They formerly appeared in great state, but it was laid aside by governor-general Imhoff, as useless and troublesome. Though all orders of men may aspire to this dignity, none of the army, and but few of the gown, have been known to obtain it. It is  
 always

always filled by merchants, because the spirit of the company is entirely commercial. Those who are born in India have seldom sufficient address or abilities to procure it. The present president, however, has never been in Europe.

THE salary of this principal officer is but slender; he has no more than two thousand livres (87*l.* 10*s.*) a month, and subsistence equal to his pay. The greatest part of his income arises from the liberty allowed him, of taking as much as he pleases from the magazines at prime cost, and from the liberty he assumes of trading to any extent he judges convenient. The income of the counsellors, members of the council, is likewise very considerable, though the company allows them only four hundred livres (17*l.* 10*s.*) a month, and goods to the same amount.

THE council meets but twice a week, unless when some extraordinary events require a more strict attendance. They appoint to all civil and military employments in India, except those of the writer and serjeant, which they thought might be left, without inconvenience, at the disposal of the governors of the respective settlements. On his advancement to any post, every man is obliged to take an oath, that he has neither promised, nor given any thing, to obtain his employment. This custom, which is very ancient, familiarizes people to false oaths, and proves no bar to corruption. Whoever considers the number of absurd and ridiculous oaths necessary to be taken at present in most countries, on being admitted into any society or profession whatever, will be less surprized to find prevarication still prevail where perjury has led the way.

ALL connections of commerce, not excepting that of the Cape of Good Hope, are made by the council, and the result of them always falls under their cognizance.

BOOK

II.

Even the ships that sail directly from Bengal and Ceylon, only carry to Europe the invoices of their cargoes. Their accounts, as well as all others, are sent to Batavia, where a general register is kept of all affairs.

THE council of India is not a separate body, nor is it independent. It acts in subordination to the direction established in the United Provinces. Though this is, in the strict sense of the word, a direction, the care of disposing of the merchandise twice a year, is divided between six chambers concerned in this commerce. Their business is more or less according to the funds that belong to them.

THE general assembly, which has the direction of the business of the company, is composed of directors of all the chambers. Amsterdam nominates eight; Zealand, four; each of the other chambers, one; and the state but one. Hence we see that Amsterdam, having half the number of voices, has only one to gain to enable it to turn the scale, where every question is to be decided by a majority of votes.

THIS body, which is composed of seventeen persons, meets twice or thrice a year during six years at Amsterdam, and two at Middleburg. The other chambers are too inconsiderable to enjoy this prerogative. It having been found by experience, that the success frequently depended on secret intrigues, it was proposed, about the middle of the last century, to chuse four of the most able of the seventeen deputies, and to invest them with authority to regulate all affairs in Europe and India, without the consent of their colleagues, and without being obliged even to ask their opinion.

It is true, their mysterious transactions, and the consequences of them, cannot long be kept a secret. The fleet that returns at the end of the summer, brings their books of accounts regularly from India. They are compared

compared with those in Europe. The general balance of the company's accounts are always published in May. Every person concerned knows what he has gained or lost. The gain is commonly considerable.

B O O K  
II.

THE company's fund did not at first exceed 12,919,680 livres (585,236*l.*) ; Amsterdam furnished 7,349,839 (321,555*l.* 1*s.* 3*d.*) ; Zealand, 2,667,764 (116,714*l.* 13*s.* 6*d.*) ; Delft, 940,000 (41,125*l.*) ; Rotterdam, 354,800 (15,522*l.* 10*s.*) ; Hoorn, 533,736 (23,350*l.* 19*s.*) ; Enchuyfen, 1,073,550 (46,967*l.* 16*s.* 3*d.*) ;

THIS fund was divided into sums of 6,000 livres, (262*l.* 10*s.*) which were called shares.

THEIR numbers were two thousand one hundred, since 1692 ; however, the profits are divided into two thousand one hundred and thirty. It was then that the company, who had always been protected by the house of Orange, and still stood in need of its assistance, made the stadtholder a present of a revenue of thirty shares for life.

THE shares sell for ready money, or upon credit, like merchandise. No other form is requisite than to substitute the name of the buyer for that of the seller in the company's books, the only title by which they are held by the proprietor. Avarice and the spirit of commerce have invented another method of acquiring a share in this traffic. Persons who have no stock to sell, and who do not intend to buy, enter into a reciprocal engagement, that one of the parties shall deliver, and the other receive a certain number, at such a time, at a price agreed upon. On the day fixed, they compute the difference between the current price of the stocks and their value when the agreement was made ; they settle the balance of the account in money, and the

**B O O K**  
**II.**

the transaction is over. The desire of gaining, and the fear of losing by these speculations, is productive of great anxiety. They invent good or bad news; they favour or oppose the reports of others; they try to penetrate the secrets of the court, or to purchase those of foreign ministers. These clashing interests have often disturbed the public tranquillity. Matters have even been carried to such a height, that the public have been obliged to take measures to put a stop to the rage of stock-jobbing. The most efficacious method has been to declare all bargains of sale for time null and void, unless it appears, by the company's books, that the seller was a proprietor at the time the bargain was made. Men of honour hold themselves obliged to fulfil their engagements notwithstanding this law: but it is natural to think that it must, and indeed it does, make these transactions less frequent.

THE price of stocks, which may be looked upon as the true thermometer of the company, has often varied. Injudicious or unsuccessful treaties, fresh competitions, accidents unavoidably attending an extensive commerce, the tranquillity or the disturbances of India, and of Europe in particular, have occasioned these changes. For some years the standing price of stocks has been two hundred and forty per cent. more than their original value. They formerly rose as high as six hundred and fifty per cent. So considerable an advance must have greatly enriched the original proprietors of these funds, and the families that inherit them: but the present purchasers seldom get more than three and a half per cent. interest for their money. This remarkable prosperity has no parallel in history. Let us try to explain the causes of it.

Causes of  
the prosper-  
ity of the  
company.

THE earliest success of the company was owing to their having the good fortune, in less than half a century,

tury, to take more than three hundred Portuguese vessels. These ships, some of which were bound for Europe, and others for different sea-ports in India, were laden with the spoils of Asia. This wealth, which the captors had the honesty not to meddle with, brought to the company immense returns, or served to procure them. Thus the sales were very considerable, though the exports were very moderate.

THE decline of the maritime power of the Portuguese, encouraged the Dutch to attack the settlements belonging to that nation, and greatly facilitated the conquests of them. They found the forts strongly built, defended by a numerous artillery, and provided with every thing that government and the rich individuals of a victorious nation might naturally be supposed to have collected together for their protection. To form a just idea of this advantage, we need only consider what it has cost other nations to obtain permission to fix in an advantageous situation, to build houses, magazines, and forts; and to procure all the conveniences necessary for their security, or their commerce.

WHEN the company found themselves in possession of so many rich and well established settlements, they did not give way to a grasping ambition. They were desirous of extending their commerce, not their conquests. They can hardly be accused of any instances of injustice, except those that seemed necessary to secure their power. The East was no longer a scene of bloodshed, as it had been at the time, when the desire of distinguishing themselves by martial exploits, and the rage of making proselytes, gave the Portuguese a menacing air wherever they appeared in the Indies.

THE Dutch seemed to have arrived rather to revenge, and rescue the natives of the country, than to enslave



**B O O K**  
**II.**

enslave them. They maintained no wars with them, but such as were necessary to procure settlements upon their coasts, and to oblige them to enter into treaties of commerce. It is true, these people received no advantage from them, and were deprived of a great part of their liberty; but in other respects, their new masters, rather less barbarous than the conquerors they dispossessed, left the Indians at liberty to govern themselves, and did not compel them to change their laws, their manners, or their religion.

By their manner of posting and distributing their forces, they contrived to keep the people in awe, whom they had at first conciliated by their behaviour. If we except Cochin and Malacca, they had nothing upon the continent but factories and small forts. The islands of Java and Ceylon contained their troops and magazines: and from thence their ships maintained their authority, and protected their trade throughout the Indies.

THIS trade became very considerable by the spices falling into their hands, after the destruction of the Portuguese settlements. The demand for this valuable article has been more or less extensive, according to circumstances. At present they sell every year a hundred and fifty thousand pounds of cloves in India, and three hundred and fifty thousand in Europe: the price in both parts of the world is fixed at ten livres (8*s.* 9*d.*) a pound. Though the Dutch give no more than eight sols, and a few deniers (about 8*d.*  $\frac{1}{2}$  or 9*d.*) a pound, it costs them four livres, six sols (about 3*s.* 9*d.*), on account of charges and deficiencies. India takes off no more than a hundred thousand weight of nutmegs, whereas Europe consumes two hundred and fifty thousand. It is bought at the rate of two sols, three deniers (about 1*d.*  $\frac{1}{3}$ ) a pound, and the necessary expences bring it

it to two livres, ten sols (2s. 2d.  $\frac{1}{4}$ ). It sells for seven livres, ten sols (6s. 6d.  $\frac{3}{4}$ ), on this side the cape, and for no more than five livres, twelve sols (4s. 10d.  $\frac{1}{4}$ ), on the other side. This difference will never induce any merchant to bring us the nutmeg; because the nuts that are sent all over Asia are shrivelled, have no oil in them, and often decay. Ten thousand pounds of mace is sufficient for the supply of India, a hundred thousand for that of Europe. The prime cost is sixteen sols, six deniers (about 8d.  $\frac{3}{4}$ ) a pound, it rises to five livres eight sols (about 4s. 8d.  $\frac{1}{2}$ ), and is sold every where at twelve livres sixteen sols (about 11s. 2d.  $\frac{1}{4}$ ). As for the cinnamon, the consumption of it in Europe does not exceed four hundred thousand weight, and in India does not amount to two hundred thousand; the greatest part of which is sent to Manilla for the use of Spanish America. It is every where sold by the company at present, at the rate of ten livres ten sols (about 9s. 2d.  $\frac{1}{4}$ ) a pound, though it does not cost them twelve sols (about 6d.  $\frac{1}{4}$ ). That which they refuse to purchase, as being too coarse, is made into oil. They make presents of it to the powers of Asia who do not chuse to purchase it: and it sells here from about twenty to fifty or sixty livres (17s. 6d. to 2l. 12s. 6d.) an ounce. The smell is so strong, and at the same time so agreeable, that it would be commonly, if not universally used, if the Dutch did not ask so high a price for it: it being more for their advantage to sell this spice in its original form.

We cannot conclude this important article without observing, that in proportion as the company's profits have decreased, they have raised the price of spices both in India and Europe. This, though in itself a bad expedient, has not injured in any great degree, however,

**B O O K**  
**II.**

however, the sale of cloves and nutmeg, for which there is no succedaneum. But the case has been otherwise in regard to cinnamon. A spurious kind has, in several markets, been substituted for the genuine; and this branch of commerce is visibly on the decline, and will continue to be more so every day.

THE company have spared no pains to preserve the exclusive trade of pepper, which they held for some time. Though their attempts have not been quite successful, they have so far gained their point, as to maintain a considerable superiority over their competitors. The quantity they sell of this article in Europe amounts to five millions weight, and three millions five hundred weight in India. The company purchase it, upon the whole, at thirty-six livres (1*l.* 11*s.* 6*d.*) a hundred weight, and sell it to us at a hundred livres, (4*l.* 7*s.* 6*d.*) and from forty-eight to seventy-two livres, (about 2*l.* 12*s.* 6*d.* on an average.) to the people of Asia.

IN consequence of the sale of spices, the greatest part of the India trade must of course fall into the hands of the Dutch. The necessity of exporting them, gave them an opportunity of appropriating to themselves several other branches of commerce. In process of time they became masters of the coasting trade of Asia, as they were already of that of Europe. This navigation employed a great number of ships and sailors, who without causing any expence to the company contributed to its security.

By virtue of these superior advantages, they were enabled, for a long time, to prevent the attempts of other nations to interfere in the Indian trade, or to make them abortive. The produce of this rich country came to the Europeans through the hands of the Dutch: who never experienced those restraints from their country,

try, which have in later times been imposed every where else. The government, convinced that the proceedings of other nations neither ought, nor could be a rule to direct theirs, always gave the company leave to dispose of their merchandize at the capital freely, and without reserve. At the time this society was instituted, the united provinces had neither any manufactures nor crude materials to work upon. It was, therefore, at that time, no inconvenience, but rather a point of great policy, to allow, and even encourage, the citizens to wear linens and stuffs imported from India. The various manufactures which were introduced into the republic, in consequence of the repeal of the edict of Nantz, might have induced them to lay aside the thoughts of purchasing their cloathing from so remote a country; but the fondness that prevailed in Europe at that time for French fashions, had given so advantageous an opening for the manufactures of the refugees, that they had not the least idea of departing from the ancient channel. Since the high price of labour, the necessary consequence of a redundancy of cash, has lessened the manufactures, and obliged the nation to trade upon a frugal plan, India stuffs have had a greater run than ever. It was thought that fewer inconveniencies would arise from enriching the Indians than the English or French, whose prosperity would not fail to hasten the ruin of a state, whose opulence is only supported by the rashness, the disputes, or indolence of other powers.

THIS wise conduct has retarded the decline of the company; but the change is at last effected, notwithstanding the flattering illusions of an imaginary prosperity. A detail of facts will set this truth in a clear light.

WE have seen that the original fund of the company, which has never been since augmented, was no more than

**B O O K**  
**II.**

than 12,919,680 livres. (565,236*l.*) With this slender capital, they attacked the Spaniards and Portuguese in the Indian seas, gained conquests over these, then war-like nations, and over the people of Asia, whose numbers, at least, rendered them formidable; they formed magazines, built cities, and erected forts without number; and established or supported their commerce by force of arms. These amazing expences lasted from its first institution till the year 1665, the era when all their acquisitions were made, all their settlements formed. During this long and restless period, the annual return, amounted to twenty and three-fourths per cent.

THE company had afterwards no occasion to send one fleet after another unto the east, to assert the dominion of those seas, to raise new armies to subdue or awe their enemies, or to lavish their blood and treasure in securing their possessions. Their operations were only those of a brisk and advantageous commerce; and, consequently, their dividend, till the year 1748, increased to about three and twenty per cent. It has since that time gradually fallen to twenty, fifteen, and even lower. We foresee a still farther reduction. It is necessary to state the reasons of this conjecture.

It is demonstrated, that at the closing of the books in 1751, the capital of the company in India did not amount to more than 71,000,000 livres, (3,106,250*l.*) the fleet that was on its way to Europe stood then in 19,200,000, (840,000*l.*) and the vessels fitted out for India in 3,000,000 of livres. (131,250*l.*) They had a debt of 14,000,000 of livres (612,500*l.*) in India, and were 22,400,000 livres (980,000*l.*) in arrears in Europe. Consequently the stock of the company, exclusive of their fortifications, did not exceed 56,800,000 livres. (2,485,000*l.*)

Or

Of this sum, inconsiderable as it was, there were only 23,400,000 livres (1,023,750*l.*) in commercial effects; that is to say, ready money, merchandize, and good debts. The remainder consisted of bad debts to the amount of three millions, (131,250*l.*) and of doubtful ones to the amount of 6,600,000 livres; (288,750*l.*) 8,000,000 livres (350,000*l.*) allotted for provision for the table; 1,400,000 (61,250*l.*) for brass cannon; for iron ordnance, bullets, and balls, 500,000; (21,875*l.*) for muskets and ammunition 1,800,000; (78,750*l.*) for plate 200,000; (8,750*l.*) for slaves 300,000; (13,125*l.*) for cattle and horses 200,000; (8,750*l.*) and for goods entered from different parts of India for Batavia 11,200,000 livres. (490,000*l.*)

It remains to examine what profits the company have been able to make with so weak a capital. Their gains, as far as it is possible to compute them, annually amount to 25,400,000 livres, (1,111,250*l.*) but their ordinary expences amount to 18,600,000, (813,750*l.*) and their dividend, supposing it to be twenty-five per cent. to 3,330,000; (145,687*l.* 10*s.*) consequently they have only 470,000 livres (20,562*l.* 10*s.*) remaining, to defray the expence of war, the loss of their magazines by fire, or their vessels by sea, and all that train of evils which human prudence can neither foresee nor prevent.

This state of the matter must appear to those who see things at a distance, to have so little probability, that we should not have ventured to warrant the truth of it, if we had not before us governor-general Mossel's correspondence with the direction. This discerning and able administrator considers the company as an exhausted body that is sustained by cordials: it is, as he expresses himself, a leaky vessel, that is kept from foundering only by the pump.

**B O O K**  
**II.**

THIS deplorable situation, which will reduce the company to the necessity of borrowing money upon their capital, or of lessening their dividend still more, if any new misfortune should happen, must have had its causes, and those too very considerable. The most obvious of all is the multitude of petty wars which have followed each other without interruption.

Reasons of  
the decline  
of the  
company.

THE inhabitants of the Moluccas had scarce recovered from the astonishment into which they had been thrown by the victories gained by the Dutch, over a people whom they looked upon as invincible, when they grew impatient of the yoke. The company, dreading the consequences of this discontent, made war upon the king of Ternate, to oblige him to consent to the extirpation of the clove-tree every where except in Amboyna. The islanders in Banda were utterly exterminated, because they refused to become their slaves. Macassar, in order to support their interests, kept up a considerable force for a long time. The loss of Formosa brought on the ruin of the factories of Tonkin and Siam. They were obliged to take up arms to support the exclusive trade of Sumatra. Malacca was besieged, its territory ravaged, and its navigation interrupted by pirates. Negapatan was twice attacked; Cochbin was engaged in resisting the attempts of the kings of Calicut and Travancor; Ceylon has been a scene of perpetual disturbances; which are full as frequent, and still more violent at Jaya, where peace can never continue long, unless the company will give a reasonable price for the commodities they require. They have engaged in bloody contests with an European nation, whose power in India increases every day, and whose character is not that of moderation. All these wars have proved ruinous, more ruinous, indeed, than might have been expected, because those who had the management

management of them only sought opportunities of enriching themselves.

THESE notorious dissensions, have in many places been followed by odious oppressions; which have been practised at Japan, China, Cambodia, Arrackan, on the banks of the Ganges, at Achem, Coromandel, Surat in Persia, at Bassora, Mocho, and other places. The greatest part of the countries in India are filled with tyrants who prefer piracy to commerce, who acknowledge no right but that of power, and think that whatever is practicable, is just.

THE profits accruing to the company from the places where their trade met with no interruption, for a long time counterbalanced the losses they sustained in others by tyranny or anarchy: but other European nations deprived them of this indemnification. This competition obliged them to buy dearer, and to sell cheaper. Their natural advantages might, perhaps, have enabled them to support this misfortune, if their rivals had not determined to throw the trade of India to India into the hands of private merchants. By this expression we are to understand the operations necessary to transport the merchandise of one country in Asia to another in Asia; from China, Bengal, and Surat, for instance, to the Philippines, Persia, and Arabia. By means of this circulation, by a multiplicity of exchanges, the Dutch obtained for nothing, or for a trifle, the rich cargoes they brought to Europe. The activity, oeconomy and skill of the free merchants drove the company from all the sea-ports where equal favour was shewn. Their flag was seldom seen in the roads where eight or ten English vessels appeared.

THIS revolution, which so clearly pointed out to them what steps they had to take, did not set them right with respect to a measure that was destructive to trade.

Q 2

They



**B O O K**  
**II.**

They had been accustomed to carry all their Indian and European merchandise to Batavia, from whence it was distributed among the different factories who sold it to advantage. This custom occasioned expence and loss of time, the inconvenience of which were not perceived while their profits were so enormous. When other nations carried on a direct trade, it became indispensably necessary to relinquish a system, not only bad in itself, but incompatible with circumstances. The dominion of custom, however, still prevails; and it was said to be owing to the company's apprehensions that their servants would make an ill use of any innovation, that they did not adopt a measure, the necessity of which was so fully demonstrated.

This motive was probably nothing more than a pretext which served as a cover to private interest. The frauds of the commissaries were more than winked at. The principal ones had for the most part been exact in their conduct. They were under the direction of admirals who visited all the factories, were invested with absolute powers in India, and, at the conclusion of every voyage, gave an account in Europe of their administration. In proportion as the government became less active, the agents, who were not so strictly watched, grew more remiss. They abandoned themselves to effeminacy, a habit of which is easily contracted in hot countries. The number of these persons was obliged to be increased: and no one made a capital point of correcting an abuse, which gave the people in power an opportunity of providing for their dependents. They went to Asia with a view of making a considerable fortune in a short time. Being prohibited from trading; their appointments not being sufficient to maintain them, and all honest ways of enriching themselves being shut against them, they had recourse to malpractices. The company were  
cheated

cheated in all their affairs by factors who had no interest in their prosperity. These disorders grew to such a height, that it was proposed to allow a premium of five per cent. upon all commodities sold or bought, which was to be divided among all the servants according to their ranks. Upon these terms, they were obliged to take an oath that their account was just. This arrangement lasted but five years; it being found that corruption prevailed as much as ever: the premium and the oath were abolished; and from this period the agents ask any consideration for their trouble that their avarice hath prompted them to.

THE contagion, which at first infected the lower factories, gradually reached the principal settlements, and, at last, Batavia itself. So great a simplicity prevailed there at first, that the members of the government usually dressed like common sailors, and never wore decent cloaths but in their council-chamber. This modesty was accompanied with so distinguished a probity, that before the year 1650, not one remarkable fortune had been made: but this unheard-of prodigy of virtue could not be of long duration. We have seen warlike republics conquer and make acquisitions for their country, and fill the public treasury with the spoils of kingdoms. But we shall never see the citizens of a commercial republic amass riches, for a particular body in the state, from which they derive neither glory, nor profit. The austerity of republican principles must of course give place to the example of the people of the east. This relaxation of manners was more sensibly perceived in the capital of the colony, where the articles of luxury that came from all parts, and the air of magnificence it was thought necessary to throw round the administration, introduced a taste for shew. This taste occasioned a corruption of manners; and this corrup-

**B O O K**  
**II.**

tion of manners made all methods of getting money alike indifferent. Even the appearance of decency was so far disregarded, that a governor-general finding himself convicted of plundering the finances without mercy, made no scruple of justifying his conduct by shewing a carte blanche signed by the company.

How could the conduct of the governors be remedied when their depravation could not be foreseen in the infancy of the republic, where a purity of manners and frugality prevailed? In these settlements of the Dutch, the laws had been made for virtuous men; other manners required other laws.

THESE disorders might have been repressed in their first beginnings, if they had not naturally made the same progress in Europe as in Asia. But as a river that overflows its banks collects more mud than water in its passage, so the vices which riches bring along with them, increase faster than riches themselves. The post of director, which was at first allotted to able merchants, was, at length, vested in great families, where it is held with the magistracies, by virtue of which it was first procured. These families, engaged in political views, or in the service of administration, considered these posts, which they had ravished from the company, only in the light of a considerable income, or an easy provision for their relations; some of them even as opportunities of making a bad use of their credit. The business of receiving accounts, hearing debates and carrying on the most important transactions of the company, was left to a secretary, who, under the plausible title of advocate, became the sole manager of all the affairs. The governors, who met but twice a year, in spring and autumn, at the arrival and departure of the fleets, forgot the habit and track of all business which requires a constant attention. They were obliged to repose an in-  
tire

tire confidence in a person appointed by the state to make extracts from all the dispatches that arrived from India, and to draw up the form of the answers that were to be returned. This guide, who was sometimes incapable, often bribed, and always suspicious, frequently led those he had the conducting of the brink of a precipice where he left them to fall.

THE spirit of commerce arises from interest, and interest always occasions disputes. Each chamber wanted to have docks, arsenals, and magazines, for the ships they were to fit out. Offices were multiplied, and frauds were encouraged by so wrong a proceeding.

It was a maxim in every department to furnish goods as it had a right to do, in proportion to its armaments. These goods were not alike proper for the places for which they were destined, and were either not sold at all, or sold to disadvantage.

WHEN circumstances called for extraordinary supplies, a spirit of puerile vanity, which is afraid of betraying its weakness by confessing its wants, led them to avoid borrowing money in Holland, where they would have paid only an interest of three per cent; and to have recourse to Batavia, where money was at six, or more frequently to Bengal, or the coast of Coromandel, where it was at nine per cent. and sometimes much higher. Abuses were multiplied on all sides.

THE states-general, whose business it was to examine, every three years, into the state of the company; to satisfy themselves that they kept within the limits assigned by their grant; to see that justice was administered to the persons concerned; and that the trade was carried on in a manner that was not prejudicial to the republic; might, and ought to have, put a stop to these irregularities. Whatever their reasons might be, this was never done. In consequence of this behaviour,

**B O O K**  
**II.**

they had the mortification to see the proprietors unite in conferring upon the last stadtholder the supreme direction of their affairs in Europe and India, without being aware of the danger that might result from the influence that a perpetual president of the state must have over a rich and powerful body. Notwithstanding this, the dividend is at this time larger, and the price of stocks higher. A certain premature death, has drawn a veil over the plan of reformation that had been concerted. Necessity will oblige them to resume it, with such wise precautions, no doubt, as may prevent the abuse of that power, against which they think themselves bound to protest.

Measures  
 that remain  
 to be taken  
 for the re-  
 establish-  
 ment of  
 the com-  
 pany's af-  
 fairs.

THE first step must be, to convince themselves that the government of the company is too complicated even in Europe. A direction vested in so many chambers, and in such a number of directors, must be attended with infinite inconveniences. It is impossible that the same spirit should operate every where alike, and that the transactions should be carried on without receiving a tincture from the opposite views of the persons who conduct them in different places, without concert or connection. Unity of design, so necessary in the fine arts, is equally advantageous in business. It will be in vain objected that it is the interest of all democratical states to divide their wealth, and to make the estates of the citizens as equal as possible. This maxim in itself true, is not applicable to a republic that has no territory, and maintains itself merely by its commerce. It will therefore be expedient that every article bought or sold should fall under one general inspection, and be brought into one port. The savings that would be made, would be the least advantage the company would receive from this alteration.

FROM

FROM this place, which would be the center of intelligence from all quarters, deputations might be sent to inquire into, and correct abuses in the remotest parts of Asia. The conduct of the Dutch towards the Indian princes, from whom they have forcibly extorted an exclusive commerce; will be one of the first objects of their consideration. They have, for a long time, behaved towards them with an insolent pride; have attempted to learn the secrets of their government; and to engage them in quarrels with their neighbours; they have fomented divisions among their subjects, and shewn a distrust mixed with animosity; they have obliged them to make sacrifices which they never promised; and deprived them of advantages secured to them by the terms of capitulation. All these intolerable acts of tyranny, occasion frequent disturbances, which sometimes end in hostilities. To restore harmony, which is a task that grows more necessary and more difficult every day, agents should be appointed, who, to a spirit of moderation, join a knowledge of the interests, customs, language, religion, and manners of these nations. At present, perhaps, the company may be unprovided with persons of this character: but it concerns them to procure them. Perhaps too they might find them among the superintendants of their factories, which they have every reason to induce them to abandon.

THE discerning part of the merchants of all nations unanimously agree, that the Dutch settlements in India are too numerous: and that by lessening their number, they would greatly reduce their expences, without confining their commerce. The company cannot possibly be ignorant of what is so generally known. One would be apt to think, they were induced to continue the factories that were chargeable to them, to prevent a suspicion that they were not in a condition to maintain them.

But

**B O O K**  
**II.**

But this weak consideration should sway them no longer. All that deserves their attention, is to make a due distinction between what it is convenient to part with, and advantageous to retain. They have before them a series of facts and experiments, which must prevent any mistake in an arrangement of such importance.

In the subordinate factories, which they may think proper to continue for the advantage of trade, they will demolish all useless fortifications; they will dissolve the councils established out of ostentation rather than necessity: and they will proportion the number of their servants to the extent of their business. Let the company call to mind those happy times, when two or three factors chosen with judgment, sent out cargoes infinitely more considerable than any they have received since; when they raised amazing profits upon their goods, which, in process of time, have been diverted into the pockets of their numerous agents; and then they will not hesitate a moment to return to their old maxims, and to prefer a simplicity which made them rich, to an empty parade that ruins them. These disorders were owing to their own misconduct. The Europeans, settled in their colonies, lived in disgrace if they were not engaged in their service. Every expedient was tried to extricate themselves from a state of humiliation which it was impossible to endure. The superintendants suffered themselves to be corrupted; and employments were multiplied without necessity and without measure. Let them discountenance a prejudice, which, in whatever light it is viewed, is unjust and pernicious; and the reformation we are pointing out will easily be accomplished.

It will be attended with greater difficulties in the large colonies. The company's agents there are a more numerous, reputable, and in proportion, a more opulent body, and consequently less disposed to submit to any regulations.

gulations. It is, however, necessary to reduce them to order: since the abuses they have either introduced, or winked at, must sooner or later inevitably bring on the ruin of the interests, over which they preside. The mismanagement that prevails in the work-shops, magazines, docks, and arsenals at Batavia, and other large settlements, is scarcely to be paralleled. The mal-practices of the superintendants and subordinate officers are so notorious, that according to the most favourable representations, at least two thirds might be saved if the buildings, works and repairs were executed by contract.

THESE arrangements would lead to others still more considerable. At their first rise, the company established fixed and precise rules, which were not to be departed from on any pretence, or on any occasion whatsoever. Their servants were mere machines, the smallest movements of which were wound up before-hand. They judged this absolute and universal direction necessary to correct what was amiss in the choice of their agents, who were most of them drawn out of obscurity, and had not the advantage of that careful education which would have enlarged their ideas. The company themselves did not suffer the least variation in their own conduct, and to this invariable uniformity, they attributed the success of their enterprises. The frequent misfortunes, which this system occasioned, did not prevail with them to lay it aside; and they always adhered obstinately to their first plan. In this they were not guided by reflection, but followed a blind impulse. At this time of the day, when they can no longer commit errors with impunity, it is necessary they should make some alterations. Tired of maintaining a disadvantageous struggle with the free traders of other nations, they should resolve to leave the commerce from  
one

B O O K  
II.



**B O O K**  
**II.**

one part of India to another, to private persons. This happy innovation would make their colonies richer and more powerful. They themselves would reap more advantage from the customs that would be paid in their factories, than they receive from the faint efforts of an expiring commerce. Every thing, even the ships that are too old to be sent to Europe, would turn to account. The navigators in these settlements would be glad to make use of them in those calm seas.

PERHAPS the company might carry the plan of reformation still further. Would it not be a proper scheme to resign the trade of linens exported to Europe to individuals? Those who are acquainted with their operations; know very well that they gain no more than thirty per cent. by this article, which is always sold to them at a dear rate by their agents, though it is bought with their own money. If we deduct from this profit, the averages, the interest of advance-money, the salaries of the commissaries, and the hazards at sea, the remainder will be very trifling. Would not twenty per cent. freight, which the free merchants would readily give, be of greater advantage to the company?

THEY would then be released from the cares and restraints of their present commerce, and the port of Batavia would be open to all nations; who would load their ships with the merchandize of Europe; with the goods bought by the company, at a low price, of the Indian princes, with whom they carry on an exclusive trade; and with the spices destined for all the sea-ports in Asia, where the consumption would necessarily increase. The sacrifice they would make to the general freedom of trade, would be amply rewarded by the certain, easy and advantageous sale of spices in Europe. The progress of corruption would be stopt by adhering

to so plain a rule of administration ; and order would be established on such firm grounds, that it would require but little care to preserve it. BOOK  
II.

THE necessity of making the internal arrangements we propose, is so much the more urgent, as the company are in imminent danger of losing the constituent part of their power, and of having the spice trade taken from them.

It is confidently reported that the clove-tree is no longer to be found any where but at Amboyna ; but this is a mistake. Before the Dutch got possession of the Moluccas, properly so called, all the islands in this archipelago were covered with these trees : they ordered them to be pulled up, and continue to send two sloops, each having twelve soldiers on board, with orders to destroy it wherever it made its appearance. But not to lay any stress here upon the baseness of such avarice, which counteracts the bounty of nature, these extirpators, with all their industry, can only execute their commission upon the coast. Were three hundred men to be continually employed in traversing the forests, they would not be able fully to answer the intention of their employers. The earth rebels against this devastation, and seems to resist the wickedness of men. The clove springs up under the instrument that destroys it, and mocks the unfeeling industry of the Dutch, who wish to see nothing grow but for themselves. The English that are settled at Sumatra have, for some years, sent cloves to their mother country, which they obtain from the inhabitants of Bally, who gather them in places where, it is pretended, they no longer exist.

It is equally a mistake that the nutmeg-tree is confined to Banda : it grows in New Guinea, and in the islands that lie near that coast. The Malays, the only people who held any correspondence with these fierce nations.

**B O O K**  
**II.**

nations, have carried the produce of this tree to Batavia; the precautions that have been taken to conceal the knowledge of this fact have only served the more fully to confirm it; and its truth is supported by so many attestations, that it is impossible to entertain a doubt of it.

If, however, the certainty of these facts should be called in question; if either habit or tradition should make it believed that the Spaniards settled at the Philippines could not, with great advantage to themselves, easily procure the clove and nutmeg-tree; it must on all hands be acknowledged, that, in these remote seas, an event has happened, which merits a serious attention. The strait of Lombok has been discovered by the English: in consequence of this discovery, they have penetrated as far as Saffara, which lies between New Guinea and the Molucca Islands. This island is found to be in the same latitude, to have the same soil, and the same climate, with those that produce the spices, and they have formed a settlement upon it. Is it credible that this active and persevering nation will lose sight of the only object they can propose to themselves from this situation? or that they will be discouraged by the obstacles they may meet with? Could we suppose the company so little acquainted with the character of their rivals, their situation would no longer be doubtful; it would be desperate.

SETTING aside this contest between trading interests, the Dutch have reason to be apprehensive of one of a slower and more destructive kind. All circumstances, particularly their manner of conducting their forces both by sea and land, conspire to invite their enemies to attack them.

THE company have a fleet of about a hundred ships, from six hundred to a thousand tons burthens. Twenty-eight or thirty are annually sent out from Europe, and a smaller

a smaller number returns. Those that are not in a condition to return, make voyages in India, where the seas, except those in the neighbourhood of Japan, are so calm, that weaker vessels may sail in them with safety. In times of profound peace the ships sail separately, but on their return they always form two fleets at the cape, which come by the Orcades, where two ships belonging to the Republic wait to convoy them to Holland. In time of war this detour was contrived to avoid the enemy's privateers; and they continue to make use of it in time of peace, to prevent contraband trade. It was found difficult to procure sailors who would encounter the cold blasts of the north, after being used to hot climates; but this difficulty was surmounted, by offering two months pay extraordinary. This custom has been continued even when contrary winds or storms drove the fleets into the channel. The chamber of Amsterdam attempted but once to suppress this custom; but they were in danger of being burnt by the populace, who, like the rest of the nation, disapproved of the arbitrary proceedings of the company, and lamented their exclusive privilege. The company's navy is commanded by officers who were originally sailors or cabin-boys; they are qualified for pilots, and for working a ship, but they have not the least notion of naval evolutions, not to mention that from the defects of their education they can have no idea of the love of glory, or of inculcating it into that class of men who are under their command.

THEIR conduct is still worse with regard to their land forces. Soldiers who have deserted from every nation in Europe may, indeed, be expected not to want courage; but their provision and clothing is so bad, and they are so much harassed, that they are averse from the service. The officers, who, for the most part, originally belonged to some low profession, in which they got a sum sufficient to purchase their posts, are incapable of  
infusing

B O O K  
II.

infusing into them a military spirit. > The contempt in which a people purely commercial hold those whose situation dooms them to an involuntary power, together with their aversion from war, contributes greatly to degrade and dispirit them. To these several causes of their inactivity, weakness, and want of discipline, may be subjoined another, which is equally applicable both to the land and sea service.

THERE is not, perhaps, in the most slavish governments so dishonourable and iniquitous a mode of raising seamen and soldiers, as that which has, for a long time, been practised by the company. Their agents, called by the people *vendeurs d'ames* (kidnappers) who are always busy in the territories, and even beyond the boundaries of the republick, make it their employment to intice credulous men to embark for India, in hopes of making a considerable fortune in a short time. Those who are allured by the bait are enrolled, and receive two months pay, which is always given to their betrayer. They enter into an engagement of three hundred livres, (13l. 2s. 6d.) which is the profit of the person that enlists them, who is obliged by this agreement to furnish them with some clothes worth about a tenth part of that sum. The debt is secured by one of the company's bills, but it is never paid unless the debtor lives long enough to discharge it out of his pay.

A COMPANY which supports itself, notwithstanding this contempt for the military order and with soldiers so corrupted, should enable us to determine the progress which the arts of negociation have made in these latter ages. It has ever been necessary to supply the want of strength by treaties, by patience, by moderation, and by artifice; but republicans should be well informed, that such a state can only be a precarious one, and that political measures how well soever they may be combined, are not always able to resist the torrent  
of

of violence and the necessity of circumstances. The company should have troops composed of citizens, which is by no means impossible. It can never inspire that public spirit of enthusiasm for glory which it has not itself. In this respect it is the same with a company as with a government, which should form its troops upon those principles only that are the basis of its own constitution. Oeconomy, and the desire of gain are the principles of administration adopted by the company. These are the motives that should attach the soldier to their service. As he is engaged in commercial expeditions, he should be assured of a reward proportioned to the means he hath exerted in forwarding their success, and his pay should be made out to him in stock. Then personal interest, far from weakening the general intentions, will only serve to strengthen them.

If these reflections should not prevail upon the company to alter this important part of their administration, let them at least be awakened by the prospect of the dangers that threaten them. If they were attacked in India, they would be deprived of their settlements there in less time than it has taken them to wrest them from the Portuguese. Their best towns have neither covert ways, nor glacis, nor outworks, and would not hold out a week. They are never stocked with provisions, though they are always filled with warlike stores. There are not more than ten thousand men, whites and blacks, to defend them and there should be double that number. These disadvantages would not be compensated by the resources of the navy. The company has not a single vessel of the line in all its ports, and it would be impossible to arm the merchantmen as ships of war. The largest of those that return to Europe have not one hundred men; and if the men dispersed in all the ships that sail to India were collected, there would not be a sufficient number to form one single ship's crew. Any man accustomed to calcu-

B O O K  
II.

late probable events would not scruple to say, that the power of the Dutch might be annihilated in Asia, before the state could come to the assistance of the company. The only basis upon which this apparently gigantic Colossus is fixed, is the Molucca islands. Six men of war and fifteen hundred land forces would be more than sufficient to secure the conquest of them, which might be effected either by the French or the English.

If the French should form this enterprize, their squadron might sail from the isle of France, and bear down upon Ternate, where a commencement of hostilities would give the first intelligence of its arrival in those seas. A fort without outworks, and which might be battered from the ships, would not make much resistance. Amboyna which formerly had a rampart, a bad ditch, and four small bastions, has been so frequently demolished by earthquakes, that it cannot be in a condition to put a stop to an enterprising enemy for two days. Banda has its peculiar difficulties. There is no bottom round these islands, and there are such violent currents, that if two or three channels which lead up to it were missed, the vessels would be unavoidably carried away under the wind. But this might be easily prevented by the pilots of Amboyna. There is nothing more to attack than a wall without a ditch, or a covert way, defended only by four bastions in bad condition. A small fort erected upon an eminence that commands the place, could not defend itself four and twenty hours.

ALL those who have seen the Moluccas, and examined them attentively, agree, that they would not hold out one month against the forces we have mentioned. If, as it is probable, the garrisons, which are not half so numerous as they ought to be, and exasperated with the manner in which they are treated, should refuse to fight, or should make but a feeble resistance, the conquest

quest would be more rapid. To secure it as firmly as it deserves, it would be necessary to take possession of Batavia; a circumstance not so difficult as it may seem to be. The squadron, with the soldiers that were not left in garrison, and as many of the Dutch troops as should have joined the conqueror, with a timely reinforcement of eight or nine hundred men, would infallibly accomplish this enterprize, of which we shall be convinced if we have a just idea of Batavia. BOOK  
II.

THE most common obstacle to the besieging of maritime places is the difficulty of landing; which is by no means the case at the capital of Java. Governor-general Imhoff, who was apprized of this circumstance, attempted in vain to remedy it, by constructing a fort at the mouth of the river which embellishes the city. If these works, erected at a great expence by persons of no skill, had even been brought to perfection, they would not have improved the situation much: the landing, which would have been made impracticable in one place, would always have been open by means of several rivers that empty themselves into the road, and are all navigable by sloops.

THE troops being once formed upon land would find nothing but an immense city without a covert way, defended by a rampart, and by some low and irregular bastions, surrounded by a ditch formed on one side by a river, and on the other by some marshy canals, which might easily be filled with running water; it was formerly defended by a citadel; but Imhoff, by building between the city and this fortress, some extensive and high barracks, intercepted the communication. He was afterwards told of this blunder, and he could think of no better way of rectifying it, than to demolish two half bastions of the fortress, looking towards the city. Since that time they have been joined to each other.



BOOK  
II.

BUT if the fortifications were as perfect as they are bad; if the artillery, which is immense were directed by men of judgment; if even Cohorn or Vauban were substituted in the room of those unskilful persons, who have now the charge of the works, the place could not hold out. It would require at least four thousand men to defend it, and there are seldom more than six hundred. Neither indeed are the Dutch so ignorant as to place their confidence in so feeble a garrison: they depend much more upon the inundations they are able to raise by opening the sluices that confine several small rivers. They imagine that these inundations would retard the operations of the siege, and would destroy the besiegers by the distempers they would occasion. With a little more reflection they would discover, that the place must surrender, before these drainings had taken effect.

THE plan of conquest that France might form, would equally suit the interests of Great Britain, with this difference, that the English would in the first place make themselves masters of the Cape of Good Hope, an excellent harbour, which they are in want of for their voyages to the Indies.

THE Cape may be attacked in two places; the first is Table Bay, at the extremity of which the fort is situated. It is an open road, where the violence of the sea is broken only by a small island, and is so bad in the months of June, July, August and September, that in 1722 twenty-five ships were lost there, and seven in 1736. Though all navigators prefer it in the other seasons of the year, on account of the accommodations they find there, it is probable that a landing would not be attempted here, because the two sides of the harbour are covered with batteries, which it would be hazardous, and perhaps, impossible to silence. False Bay would undoubtedly be preferable, which though at thirty leagues distance from

from the former by sea, is yet no more than three leagues from the capital on the land side. The landing would be effected quietly in this place of security, and the troops would gain, without opposition an eminence which commands the fort. As this citadel in other respects confined is only defended by a garrison of three or four hundred men at most, it might be reduced in less than a day's time by a few bombs. The inhabitants of the colony dispersed throughout an immense space, and separated from each other by deserts, would not have time to come to its relief. Perhaps, they would not if it were even in their power. We may be allowed to suppose that the oppression under which they groan, may make them wish for a change of government. The loss of the Cape would, perhaps, render it impossible for the company to convey to India the succours necessary for the defence of their settlements, or would at least make those succours less certain and more expensive. The English, on the contrary, would draw great conveniences, even immense advantages from this conquest, if the spirit of monopoly, which reason and humanity will always oppose, could once be laid aside.

THE British colonies of North America have iron, wood, rice, sugar, and a hundred other articles of consumption, which the Cape is entirely without. They might be conveyed thither, and wines and brandy received in exchange. The soil and climate of this part of Africa are so favourable to the cultivation of the vine, that an immense extent of land may be allotted to it. If a regular consumption could be established, we should soon see a space of two hundred leagues covered with vineyards. Toleration, and the mildness of the government; the prospect of a comfortable situation

**B O O K**  
**II.**

would attract cultivators from all quarters. They would soon be in a condition to furnish wholesome and agreeable liquors in plenty to British America, and, perhaps, the metropolis itself might one day supply itself with wine from the same plentiful source, which it unwillingly purchases from France.

If the republic of Holland should not consider as imaginary the dangers to which our love of the general good of nations makes us apprehend her commerce may be exposed, she ought to omit no precaution to prevent them. She must constantly keep in mind, that the company, from its beginning to the year 1722, has received about fifteen hundred ships, the freight of which amounted in India to 703,366,000 livres, (30,772,262*l.* 10*s.*) and has been sold in Europe for double that sum: that by sending 6,000,000 of livres (262,500*l.*) into India, annual returns of 40,000,000 (1,750,000*l.*) are procured, only the fifth part of which at most is consumed in the united provinces; that at the renewal of each grant, the company has given considerable sums to the republic; that it has assisted the state whenever it has stood in need of assistance; that it has raised a multitude of private fortunes, which have prodigiously increased the riches of the nation; in short that it has doubled, perhaps, trebled the activity of the metropolis, by furnishing it with frequent opportunities of forming great enterprizes.

THE company customarily pay to the state duties of import for all the merchandise they receive from India. By a regulation of the 10th of July 1677, they are annually to pay thirty-two thousand livres (1,400*l.*) in lieu of the duties of export. They obtained the renewal of their grant in 1743, with this formal stipulation, that the republic should receive three per cent. upon the dividend. It is thought, however, that the govern-  
ment

ment have a right to derive greater advantages from an exclusive privilege of such importance.

**B O O K**  
**II.**

It has always been acknowledged by all nations whatever the form of their government might be, that the estates acquired in any country ought to contribute to the expences of government. The reason of this grand maxim is evident to all capacities. Private fortunes are so essentially connected with the prosperity of the public, that when that is injured the others must suffer of course. Thus, when the subjects of a state serve it with their fortunes or their persons, they do nothing but defend their own private interest. The prosperity of the country is the prosperity of each citizen. This maxim, which is true in all governments, has a particular propriety when applied to free societies.

FURTHER than this, there are bodies of men, whose interest, either from the nature of those bodies, their extensive relations, or the variety of their views, are more essentially connected with the common interest. Of this kind is the India company in Holland. The enemies to its trade are enemies to the republic; and its security is established on the same basis with that of the state.

IN the opinion of men of the best discernment, the national debt has sensibly weakened the United Provinces, and affected the general welfare, by gradually increasing the load of taxes. The republic can never be restored to its original splendor, till it is released from the enormous burthen under which it groans; and this relief can only be expected from a company, which it has always encouraged, protected and favoured. To place this powerful body in a situation to render the highest services to the country, it will by no means be necessary to reduce the profits of the proprietors;

**B O O K**  
**II.**

prietors; it will be sufficient to bring it back to those principles of oeconomy and simplicity, and to that plan of administration, which laid the foundation of its early prosperity.

Former  
 good con-  
 duct of the  
 Dutch,  
 and their  
 present de-  
 generacy.

A REFORMATION so necessary will admit of no delay. This confidence is due to a government, which has always endeavoured to maintain a great number of citizens within itself, and to employ only a small part of them in its distant settlements. It is at the expence of all Europe that Holland has continually increased the number of its subjects. the liberty of conscience allowed there, and the moderation of the laws, have attracted all persons who were oppressed in a hundred different places by a spirit of intolerance and the severity of government.

THE republic has procured means of subsistence to all persons who have been willing to settle and work among them: we have seen at different times the inhabitants of a country ruined by war, seeking security and employment in Holland.

AGRICULTURE could never be a considerable object in Holland, although the land is cultivated to as great a degree of perfection as possible. But the herring fishery supplies the place of agriculture. This is a new method of subsistence, a school for seamen. Born upon the waters, they plough the sea, from whence they get their food: they grow familiar with the storms, and learn without risque, to overcome dangers.

THE traffic of transport which the republic continually carries on from one European nation to another, is also a kind of navigation, which, without destroying men, supplies them with subsistence by labour.

IN short, navigation which depopulates a part of Europe, peoples Holland. It is as it were the produce of  
 the

the country. Her ships are her landed estates, which she makes the most of, at the expence of the stranger.

B O O K  
II.

THE elegant accomodations of life are known in Holland without being an object of pursuit: the refinements of behaviour are adopted with moderation; those of caprice they are unacquainted with. A spirit of order, frugality, and even avarice prevails throughout the nation, and has been carefully kept up by the government.

THE colonies are conducted by the same spirit. They are peopled in general with the scum of the nation or with foreigners; but rigid laws, an equitable administration, an easy subsistence, and useful labour soon infuse morals into these men who were exiled from Europe, because they wanted them.

THE same design of preserving the population prevails in the military system; the republic entertains a great number of foreign troops in Europe; and some in the colonies.

THE sailors in Holland are well paid; and foreign seamen are constantly employed either on board their trading vessels, or their men of war.

FOR the purposes of commerce, it is necessary that harmony should be preserved at home, and peace abroad. No people, except the Swiss, take more care to keep on good terms with their neighbours; and they endeavour, still more than the Swiss, to encourage peace among them. The republic preserves unanimity among her citizens, by very excellent laws, which prescribe the duties of every station, by a speedy and disinterested administration of justice, and by regulations admirably well adapted to the merchants. She has shewn the opinion she entertains of the necessity of good faith by her observance of treaties, and has endeavoured to inculcate the same principle among individuals.

BOOK  
II.

IN a word, we know of no nation in Europe that has considered better what its united advantages of situation, strength, and population allows it to undertake, or that has known and followed more effectually the means of increasing both its population and its strength. We know of none, which having such objects as an extensive commerce and liberty, mutually attracting and supporting each other, hath conducted itself in a better manner for the preservation of both the one and the other.

BUT how are these manners already changed and degenerated from the purity of a republican government. Personal interest, which become laudable by being combined, are now totally selfish, and corruption is become general. There is no patriotism in that country, which above all others in the universe should inspire its inhabitants with firmer attachments. In reality, what patriotic sentiments might we not expect from a nation that can say to itself; this land which I inhabit, has been fertilized by me; 'tis I who have embellished, who have created it. This threatening sea, which deluged all our plains, rages in vain against the powerful dikes I have opposed to its fury. I have purified this air which stagnant waters had filled with fatal exhalations. It is by my means that superb cities stand now upon the slime and mud, over which the ocean once rolled its waves. The ports I have constructed, the canals I have digged, receive the productions of the whole universe which I dispense at pleasure. The inheritances of other nations are only possessions which man disputes with man; that which I shall leave to my posterity, I have ravished from the elements which conspired against my territory, and am now the master of it. It is here that I have established a new arrangement of nature, a new system of manners. I have done every

every thing where there was nothing. Air, land, government, liberty, all these are my works. I enjoy the glory of the past, and when I cast a look into futurity, I see with satisfaction that my ashes will rest quietly on the same spot where my forefathers saw the breaking of storms.

WHAT motives these for idolizing one's country! Yet there is no longer any public spirit in Holland: it is a whole, the parts of which have no other relation among themselves than the spot they occupy. Meanness, baseness and dishonesty characterize now the conquerors of Philip. They make a traffic of their oath, as of their provisions; and they will soon become the refuse of the universe, which they had astonished by their industry and by their virtues.

YE unworthy members of the government, under which ye live, shudder at least at the dangers that surround you! Those who have slavish souls are not far removed from slavery. The sacred fire of liberty can only be kept up by chaste hands. Ye are not now in that state of anarchy, when the sovereigns of Europe all equally opposed by the nobles in their respective states, could not carry on their designs either with secrecy, unanimity or rapidity; when the equilibrium of the several powers was merely the effect of their mutual debility. At present, power grown more independent, confirms those advantages to a monarchy which a free state can never enjoy. What have the republicans to oppose to a superiority so formidable? Their virtues; but you have lost them. The corruption of your manners, and of your magistrates, encourages every where the detractors of liberty; and, perhaps, your fatal example is the means of imposing a heavier yoke on other nations. What answer would you wish us to make to those men, who, either from the prejudice



**B O O K**  
**II.**

dice of education or the want of honesty, are perpetually telling us; this is the government which you extol so much in your writings; these are the happy consequences of that system of liberty you hold so dear. To those vices which you have laid to the charge of despotism, they have added another, which surpasses them all, the inability to stop the progress of evil. What answer can be given to so severe a satire on democracy?

INDUSTRIOUS Hollanders! ye who were formerly so renowned for your bravery, and are at present so distinguished by your wealth, tremble at the idea of being again reduced to crouch under the rod you have broken, and which still hangs over you. Would you learn how the spirit of commerce may be united and preserved with the spirit of liberty? View from your shores that island, and those people, whom nature presents to you as a model for your imitation. Keep your eyes constantly fixed upon England: if the alliance of that kingdom has been your support, its conduct will now serve you as an instructor, and its example as a guide.

END OF THE SECOND BOOK.

BOOK III.

## B O O K III.

*Settlements, Trade, and Conquests of the English in the East Indies.*

**W**E know nothing either of the period in which the British isles were peopled, nor of the origin of their first inhabitants. All we can learn from the most authentic historical records is, that they were successively visited by the Phœnicians, the Carthaginians, and the Gauls. The traders of these nations used to go there to exchange earthen vessels, salt, all kinds of iron, and copper instruments, for skins, slaves, hounds, and bull-dogs, and especially for tin. Their profits were just what they pleased in their dealings with savages equally ignorant of the value of what they sold or bought.

A LOOSE speculation would lead us to imagine, that islanders have been the first civilized people among mankind. Nothing puts a stop to the excursions of people living on a continent: they may get their livelihood and avoid fighting at the same time. In islands, war, and the inconveniences of a too limited society, should sooner make laws and treaties necessary. But whatever is the reason of it, we generally see the manners and the government of islanders formed later and more imperfectly than others. All the traditions respecting Britain, particularly confirm this assertion.

THE Roman empire was not sufficiently durable, and too eagerly disputed, to improve in any considerable

B O O K  
III.Sketch of  
the ancient  
state of the  
English  
commerce.

**B O O K**  
**III.**

ble degree the industry of the Britons. Even the small progress that husbandry and the arts had made during this period, was lost as soon as that haughty power had determined to abandon this conquest. The spirit of slavery which the southern inhabitants of Britain had contracted, deprived them of the courage necessary to resist at first the overflowings of their neighbours the Picts, who had saved themselves from the yoke by flying towards the north of the island, and prevented them afterwards from being able to oppose the more destructive, more obstinate and more numerous expeditions of plunderers that poured in swarms from the more northern parts of Europe.

ALL nations were affected with this dreadful plague, the most destructive, perhaps, that ever was recorded in the annals of the world; but the calamities which Great Britain particularly experienced are inexpressible. Every year, several times even in a year, her countries were ravaged, her houses burnt, her women ravished, her temples stripped, her inhabitants massacred, put to torture, or enslaved. All these misfortunes succeeded each other with inconceivable rapidity. When the country was so far destroyed that nothing remained, to glut the avidity of these barbarians, they seized on the land itself. One nation succeeded another. One troop supervening, expelled or exterminated the one that was already established; and this succession of revolutions, constantly kept up indolence, mistrust and misery. In these dispiriting times, the Britons had scarce any commercial connection with the continent. Exchanges were even so rare amongst them, that it was necessary to have witnesses for the sale of the least trifle.

SUCH was the situation of affairs, when William the Conqueror subdued Great Britain a little while after the middle of the eleventh century. His followers came from

from countries rather more civilized, more active, and more industrious, than those they came to settle in. Such a communication ought naturally to have rectified, and enlarged the ideas of the conquered people. The introduction of the feudal government occasioned so speedy and so complete a revolution in matters of property, that every thing was thrown into confusion.

B O O K  
III.

THE minds of men were scarcely settled, and the conquerors, and the conquered had but just begun to consider themselves as one and the same people, when the abilities and strength of the nation were engaged in supporting the pretensions of their sovereigns to the crown of France. In these obstinate wars, the English displayed military talents and courage; but after several great efforts, and considerable success, they were forced back into their island, where domestic troubles exposed them to fresh calamities.

DURING these different periods, the whole commerce was in the hands of the Jews and the bankers of Lombardy, who were alternately favoured and robbed, considered as useful persons, and condemned to death, expelled and recalled: these tumults were increased by the audacity of the pirates, who being sometimes protected by the government, with which they shared their spoils, attacked all ships indiscriminately, and frequently sank their crews. Their interest of money was at fifty per cent. Leather, furs, butter, lead, and tin were the only things exported from England, at a very moderate rate, and thirty thousand sacks of wool, which returned annually a more considerable sum. As the English were then totally unacquainted with the art of dyeing this wool, and manufacturing them with elegance, the greatest part of this money returned. To remedy this inconvenience, foreign manufactures were invited, and the people were prohibited from wearing  
any

B O O K  
III

any cloaths that were not of home manufacture. At the same time, the exportation of manufactured wool, and wrought iron was forbidden; two laws altogether worthy of the age in which they were instituted.

HENRY the seventh permitted the barons to dispose of their lands, and the common people to buy them. This regulation diminished the inequality which subsisted before between the fortunes of the lords and their vassals; it made the latter more independent, and inspired the people with the desire of enriching themselves, and the expectation of enjoying their riches. There were many obstacles to this wish, and this hope; some of which were removed. The company of merchants established at London was prevented from exacting in future the sum of one thousand five hundred and seventy-five livres (68*l.* 18*s.* 1*d.*  $\frac{1}{2}$ ) from each of the other merchants in the kingdom, desirous of trading at the great fairs of the low countries. In order to fix a greater number of people to the labours of husbandry, it was enacted, that no person should put his son or daughter out to any kind of apprenticeship, without being possessed of a rent of twenty-two livres ten sols (near 20*s.*) in landed property; this absurd law was afterwards mitigated.

UNFORTUNATELY that law which regulated the price of all sorts of provisions, of woollen, of workmen's wages, of stuffs, and of cloathing, was maintained in its full force. Other impediments even were thrown in the way of commerce, on account of some pernicious combinations that were set on foot. The loan of money at interest, and the profits of exchange were strictly prohibited, as usurious in themselves, or calculated to introduce usury. The exportation of money in any kind of form was forbidden; and, in order to prevent foreign merchants from carrying it clandestinely away, they were compelled to change into English merchandize the  
intire

intire produce of the goods they had brought into Eng- B O O K  
III.  
land. The exportation of horses was likewise prohi-  
bited; and the people were not sufficiently enlightened  
to discover that such a prohibition would necessarily  
cause the propagation and improvement of the species  
to be neglected. At length corporations were establish-  
ed in all the towns; that is to say, the state authorized  
all persons of the same profession, to make such regu-  
lations as they should think necessary for their exclusive  
preservation and success. The nation is still oppressed  
with a regulation so contrary to general industry, and  
which reduces every thing to a kind of monopoly.

UPON considering such a number of strange laws,  
we might be induced to think that Henry was either  
indifferent about the prosperity of his kingdom, or that  
he was totally deficient in understanding. Neverthe-  
less, it is certain that this prince, maugre his extreme  
avarice, often lent considerable sums of money, with-  
out interest, to merchants who had not property suffi-  
cient to carry on the schemes they had planned: be-  
sides, the wisdom of his government is so well con-  
firmed, that he is accounted with reason, one of the  
greatest monarchs that ever filled the throne of Eng-  
land. But, notwithstanding all the efforts of genius,  
it requires a succession of several ages before any sci-  
ence can be reduced to simple principles. It is the  
same thing with theories as with machines, which are  
always very complicated at first, and which are only  
freed in the course of time by observation and experi-  
ence, from those useless wheels which only served to  
increase their frictions.

THE knowledge of the succeeding reigns was not  
much more extensive upon those matters we are treat-  
ing of. Some Flemings, settled in England, were the  
only good workmen in these branches; they were al-

**B O O K**  
**III.**

most always insulted and oppressed by the English workmen, who were jealous without emulation: they complained that all the customers went to the Flemings, and they raised the price of corn. The government adopted these popular prejudices, and forbid all strangers to employ more than two workmen in their shops. The merchants were not better treated than the workmen, and those even who were naturalized, were obliged to pay the same duties as the aliens. Ignorance was so general, that the cultivation of the best lands was neglected, in order to convert them into pasture lands, even at the time that the number of sheep, which might be in one flock, was confined by the laws to two thousand. All mercantile correspondences were confined in the low countries. The inhabitants of these provinces bought the English merchandize, and circulated them through the different parts of Europe. It is probable that the nation would not have made any considerable figure for a long time, without a concurrence of favourable circumstances.

THE Duke of Alva's cruelties drove several able manufacturers into England, who carried the art of the fine Flemish manufactures to London. The persecutions which the protestants suffered in France supplied England with workmen of all kinds. Elizabeth, impatient of contradiction, but knowing and desirous of doing what was right, at once despotic and popular, with the advantages of a good understanding, and of being properly obeyed, availed herself of the fermentation of people's minds, as prevalent throughout all her dominions as through the rest of Europe; and while this fermentation produced amongst other people nothing but theological disputes, and civil or foreign wars, in England it gave rise to a lively emulation for commerce, and for the improvement of navigation.

THE

THE English learned to build their ships at home, which they bought before of the merchants of Lubeo and Hamburg. They were soon the only persons who traded to Muscovy by the way of Archangel just discovered; and they presently came in competition with the Asiatic towns in Germany, and in the north. They began to trade with Turkey. Several of their navigators attempted, though in vain, to discover a passage to India by the northern seas. At length Drake, Stephens, Cavendish, and some others, reached that place, some by the south sea, and others by doubling the Cape of Good Hope.

B O O K  
III.

THE success of these voyages was sufficient to determine the most able merchants of London to establish a company in the year 1600; which obtained an exclusive privilege of trading to the East Indies. The act which granted this privilege, fixed it for fifteen years: it declared, that if it should prove injurious to the state, it should be annulled, and the company suppressed, by giving two years previous notice to its members.

First voy-  
ages of the  
English to  
India.

THIS clause of reserve was owing to the displeasure the commons had lately shewn on account of a grant, the novelty of which might possibly offend them. The queen had returned to the house, and had spoken on this occasion in a manner worthy to serve as a lesson to all sovereigns.

“GENTLEMEN,” said she to the members of the house commissioned to return her thanks, “I am extremely sensible of your attachment, and of the care you have taken to give me an authentic testimony of it. This affection for my person had determined you to apprise me of a fault I had inadvertently fallen into from ignorance, but in which my will had no share. If your vigilance had not discovered to



B O O K

III.

“ me the mischiefs which my mistake might have pro-  
 “ duced; what pain should I not have felt?—I, who  
 “ have nothing dearer to me than the affection and  
 “ preservation of my people? May my hand suddenly  
 “ wither, may my heart be struck at once with a dead-  
 “ ly blow, before I shall ever grant particular privi-  
 “ leges that my subjects may have reason to complain  
 “ of. The splendour of the throne has not so far daz-  
 “ zled my eyes, that I should prefer the abuse of an  
 “ unbounded authority to the use of a power exercised  
 “ by justice. The brilliancy of royalty blinds only  
 “ those princes who are ignorant of the duties that the  
 “ crown imposes. I dare believe that I shall not be  
 “ ranked among such monarchs. I know that I hold  
 “ not the sceptre for my own proper advantage, and  
 “ that I am entirely devoted to society, which has put  
 “ its confidence in me. It is my happiness to see that  
 “ the state has hitherto prospered under my govern-  
 “ ment; and that my subjects are worthy that I should  
 “ yield up my crown and my life for their sakes. Im-  
 “ pute not to me the improper measures I may be  
 “ engaged in, nor the irregularities which may be  
 “ committed under the sanction of my name. You  
 “ know that the ministers of princes are too often  
 “ guided by private interests, that truth seldom reaches  
 “ the ears of kings, and that obliged as they are, from  
 “ the multiplicity of affairs they are laden with, to fix  
 “ their attention on those which are of the greatest  
 “ importance, it is impossible they should see every  
 “ thing with their own eyes.”

THE funds of this company were, at first far from being considerable. Part of them was expended in fitting out a fleet of four ships which sailed in the beginning of the year 1601; and the rest was sent abroad in money and merchandise.

LAN-

LANCASTER, who commanded the expedition, arrived the year following at the port of Achen, which was at that time a celebrated mart. Intelligence was received of the victories gained by the English over the Spaniards at sea; and this intelligence procured him a very distinguished reception. The king behaved to him in the same manner as if he had been his equal; he ordered that his own wives richly habited, should play several dances in his presence, on a variety of instruments. This favour was followed by all the compliances that could be wished for to facilitate the establishment of a safe and advantageous commerce. The English admiral was received at Bantam in the same manner as at the place where he first landed; and a ship which he had dispatched to the Molucca islands, brought him a considerable cargo of cloves and nutmegs. With these valuable spices, and the pepper he took in at Java and Sumatra, he returned safe to Europe.

THIS early success determined the society who had intrusted their interests in the hands of this able man, to form settlements in India; but not without the consent of the natives. They did not wish to begin with conquests. Their expeditions were nothing more than the enterprizes of humane and fair traders. They made themselves beloved: but they gained nothing by this good impression, except a few factories, and were in no condition to sustain the attempts of their rivals who were very formidable.

THE Portuguese and Dutch were in possession of large provinces, well fortified places, and good harbours. By these advantages their trade was secured against the natives of the country, and against new competitors; their return to Europe was rendered easy; and they had opportunities of getting a good sale

B O O K  
III.

for the commodities they carried to Asia, and to purchase those they wanted at a moderate price. The English, on the contrary, exposed to the caprice of seasons and of people, having no strength, or place of security, and deriving their supplies from England only, could not carry on an advantageous trade. They found how difficult it was to acquire great riches without great injustice, and that if they would surpass or even equal the nations they had censured, they must pursue the same conduct.

THE plan of forming lasting settlements, and of attempting conquests seemed too great to be accomplished by the forces of an infant society: but they flattered themselves that they should meet with protection, because they thought themselves useful. They were disappointed in their expectations. They could obtain nothing from James I. a weak prince, infected with the false philosophy of his age, of a subtle and pedantic genius, and better qualified to be the head of an university than to preside over an empire. By their activity, perseverance, and judicious choice of officers and factors, the company provided those succours which were refused them by their sovereign. They erected forts, and founded colonies in the islands of Java, Puleron, Amboyna, and Banda. They likewise shared the spice trade with the Dutch, which will always be the most certain branch of eastern commerce, because the objects of it are become necessary articles of life. It was of more importance at the time we are speaking of, because the extravagance of fancy had not then made so much progress in Europe as it has done since, and because there was not that prodigious demand for India linens, stuffs, teas, and Chinese varnish, that there is at present.

THE

THE Dutch, who had driven the Portuguese from the spice-islands, never intended to suffer a nation to settle there, whose maritime force, character, and government, would make them formidable rivals. They had many advantages on their side, such as powerful colonies; a well exercised navy, firm alliances, a great fund of wealth, a knowledge of the country, and of the principles and details of commerce, which the English wanting, were attacked in all possible ways.

B O O K  
III.

Disputes  
between  
the English  
and Dutch.

THE first step their rival took was to drive them from the fertile places where they had formed settlements. In the islands where their power was less established, they endeavoured, by accusations, equally void of truth and decency, to make them odious to the natives of the country. These shameful expedients not meeting with all the success the Dutch expected, those avaricious traders resolved to proceed to acts of violence. An extraordinary occasion brought on the commencement of hostilities sooner than was expected.

It is a custom at Java for the new married women to dispute with their husbands the first favours of love. This kind of contest which the men take a pride in terminating immediately, and the women in protracting as long as possible, sometimes lasts several weeks. The king of Bantam having overcome the resistance of a new bride made public entertainments in celebration of his triumph. The strangers in the harbour were invited to these festivals. Unhappily for them the English were treated with too much distinction. The Dutch looked with a jealous eye upon this preference, and did not defer revenge a moment. They attacked them on all sides.

THE Indian ocean became, at this period, the scene of the most bloody engagements between the maritime forces of the two nations. They fought out,

**B O O K**  
**III.**

attacked, and combated each other with the spirit of men who chose to conquer or die. Equal courage appeared on both sides, but there was a disparity in their forces. The English were on the point of being overcome, when some moderate people in Europe, which the flames of war had not reached, endeavoured to find out the means of accommodating their differences. By an infatuation, which it is not easy to explain the cause of, the very strangest of all was adopted.

IN 1619 the two companies signed a treaty, the purport of which was that the Molucca islands, Amboyna, and Banda, should belong in common to the two nations: that the English should have one third, and the Dutch two thirds of the produce at a fixed price: that each, in proportion to their interest, should contribute to the defence of these islands: that a council composed of skilful men of both parties, should regulate all the affairs of commerce at Batavia: That this agreement, guaranteed by the respective sovereigns should last twenty years; and that if any differences should arise, during this interval, that could not be settled by the two companies, they should be determined by the king of Great Britain and the States-general. Among all the political conventions preserved in history, it would be difficult to find a more extraordinary one than this. It had the fate it deserved.

THE Dutch were no sooner informed of it in India, than they devised means to render it ineffectual. The situation of affairs favoured their designs. The Spaniards and the Portuguese had taken advantage of the disputes between their enemies, to regain their settlements in the Moluccas. They might fortify themselves there; and it was dangerous to give them time. The English commissaries concurred with them in opinion that it would be best to attack them without delay; but ad-  
 ded,

ded, that they were not at all prepared to act in concert with them. This declaration, which was expected, was registered; and their associates embarked alone in an expedition, all the advantages of which they reserved to themselves. The agents of the Dutch company had only one step further to go, to get all the spices into the hands of their masters, which was to drive their rivals from the island of Amboyna. The method by which they succeeded in their project was very extraordinary.

A JAPANESE, in the Dutch service at Amboyna, made himself suspected by his imprudent curiosity. He was seized, and confessed that he had entered into an engagement with the soldiers of his nation to deliver up the fort to the English. His comrades confirmed his account, making the same confession. Upon these unanimous depositions, the authors of the conspiracy, who did not disavow, but even acknowledged it, were put in irons: and the plot was stifled in the death of the criminals by the hands of justice. This is the account given by the Dutch.

THE English have always considered this accusation as the suggestion of an unbounded avarice. They have maintained that it was absurd to suppose, that ten factors and eleven foreign soldiers could have formed the project of seizing upon a place, which was garrisoned by two hundred men: that even if these unhappy men had thought it possible to execute so extravagant a plan, would they not have been discouraged by the impossibility of obtaining succours to defend them against an enemy who would have besieged them on all sides? To make a conspiracy of this kind probable, it requires stronger proof than a confession extorted from the accused by extremity of torture. The torments of the rack never afforded any other proof, than that of the  
courage

**B O O K**  
**III.**

courage or weakness of those whom barbarous customs condemned to it. These considerations, strengthened by several others, almost equally convincing, have made the story of the conspiracy of Amboyna so suspected, that it has commonly passed for a cloak to palliate cruelty and avarice.

THE ministry of James I. and the whole nation were at that time so engaged in ecclesiastical subtilties, and the discussion of the rights of king and people, that they were not sensible of the insults offered to the English name in the East. This indifference produced a caution which soon degenerated into weakness. These islanders, however, maintained the bravery of their character better at Coromandel and Malabar.

Disputes  
of the  
English  
with the  
Portuguese

THEY had established factories at Mazulipatam, Calicut, and several other ports, and even at Delhi. Surat, the richest mart in these countries, tempted their ambition in 1611. The inhabitants were disposed to receive them: but the Portuguese declared, that if they suffered this nation to make a settlement, they would burn all the towns upon the coast, and seize all the Indian vessels. The government was awed by these menaces. Middleton, disappointed in his hopes, was obliged to abandon the place, and return through a numerous fleet to which he did more damage than he received.

CAPTAIN Thomas Best arrived in these latitudes the year following, with a very considerable force. He was received at Surat without any opposition. The agents he carried out with him had scarce entered upon their employments when a formidable armament from Goa made its appearance. The English admiral, reduced to this alternative, either of betraying the interests he was intrusted with, or of exposing himself to the greatest danger in defending them, did not hesitate what part he should act. He twice attacked the Portuguese, and  
notwith-

notwithstanding the great inferiority of his squadron, gained the victory each time. However, the advantage the vanquished derived from their position, their ports, and their fortresses, always made the English navigation in the Guzarat very difficult. They were obliged to maintain a constant struggle against an obstinate enemy that was not discouraged by defeats. No tranquillity was to be obtained, but at the price of new contests and new triumphs.

THE news of these glorious successes against a nation which had hitherto been thought invincible, reached as far as the capital of Persia.

The English form connections with Persia.

THIS vast country, so celebrated in antiquity, appeared to have been free at the first institution of its government. The monarchy rose upon the ruins of a depraved republic. The Persians were long happy under this form of government: their manners were as simple as their laws. At length the spirit of conquest infused itself into the sovereigns. At that time the treasures of Assyria, the spoils of many trading nations, and the tribute arising from a vast number of provinces, brought immense riches into the empire, which soon occasioned a total alteration. The disorders rose to such a pitch, that the care of the public amusements seemed to engage the chief attention of government.

A PEOPLE totally devoted to pleasure could not fail in a short time to be reduced to a state of slavery. They were successively enslaved by the Macedonians, the Parthians, the Arabians, and the Tartars, and towards the close of the fifteenth century by the Sophis, who pretended to be the descendents of Aly, author of the famous reformation, by which Mohammedanism was divided into two branches.

No prince of this new race made himself so famous as Schah-Abbas, surnamed the Great. He conquered Candahar,



**B O O K**  
**III.**

Candahar, several places of importance upon the Black Sea, part of Arabia, and drove the Turks out of Georgia, Armenia, Mesopotamia, and all the countries they had conquered on this side the Euphrates.

THESE victories produced remarkable changes in the interior administration of the empire. The great men took advantage of the civil broils to make themselves independent; they were degraded, and all posts of consequence were given to strangers, who had neither the power nor inclination to raise factions. The militia having taken upon themselves to dispose of the crown at their pleasure; they were restrained by foreign troops, whose religion and customs were different. Anarchy had inclined the people to sedition; and to prevent this, the towns and villages were filled with colonies chosen out of nations whose manners and character bore no resemblance to those of the ancient inhabitants. These arrangements gave rise to a despotism the most absolute, perhaps, that any country ever experienced.

It is surprizing how the great Abbas found means to introduce into this government, which trampled on the natural rights of mankind, some designs for the public advantage. He patronized the arts, and established them at court, and in the provinces. All who came into his dominions, if they possessed talents of any kind, were sure of being well received, assisted, and rewarded. He would often say, that strangers were the best ornaments of an empire, and added more to a prince's dignity than the pomp of the most refined luxury.

WHILE Persia was rising from its ruins by the different branches of industry that were every where established, a colony of Armenians, transplanted to Isfahan, carried the spirit of commerce into the heart of the empire. In a little time, these traders, and the natives of the country who followed their example, spread

spread themselves over the East, into Holland, England, the Mediterranean and the Baltic, and wherever business was carried on with spirit and advantage. The Sophi himself bore a part in their enterprizes, and advanced them considerable sums, which they employed to advantage in the most celebrated marts in the world. They were obliged to return the capital on the terms agreed upon, and if they had increased it by their industry, he granted them some recompense.

B O O K  
III.

THE Portuguese, who found that a part of the Indian trade with Asia and Europe was likely to be diverted to Persia, imposed restraints upon it: they would not suffer the Persians to purchase merchandize any where but from their magazines: they fixed the price of it; and if they sometimes allowed it to be taken at the places where it was manufactured, it was always to be carried in their own bottoms, charging all expences of freight and exorbitant customs. This stretch of power displeased the great Abbas, who being informed of the resentment of the English, proposed to unite their maritime strength with his land forces, to besiege Ormus. This place was attacked by the combined arms of the two nations and taken in the year 1622, after a contest that lasted two months. The conquerors divided the spoil, which was immense, and afterwards totally demolished the place.

THREE or four leagues from hence there was, upon the continent, an harbour called Gombron, or Bender Abassi. Nature seemed not to have designed it should be inhabited. It is situated at the foot of a ridge of mountains of an excessive height; the air you breathe seems to be on fire; mortal vapours continually exhale from the bowels of the earth; the fields are black and dry, as if they had been scorched with fire. Notwithstanding these inconveniencies, as Bender-Abassi had the  
advantage

**B O O K**  
**III.**

advantage of being placed at the entrance of the Gulf, the Persian monarch chose to make it the centre of the extensive trade he intended to carry on with India. The English joined in this project. A perpetual exemption from all imposts, and a moiety of the product of the customs, were granted them, on condition they should maintain, at least, two men of war in the Gulf. This precaution was thought necessary to frustrate the attempts of the Portuguese, whose resentment was still to be dreaded.

FROM this time Bender-Abassi, which was before a poor fishing town, became a flourishing city. The English carried thither spices, pepper, and sugar, from the markets of the east; and iron, lead, and cloths, from the ports of Europe. The profits arising from these commodities were increased by the very high freight paid them by the Armenians, who were still in possession of the richest branch of the Indian commerce.

THESE merchants had, for a long time, been concerned in the linen trade. They had never been supplanted either by the Portuguese, who were intent only on plunder, or by the Dutch, whose attention was totally confined to the spice trade. They might, nevertheless, be apprehensive, that they should not be able to withstand the competition of a people who were equally rich, industrious, active, and frugal. The Armenians acted then as they have ever done since: they went to India, where they bought cotton, which they sent to the spinners; the cloths were manufactured under their own inspection, and carried to Gombron, from whence they were transported to Ispahan. From thence they found their way into the different provinces of the empire, the dominions of the Grand Signior, and into Europe, where the custom has prevailed of calling them Persian manufactures, though they were never made but on the coast  
of

of Coromandel. Such is the influence of names upon opinions, that the vulgar error, which attributes to Persia the manufacture of the Indies, will, in a series of ages, perhaps, pass with the learned in future times for an incontestable truth. The insurmountable difficulties which errors of this kind have occasioned in the history of Pliny, and other ancient writers, should induce us to set a high value on the labours of the literati of this age, who collect the works of nature and of art with a view of transmitting them to posterity.

IN exchange for the merchandise they carried to Persia, they gave the following articles which were either the produce of their own soil, or the fruits of their industry. Silk, which was the principal commodity; and was prepared and exported in great quantities. Carmanian wool, which nearly resembles that of the Vicuña. It was of great use in the manufacture of hats, and of some stuffs. It is a remarkable circumstance in the goats that produce it, that in the month of May the fleece falls off of itself. The turquoises, which are more or less valuable, according as they are procured from one or other of the three mines that produce them. They were formerly an article of the dress of our ladies. Gold brocades, which sold at a higher price than any of those which are the produce of the most celebrated manufactures. Some of them were made to be worn on one, and others on both sides. They were used for window-curtains, screens, and magnificent sofas. Tapestry, which has since been so well imitated in Europe, and has, for a long time been the richest furniture of our rooms. Morocco, which, as other skins, is brought to a degree of perfection which cannot be equalled any where else. Shagreen, goats hair, rose-water, medicinal roots, gums for colours, dates, horses, arms, and many other articles, of which some are sold in India, and others carried to Europe.

THOUGH

B O O K  
III.

**B O O K**  
**III.**

THOUGH the Dutch managed to get all the trade of India into their hands, they viewed the transactions of Persia with a jealous eye. They thought the privileges enjoyed by their rivals in the road of Bender-Abassi might be compensated by the advantage they had in having a greater quantity of spices, and entered into a competition with them.

**Decline of  
the English  
in India.**

THE English, harrassed in every mart by a powerful enemy, resolutely bent on their destruction, were obliged every where to give way. Their fate was hastened by those civil and religious dissensions, which deluged their country with blood, and extinguished all sentiment and knowledge. India was totally forgotten, while the most important interests were at stake; and the company oppressed and discouraged, were reduced to nothing at the time that the death of Charles afforded so instructive and dreadful a lesson.

CROMWELL, enraged at the favours the Dutch had shewn to the unfortunate family of the Stuarts, and at the asylum they had afforded to the English who had been procribed; and piqued that the republic of the United Provinces should pretend to the dominion of the sea; proud of his success, and sensible of his own strength, and that of the nation under his command, resolved at the same time to make it respected, and to revenge his own quarrel. He declared war against the Dutch.

OF all the maritime wars which have been recorded in history, none were conducted with more knowledge, or were more famous for the skill of the commanders, and the bravery of the sailors; none presented so great a number of obstinate and bloody engagements. The English obtained the advantage, and owed it to the size of their ships, in which particular they have since been imitated by other European nations.

THE

THE protector, whose voice was a law, did not exert himself as far as he might in favour of India. He contented himself with providing for the security of the English trade, procuring a disavowal of the massacre at Amboyna, and insisting upon an indemnification for the descendants of the unhappy victims who perished in that dreadful transaction. No notice is taken in the treaty, of the forts taken from the nation by the Dutch, in the island of Java, and in several of the Moluccas. It was stipulated, indeed, that the island of Puleron should be restored: but the usurpers, seconded by the English negotiator whom they had corrupted, found means to elude this article so dextrously, which would and ought to have produced a rivalry in the spice trade, that the observance of it was never enforced.

NOTWITHSTANDING this neglect, as soon as the company had obtained from the protector a renewal of their privileges in 1657, and found themselves firmly supported by the public authority, they shewed a spirit of resolution which they had lost during their late misfortunes. Their courage kept pace with their rights.

Revival of  
the Eng-  
lish trade  
in India.

THE success they met in Europe, accompanied them into Asia. Arabia, Persia, Indostan, the eastern parts of India, China, and all the markets where the English had formerly traded, were open to them. They were even received with more frankness and less distrust than they had experienced formerly. Their trade was very brisk, and their profits very considerable: nothing was wanting to complete their success but an entrance into Japan, which they attempted. But the Japanese having learned from the Dutch that the king of England had married a daughter of the king of Portugal, refused to admit the English into their ports.

NOTWITHSTANDING this disappointment, the company's affairs were in a very flourishing condition: they

**B O O K**  
**III.**

Misfor-  
tunes and  
miscon-  
duct of the  
English in  
the Indies.

flattered themselves with the pleasing hopes of giving a greater extent and security to their affairs, when they found their career retarded by a rivalry, which their own success created.

SOME traders, fired with the relation of the advantages to be obtained in India, resolved to make voyages thither. Charles II. who filled the throne with the voluptuous and dissolute manners of a private character, gave them permission for a valuable consideration; while, on the other hand, he extorted large sums from the company, to enable him to persecute those who encroached upon his privilege. A competition of this nature would unavoidably degenerate into piracy. The English thus becoming enemies to each other, carried on their disputes with a spirit of rancour and animosity, which lowered them in the opinion of the people of Asia.

THE Dutch wished to take advantage of so singular a conjuncture. These republicans had for a long time been absolute masters of the Indian trade. They had seen with regret a part of it taken out of their hands, at the conclusion of the civil wars in England. They hoped to recover it by the superiority of their forces, when in 1664 the two nations entered into a war in all parts of the world; but the hostilities did not continue long enough to answer these sanguine expectations. As the peace prevented them from having recourse to open violence, they resolved to attack the sovereigns of the country to oblige them to shut up their ports against their rival. The foolish and despicable behaviour of the English increased the insolence of the Dutch, who proceeded so far as to drive them ignominiously from Bantam in 1680.

So serious and public an insult roused the spirit of the English company. The desire of re-establishing  
their

their character gratifying their revenge, and maintaining their interests animated them to make the greatest efforts. They equipped a fleet of twenty-three ships, with eight thousand regular troops on board. They were ready to sail, when their departure was postponed by the king's orders. Charles, whose necessities and licentiousness were unbounded, had entertained hopes of receiving an immense sum to induce him to recall this armament. As he could not obtain it from his subjects, he was resolved to receive it from his enemies. He sacrificed the honour and trade of his nation for 2,250,000 livres (98,437*l.* 10*s.*) which were paid him by the Dutch, who were intimidated by these great preparations. The intended expedition never took place.

THE company exhausted by the expences of an armament, which had been rendered useless by the venality of the court, sent their vessels to India without the necessary funds to supply the cargoes; but with orders to the factors, if possible to take them upon credit. The fidelity they had hitherto observed in their engagements procured them 6,750,000 livres, (295,312*l.* 10*s.*) Nothing can be more extraordinary than the method that was taken to pay them back.

JOSIAS CHILD, who from being a director, was become the tyrant of the company, is said, unknown to his colleagues, to have sent orders to India, to invent some pretence or other, to defraud the lenders of their money. The execution of this iniquitous project was intrusted to his brother John Child, who was governor of Bombay. This avaritious, turbulent, and savage man, immediately proceeded to make several claims upon the governor of Surat, some more foolish than others. These demands meeting with the reception they deserved, he attacked all the vessels belonging to the sub-



**B O O K**  
**III.**

jects of the crown of Delhi, and singled out in particular the ships from Surat, as being the richest. He paid no regard to vessels that sailed with its pass-ports, and carried on his insolence so far as to seize a fleet laden with provision for the great Mogul's army. This terrible pillage which lasted the whole year 1688, occasioned incredible losses throughout all Indostan.

AURENGZEBE, who held the reins of the empire with a steady hand, did not lose a moment in revenging so great an outrage. In the beginning of the year 1689, one of his lieutenants landed with twenty thousand men at Bombay, an island of consequence on the coast of Malabar, which a princess of Portugal had brought as her dowry to Charles II. and which that monarch had ceded to the company in 1668. On the enemy's approach, the fort of Magazan was abandoned with such precipitation that money, provisions, several chests of arms, and fourteen pieces of heavy cannon were left behind. The Indian general, encouraged by this first advantage, attacked the English in the field, routed them, and obliged them to retire into the principal fortress, which he invested, and hoped soon to make it surrender.

CHILD, who was as dastardly in time of danger as he had been daring in his piracies, immediately dispatched deputies to court, to sue for pardon. After many intreaties, and much mean submission, the English were admitted into the emperor's presence with their hands tied, and their faces towards the ground. Aurengzebe, who was desirous of preserving a connection, which he thought would be useful to his subjects, was not inflexible. Having delivered himself in the stile of an incensed sovereign, who could, and ought, perhaps, to revenge himself, he yielded to their intreaties and submission. The banishment of the author of the troubles,

troubles, and an adequate compensation for such of his subjects as had been plundered, was all the justice exacted on this occasion by the supreme will of the most despotic monarch that ever existed. On these moderate terms, the English were permitted still to enjoy these privileges they had obtained at different times in the roads belonging to the Mogul.

B O O K  
III.

THUS ended this unhappy affair, which for several years interrupted the trade of the company, occasioned an expence of between nine and ten millions, (on an average about 416,000*l.*) the loss of five large vessels, and a great number of small ones; cost the lives of many thousands excellent sailors, and ended in the ruin of the credit and honour of the nation: two particulars, the value of which can never be estimated too highly.

By changing their maxims and their conduct, the company might flatter themselves with the prospect of being extricated from the abyss into which their own behaviour had plunged them. These hopes were soon dashed by a revolution which did not directly concern them. James II. a tyrannical and fanatic prince, but one who understood maritime affairs and commerce better than any one of his contemporaries, was deposed. This event made all Europe take arms. The consequences of these bloody quarrels are well known. Perhaps, it is not so well known that the French privateers took four thousand two hundred English merchantmen, valued at six hundred seventy-five millions of livres, (29,531,250*l.*) and that the greatest part of the vessels returning from India were included in this fatal list.

THESE depredations were succeeded by a spirit of oeconomy, which must naturally hasten the ruin of the company. The French refugees had carried the culture of flax and hemp into Ireland and Scotland. For the encouragement of this branch of industry, it was

B O O K  
III.

thought proper to prohibit the wear of Indians linens, except mullins, and those which were necessary for the African trade. How could a body already exhausted sustain so unforeseen, so heavy a stroke?

THE peace which should have put an end to these misfortunes, filled up the measure of them. Three kingdoms with one voice exclaimed against the company. It was not their decline that raised them enemies: it only encouraged those they had already. They met with opposition at their first establishment. Ever since the year 1615, several politicians had declaimed against the trade to the East Indies. They asserted, that it weakened the naval strength by destroying great numbers of men; and lessened the Levant and Russian commerce, without affording an equivalent advantage. These clamours, though contradicted by judicious people, grew so violent towards the year 1628, that the company seeing themselves exposed to the odium of the nation, applied to government. They petitioned that the nature of their commerce might be examined: that it might be prohibited, if it was contrary to the interest of the state; and if favourable to them, that it might be authorized by a public declaration. The opposition of the nation, which had been some time dormant, was renewed with more fury than ever, at the period we are speaking of. Those who were less severe in their speculations, consented to a trade with India; but maintained that it should be laid open to the whole nation. An exclusive charter was, in their opinion, a manifest encroachment upon liberty. Accordingly to them, government was established by the people with a view of advancing the general good; and it would be a crime against it to sacrifice public to private interests, by tolerating odious monopolies. They supported this useful and incontestable principle, by appealing to a recent

recent instance. They urged, that during the rebellion, B. O. O. K.  
III. the private merchants who had got possession of the Asiatic seas, carried double the quantity of national goods there was formerly a demand for, and were in a condition to sell commodities on their return at so low a price as to supplant the Dutch in all the European markets. But these acute republicans, who were certain of their ruin, if the English should continue any longer to conduct their affairs on the maxims of universal liberty, bribed certain persons to prevail with Cromwell, to form a separate company. These secret practices, were countenanced by the English merchants concerned in that trade, who hoped for greater advantages in future; when being the only venders, they might impose what terms they pleased upon the consumers. The Protector, deceived by the artful insinuations of both parties, renewed the charter, but for seven years only, that he might alter his conduct, if he found reason to think he had taken a wrong step.

THIS step was not thought a wrong one by any body. Several people were of opinion, that the trade to India could not be carried on with advantage, without an exclusive privilege: but many of them maintained that the present charter was insufficient; having been granted by kings who had no right to do it. They recited many acts of this kind which were abrogated by parliament in the reigns of Edward III. Henry IV. James I. and other princes. Charles II. indeed, obtained a verdict of this nature in the court of common pleas, but it was founded upon a frivolous pretence. This tribunal had the confidence to declare, *That the prince had authority to prevent his subjects from holding commerce with infidels, lest the purity of their faith should be contaminated.*

T 4

THOUGH

**B O O K**  
**III.**

THOUGH the parties above-mentioned were actuated by private, and even opposite views, they all united in the plan of making the trade free, or at least of procuring the reversal of the company's charter. The nation, in general, were on their side: but the body that was attacked, defended itself by its partisans, the ministry, and all the dependents of the court, who made this a common cause. Each party had recourse to libels, intrigue and corruption. These contending passions produced one of those storms, the violence of which can hardly be felt any where but in England. The several factions, sects and interests maintained a furious combat; in which they all mingled without distinction of rank, age, or sex. Such a spirit of enthusiasm had never been raised by the greatest events. To keep up the zeal of their friends, the company offered to lend large sums on condition of obtaining their charter. Their adversaries made offers still more considerable to get it revoked.

THE two houses of parliament, before whom this cause was heard, declared in favour of the private merchants. They obtained leave to carry on trade to India, either separately or in concert. They entered into an association, and formed a new company. The old one had permission to continue its armaments till the expiration of their charter, which was very near at hand. Thus England had two East India companies at the same time, authorized by parliament instead of one established by royal authority.

THESE two bodies shewed as much zeal for the destruction of each other, as they had shown for their respective establishment. They had both experienced the advantages of trade; and viewed each other with all the jealousy and hatred, which ambition and avarice never fail to inspire. Their dissensions soon broke out  
with

with considerable violence in Europe, as well as in India. At last, the two societies made advances towards a reconciliation, and united their funds in 1702. From this period the affairs of the company were carried on with greater propriety, prudence and dignity. The principles of commerce, which were every day better understood in England, had a good effect on their administration, as far as the interests of their monopoly could allow. They made improvements in their former regulations, and formed new ones. They endeavoured to indemnify themselves for the profits they were deprived of by a strong competition, by procuring a larger sale for their commodities. Their privileges were less violently attacked, since they had received the sanction of the laws, and obtained the protection of parliament.

THEIR prosperity was overcast by some transient misfortunes. In 1702 the English had formed a settlement in the island of Pulocondor, which was dependant on Cochin-China. Their design was to take a share in the commerce of this rich kingdom, which had till then been too much neglected. An instance of excessive severity had given disgust to sixteen soldiers of Macassar, who were part of the garrison. On the 3d. of March 1705 they set fire in the night to the houses belonging to the fort, and massacred the Europeans as they came to extinguish it. Thirty out of forty-five lost their lives in this manner; the rest were knocked on the head by the natives, who were exasperated at the insolence of these strangers. By this accident the company lost the money their enterprize had cost them, together with the stock of their factories and the prospects they had entertained.

THE misfortunes they met with at Sumatra in the year 1719 were not attended with the same fatal consequences.

**B O O K**  
**III.**

queneces. This large island had been frequented by the English ever since their arrival in India, but they did not settle there till the year 1688. They drove the Dutch from Bencoolen, a considerable town on the western coast, built near a large and commodious bay: and took possession of it in their room. The conquerors found the islanders inclined to treat with them; and these dispositions were at first improved with prudence. This circumspect behaviour did not last long. The company's agents soon abandoned themselves to that spirit of rapine and tyranny, which the Europeans usually carry with them into Asia. Clouds of discontent between them and the natives of the country began to gather by degrees. Distrust and animosity had risen to the highest pitch, when the foundations of a rising fort were discovered at the distance of a few miles from the coast. On seeing this, the inhabitants of Bencoolen took up arms, and were joined by the whole country. All the buildings belonging to the company were instantly reduced to ashes, the English were routed, and obliged to embark with all the effects they could carry off. Their exile was not of long continuance. The fear of falling under the dominion of the merciless Dutch who had a strong force upon their frontier, procured their recall. In recompence of this disaster, they obtained the advantage of finishing the fort Marlborough without opposition, which they still retain.

THESE disturbances were no sooner appeased, than new ones arose in Malabar and other countries. As the source of them all lay in the avarice and turbulent disposition of the company's servants, they put an end to them by giving up the unjustifiable pretensions that had occasioned them. Other objects of the most interesting nature soon claimed their attention.

ENGLAND

ENGLAND and France entered into a war in 1744. The whole world became the scene of their operations. In India, as well as in other places, each nation sustained its character. The English, ever animated with the spirit of commerce, attacked and ruined that of their enemies. The French adhering to their passion for conquest, seized upon the principal settlements belonging to their rival. The event shewed which of the two nations had acted with the greatest prudence. That which attended to nothing but its own aggrandizement, sunk into a total inactivity; while the other, deprived of the center of its power, carried its enterprises to a greater extent.

B O O K  
III.

War between the  
English  
and  
French.

A CESSATION of hostilities between the two divided nations had no sooner taken place, than they engaged themselves as auxiliaries, into the quarrels of the Indian princes. Soon after they again took arms on their own account. Before the end of this war, the French were driven out of the continent and seas of Asia. At the conclusion of the peace 1763, the English company found themselves in possession of the empire, in Arabia, in the Persian Gulph, on the coast of Malabar and Coromandel, and at Bengal.

In all these countries there is a difference in climate, manners, soil, productions, the spirit of industry, and the price of merchandise. These particulars ought to be exactly and thoroughly understood. We will give a short sketch of them. This description will be found to have a particular connection with the history of a nation, which has obtained a remarkable influence, and derives from it the greatest advantages.

ARABIA is one of the largest peninsulas in the known world. It is bounded by Syria, Diarbeck and Irac-Arabi on the north, by the Indian Ocean on the south, by the Gulph of Persia on the east, and on the west

General  
trade of  
the Red  
Sea, and of  
the Eng-  
lish trade  
there in  
particu-

by



**B O O K**  
**III.**

by the Red Sea, which separates it from Africa. It is commonly divided into three parts; Arabia Petræa, Arabia Deserta, and Arabia Felix, which names denote the nature of the soil in each of these countries.

ARABIA Petræa is the most western and the smallest of the three. It is for the most part uncultivated, and almost totally covered with rocks. In Arabia Deserta nothing is to be seen but arid plains, heaps of sand raised and dissipated by the wind, and steep mountains never adorned with a pleasing verdure. Springs are so rarely found there, that the possession of them is always disputed sword in hand. Arabia Felix owes its specious appellation less to its fertility than to its vicinity to the barren countries that surround it. These different regions, though exposed to great heats, enjoy a sky constantly pure and serene.

ALL histories agree that this country was peopled at a very early period. It is thought that its first inhabitants came from Syria and Chaldea. We cannot find at what period their form of government began; whether their knowledge was derived from India, or whether it was acquired. It appears that their religion was Sabeism even before they were acquainted with the people of Upper Asia. They had early sublime ideas of the divinity: they worshipped the stars as bodies animated by celestial spirits: their religion was neither cruel nor absurd; and though they were liable to those sallies of enthusiasm so common among the southern nations, they do not seem to have been tainted with fanaticism till the time of Mohammed. The inhabitants of Arabia Deserta professed a worship not quite so rational. Many of them worshipped, and some offered human sacrifices to the sun. It is a truth that may be collected from the study of history and the inspection of the globe, that the religions in barren countries,

countries, subject to inundations and volcanos, have ever had a tincture of cruelty, and have always been of a milder cast in countries where nature has been more indulgent. They take their character from the climate where they are formed.

**B O O K  
III.**

WHEN Mohammed had established a new religion in his country, it was no difficult task to infuse a spirit of zeal into his followers; and this zeal made them conquerors. They extended their dominion from the western seas to those of China, and from the Canaries to the Molucca islands. They carried useful arts along with them, which they improved to perfection. The Arabians did not equally succeed in the fine arts; they shewed, indeed, some genius for them, but had not the least idea of that taste with which nature some time after inspired the people who have become their disciples.

PERHAPS genius, which is the offspring of a creative imagination, flourishes in hot countries, where a variety of productions, grand scenes, and surprizing events, excite enthusiasm; while taste, which selects with choice the produce of the fields that genius has sown, seems rather to belong to people of a steady, mild, and moderate temper, who live under the influence of an indulgent sky. Perhaps too this same taste, which is the effect of reason refined and matured by time, requires a certain stability in the government, united with a certain freedom of thinking, an insensible progress of science, which affording a greater scope to genius, enables it to discern more exactly the relation one object has to another, and to combine with happier art those mixed sensations which give the highest entertainment to men of elegant minds. Accordingly the Arabians, who were almost constantly forced into regions glowing with war and fanaticism, never enjoyed that temperature of government and climate which gives

**R O O K**  
**III.**

gives birth to taste. But they introduced into the countries they conquered sciences which they had pillaged, as it were, in the course of their ravages, and all the arts essential to the prosperity of nations.

No nation, at that time, understood commerce so well, or carried it to a greater extent. They attended to it even in the course of their conquests. Their merchants, manufactures, and markets, reached from Spain to Tonquin; and other people, at least those in the western part of the world, were indebted to them for arts and sciences, and all articles conducive to the convenience, the preservation, and the pleasures of life.

WHEN the power of the Caliphs began to decline, the Arabians, after the example of several nations they had subdued, threw off the yoke of these princes, and the country re-assumed by degrees its ancient form of government, as well as its primitive manners. At this era, the nation being, as formerly, divided into tribes under the conduct of different chiefs, returned to their original character from which fanaticism and ambition had made them depart.

THE stature of the Arabians is low, their bodies lean, and their voice slender; but they have robust constitutions, brown hair, a swarthy complexion, black sparkling eyes, an ingenious countenance, but seldom agreeable. This contrasted mixture of features and qualities, which seem incompatible, seem to have been united in this race of men, to constitute a singular nation, whose figure and character partake strongly of that of the Turks, Africans, and Persians, by whom they are surrounded. Grave and serious, they add dignity to their long beard, speak little, use no gesture, make no pauses or falter in their conversation. They pique themselves on observing the strictest probity towards each other, which is the effect of that self-love,  
and

and that spirit of patriotism, which, united together, make any nation, clan or society, esteem, favour, and prefer themselves to the rest of the world. The more carefully they preserve their phlegmatic character, so much the more formidable is their resentment when once it is raised. These people have abilities, and even a genius for the sciences; but they cultivate them but little, either from want of assistance, or because they have no occasion for them; chusing rather, no doubt, to suffer natural evils, than the inconvenience of labour. The Arabians, at this time of day, afford no monument of genius, no productions of industry, which intitle them to make a figure in the history of the human mind.

THEIR ruling passion is jealousy; that torment of impetuous, weak, and indolent minds. It might naturally be asked, whether this distrust was owing to the high or low opinion they entertained of themselves? It is said to be from the Arabians that several nations of Asia, Africa, and even Europe itself, have borrowed those despicable precautions which this odious passion prescribes against a sex, which ought to be the guardian, not the slave of our pleasures. As soon as a daughter is born, they unite by a kind of suture those parts which nature has separated, leaving just space enough for the natural discharges. As the child grows, the parts by degrees adhere so closely, that when they become marriageable they are obliged to be separated by an incision. Sometimes it is thought sufficient to make use of a ring. The married women, as well as the unmarried, are subjected to this outrage on the virtue of the sex; with this difference only, that the ring worn by the young women cannot be taken off, whereas that of the married women has a kind of padlock, of which the husband keeps the key. This custom, which  
is

**B O O K** is known in all parts of Arabia, is almost universally adopted in the part that bears the name of Petræa.  
 III.

SUCH are the manners of the nation in general. The different manner of living in the people who compose it, must necessarily have introduced some peculiarities of character that are worth observing.

THE number of Arabians who inhabit the Desert may amount to two millions. They are distributed into a great number of clans, some of which are more populous and considerable than others, but all independent of each other. Their government is simple: an hereditary chief, assisted by a few old men, determines all debates, and punishes the offenders. If he is hospitable, humane, and just, they adore him; if haughty, cruel, and avaricious, they tear him in pieces, and appoint a successor out of his own family.

THESE people form encampments in all seasons of the year. They have no settled abode, and fix at different places where they can be supplied with water, fruits, and pasture. They find an infinite charm in this wandering life, and consider the sedentary Arabs in the light of slaves. They live upon the milk and flesh of their herds. Their habits, tents, cordage, and the tapestry they sleep upon, are all made of the wool of their sheep, and the hair of their goats and camels. This is the employment of the women in each family; and there is not a single artist in the whole desert. What they consume in tobacco, coffee, rice, and dates, is purchased with the butter they carry to the frontiers, and by the money arising from the annual sale of twenty thousand camels, at forty-eight livres (2l. 2s.) a head. These animals, so useful in the east, were formerly carried to Syria. The greatest number are now sent to Persia, the perpetual wars there having occasioned an extraordinary demand for them, and lessened their numbers.

THESE

THESE articles not being sufficient to supply the Arabs with what they wanted, they have contrived to raise a contribution on the caravans, which superstition obliges to traverse their sands. The most numerous of these, which goes from Damar to Mecca, procures a safe passage by the payment of a hundred purses, or a hundred and fifty thousand livres, (6,562*l.* 10*s.*) to which the Grand Seignior is subjected, and which, by ancient agreement, is distributed among all the clans. The other caravans make similar terms with the clans, through whose territories they are obliged to pass.

INDEPENDENTLY of this expedient, the Arabs inhabiting the most northern part of the desert have had recourse to plunder. These people, so humane, faithful, and disinterested towards each other, are savage and rapacious in their transactions with foreigners. While they preserve in their tents, the character of beneficent and generous hosts, they commit continual depredations on the towns and villages in their neighbourhood. They are good fathers, good husbands, and good masters; but all are enemies who do not belong to their family. They frequently carry their incursions to a great distance; and Syria, Mesopotamia, and Persia, are not uncommonly the scenes of their depredations.

THE Arabs, who devote themselves to plunder, form a sort of society with the camels, to carry on trade or war, where the man is to have all the profit, and the animal the principal fatigue. As these two beings are to live together, they are brought up with a view to each other. The Arab trains his camel from its birth, to all the exercises and hardships it is to undergo during the whole course of its life. He accustoms it to travel far, and eat little. The animal is ear-

**R O O K**  
**III.**

ly inured to pass its days without drinking, and its nights without sleep. He teaches him to draw up his legs under his belly, while he suffers himself to be laden with burthens, that are insensibly increased as his strength is increased by age and fatigue. In this singular plan of education, which princes sometimes adopted the more easily to tame their subjects, in proportion as the labour is doubled, the subsistence is diminished. The Arabians qualify the camels for expedition, by matches, in which the horse enters into a competition with him. The latter, less active and nimble, tires out his rival in a long course. When the master and the camel are ready and equipped for plunder, they set out together, traverse the sandy deserts, and lie in ambush upon the confines to rob the merchant or traveller. The man ravages, massacres, and seizes the prey: and the camel carries the booty. If these adventurers are pursued, they make a precipitate retreat. The master robber mounts his favourite camel, drives the whole troop before him, travels three hundred leagues in eight days without unloading his camels, or allowing them more than an hour each day to rest, or a cake of dough for time, their subsistence. They sometimes remain the whole without drinking, unless they happen to see a spring at a distance from the road, when they redouble their pace, run to the water with eagerness, which makes them take at one draught, as much as is sufficient to quench their present thirst and serve them to the end of their journey. Such is the animal so often celebrated in the Bible, the Coran, and the eastern romances.

THE Arabs who live in districts that afford some slender pastures, and where the soil is proper for barley, breed the finest horses in the world. These horses are sent into all parts to improve and multiply the breed of these animals, which are every where inferior in swiftness,

ness, beauty, and sagacity, to those of Arabia. The masters live with them on the foot of domesticks, on whose service and affection they can rely: and it happens with them as with all other dispersed people, those, in particular, who treat animals with kindness, that both the men and the animals partake, in some measure of each other's manners and disposition. These Arabs are simple, mild and docile: and the different religions that have prevailed in these countries, and the several governments of which they have been the subjects or tributaries, have produced very little alteration in the character they derive from climate or from habit.

THE Arabs settled near the Indian and the Red Sea, and those who inhabit Arabia Felix, were formerly a mild people, fond of liberty, and content with a state of independence without dreaming of conquest. They were too much prejudiced in favour of the beauty of their sky and, of the soil that supplied their wants almost without culture to be tempted to extend their dominion over different countries lying in another climate. Mohammed changed their ideas: but they retain no traces of the impulse he gave them. They pass their lives in smoking, taking coffee, opium and sherbet. These gratifications are preceded or followed by exquisite perfumes that are burnt before them, the smoke of which they receive in their clothes, which are slightly sprinkled with rose-water.

BEFORE the Portuguese had interrupted the navigation of the Red Sea, the Arabs had more activity. They were the factors of all the trade that passed through the channel. Aden, which is situated at the most southern extremity of Arabia upon the Indian ocean, was the mart in these parts. The situation of its harbour which opened an easy communication with



**B O O K**  
**III.**

Egypt, Ethiopia, India and Persia had rendered it, for many ages, one of the most flourishing factories in Asia. Fifteen years after it had repulsed the great Albuquerque, who attempted to demolish it in 1513, it submitted to the Turks who did not long remain masters of it. The king of Yemen, who possessed the only district in Arabia that merits the title of happy, drove them from thence, and removed the trade to Mocha, a road in his dominions, which till then was only a village.

THIS trade was at first inconsiderable : consisting principally in myrrh, incense, aloes, balm of Mecca, some aromatics and medicinal drugs. These articles, the exportation of which is continually retarded by exorbitant imports, and does not exceed at present 7000,000 livres, (30,625*l.*) was at that time more in repute than they have been since : but must have been always of little consequence. Soon after a great change ensued from the introduction of coffee.

THE coffee-tree is originally a native of the higher Ethiopia where it has been known time immemorial, and is still cultivated with success. M. Lagrenée de Mezieres, one of the most intelligent agents that France ever had in the India service, had some of the fruit in his possession, and has made a trial of it. He found it to be larger, rather longer, not so green, and almost as fragrant as that which was begun to be gathered in Arabia towards the close of the fifteenth century.

It is commonly believed that a Mollach, named Chadelly was the first among the Arabs who made use of coffee, to relieve himself from a continual drowsiness which hindered him from attending punctually to his nightly devotions. His Dervises did the same : and their example was followed by the gentlemen of the law. It was soon found out, that this liquor purified the blood by a gentle agitation, dissipated the crudities of the stomach,

mach, and raised the spirits: and it was adopted even by those who had no occasion to keep themselves awake. It passed from the borders of the Red Sea to Medina, Mecca, and was introduced by the pilgrims into all the Mohammedan countries.

**B O O K**  
**III.**

IN these countries where there is less freedom of manner than ours, where the jealousy of the men and the close confinement of the women make society less lively, it was thought proper to encourage public coffee-houses. Those in Persia soon became infamous, where young Georgian women, dressed like courtezans, acted obscene plays, and prostituted themselves for hire. When these offensive irregularities were suppressed by order of the court, these houses became places of genteel resort for the indolent, and of relaxation for the busy part of the world. The politicians entertained themselves with news, the poets recited their verses, and the Mollachs, delivered their sermons, which were usually rewarded with some charitable donations.

AFFAIRS were not in the same peaceable state at Constantinople. The coffee-houses were no sooner opened than they were frequented to excess. People spent their whole time in them. The grand Mufti, concerned to see the Mosques abandoned, pronounced that this infusion was included in that law of Mohammed, which forbids the use of strong liquors. The government, which frequently aids the superstition of which it is sometimes the dupe, gave immediate orders that the houses which had given such offence to the priests should be shut up; and enjoined the officers of the police to put a stop to the use of this liquor in private families. An inclination so strong still prevailed in spite of all these severe regulations. Coffee continued to be drunk, and the places where it was to be had, soon grew more numerous than ever.

**BOOK**  
**III.**

IN the middle of the last age, Kuproli, the Grand Vizir, went in disguise to the principal coffee-houses in Constantinople. He there found a number of mal-contented, who, thinking the affairs of government were in reality the concern of every private person, spoke of them with warmth, and arraigned with great boldness the conduct of the generals and ministers. He then visited the taverns, where wine was sold. They were full of plain people chiefly soldiers, who, accustomed to consider the interests of the state as those of the prince, for whom they entertained a silent veneration, sung lively songs, talked of their amours, and warlike exploits. These last societies, which were attended with no inconveniences, he thought ought to be tolerated: but the first he considered as dangerous in an arbitrary state. He therefore suppressed them, and no attempts have since been made to revive them. This regulation, which was confined to the capital of the empire, has not discouraged the use of coffee, and has, perhaps, increased the consumption of it. It is publicly offered to sale in all the streets and markets ready made, and is drunk in every family at least twice a day. In some it is always ready, it being the custom to offer it to all visitors, and reckoned equally unpolite not to offer it, or to refuse it.

AT the very time that the coffee-houses in Constantinople were shut, they were opened in London. This novelty was introduced there in 1652 by a merchant of the name of Edward, who returned from the Levant. The English were fond of it; and it has since been introduced among all the nations of Europe, but is drunk with more moderation than in those climates where religion prohibits the use of wine.

THE tree that produces the coffee grows in the territory of Betelsagui, a town belonging to Yemen, situated

ated upon a dry sand at the distance of ten leagues from the Red sea. It is cultivated in a district fifty leagues long, and fifteen or twenty broad: the fruit is not every where in equal perfection. That which grows upon high ground is smaller, greener, weighs heavier, and is generally preferred to the others.

It is computed that Arabia contains twelve millions of inhabitants, among whom, in general, coffee constitutes a favourite article in their entertainments. None but the rich citizens have the pleasure of tasting it in its genuine form. The generality are obliged to content themselves with the shell, and the husk of this valuable berry. These appendages, so much despised, make a liquor of a pretty clear colour, which has the taste of coffee without its bitterness and strength. These articles may be had at a low price at Betelsagui, which is the general market for them. Here likewise is sold all the coffee which comes out of the country by land. The rest is carried to Mocha, which is thirty-five leagues distant, or to the nearer ports of Lohia or Hodeida, from whence it is transported in small vessels to Jodda. The Egyptians fetch it from the last mentioned place, and all other nations from the former.

THE quantity of coffee exported may be estimated at twelve millions five hundred and fifty thousand weight. The European companies take off a million and a half; the Persians three millions and a half; the fleet from Suez six millions and a half; Indostan, the Maldives, and the Arabian colonies on the coast of Africa, fifty thousand; and the Caravans a million.

As the coffee which is bought up by the Caravans and the Europeans, is the best that can be procured, it costs from sixteen to seventeen sols (about 8d.  $\frac{1}{2}$ ) a pound. The Persians, who content themselves with that of an inferior quality, pay no more than twelve or thirteen sols (about 6d.  $\frac{1}{2}$ .) a pound. The Egyptians

B O O K  
III.

purchase it at the rate of fifteen or sixteen; (about 8*d*.) their cargoes being composed partly of good and partly of bad coffee. If we estimate coffee at fourteen sols (about 7*d*.  $\frac{1}{2}$ .) a pound, which is the mean price, the profits accruing to Arabia from its annual exportation will amount to 8,785,000 livres. (384,343*l*. 15*s*.) This money does not go into their coffers; but it enables them to purchase the commodities brought from the foreign markets to their ports of Jodda and Mocha.

MOCHA receives from Abyssinia sheep, elephant's teeth, musk, and slaves. It is supplied from the eastern coast of Africa with slaves, amber, and ivory; from the Persian Gulf with dates, tobacco, and corn; from Surat with a vast quantity of coarse, and a few fine linens; from Bombay and Pondicherry with iron, lead, copper, which are carried thither from Europe; from Malabar with rice, ginger, pepper, Indian saffron, with coire, cardamom, and even planks; from the Maldives with gum benzoin, aloes-wood, and pepper, which these islands take in exchange; from Coromandel, four or five hundred bales of cottons, chiefly blue. The greatest part of these commodities, which may fetch six millions, (262,500*l*.) are consumed in the interior part of the country. The rest, particularly the cottons, find their way to Abyssinia, Socotora, and the eastern coast of Africa.

NONE of the branches of business which are managed at Mocha, as well as throughout all the country of Yemen, or even at Sanaa, the capital, is in the hands of the natives. The extortions with which they are perpetually threatened by the government, deter them from interfering in them. All the warehouses are occupied by the Banians of Surat or Guzerat, who make a point of returning to their own country as soon as they have made their fortune. They then resign their settlements

settlements to merchants of their own nation who retire in their turn, and are succeeded by others.

THE European companies, who enjoy the exclusive privilege of trading beyond the Cape of Good Hope, formerly maintained agents at Mocha. Notwithstanding it was stipulated by a solemn capitulation that the imposts demanded should be rated, at two and a quarter per cent. they were subject to frequent extortions. The governor of the place insisting on their making him presents, which enabled him to purchase the favour of the courtiers; or even of the prince himself. However the profits they obtained by the sale of European goods, particularly cloths, inclined them to submit to these repeated humiliations. When these several articles were furnished by grand Cairo, it was then impossible to withstand the competition, and the fixed settlements were therefore given up.

THE trade is carried on by the ships that sail from Europe with iron, lead, copper, and silver, sufficient to pay for the coffee they intend to buy. The supercargoes, who have the care of these transactions, settle matters every voyage. These expeditions, which at first were pretty numerous and advantageous, have been successively laid aside. The plantations of coffee, made by the European nations in their colonies, have equally lessened the consumption and the price of that which comes from Arabia. At the long run, these voyages did not yield a sufficient profit to answer the high charges of direct expeditions. The companies of England and France then resolved one of them to send ships from Bombay, and the other from Pondicherry to Mocha, with the merchandise of Europe and India. They even frequently had recourse to a method that was less expensive. The English and French who traffic from India to India, visit the Red Sea every year. Though they

**B O O K**  
**III.**

they dispose of their merchandise there to good advantage, they can never take in cargoes from thence for their return. They carry, for a moderate freight, the coffee belonging to the companies who lade the vessels with it, which they dispatch from Malabar and Coromandel to Europe. The Dutch company, who prohibit their servants from having armaments, and who fit out no expeditions themselves for the Arabic Gulph, are deprived of the share they might take in this branch of commerce. They have also given up a much more lucrative branch, that of Iodda.

IODDA is a port situated near the middle of the Arabic Gulph, twenty leagues from Jerusalem. The government there is of a mixed kind: the Grand Seignior and the Xeriff of Mecca share the authority and the revenue of the customs between them. These imposts are levied upon the Europeans at the rate of eight per cent. and upon other nations at thirteen. They are always paid in merchandise, which the managers oblige the merchants of the country to buy at a very dear rate. The Turks, who have been driven from Aden, Mocha, and every part of the Yemen, would long ago have been expelled from Iodda, if there had not been room to apprehend that they might revenge themselves in such a manner as to put an end to their pilgrimages and commerce.

SURAT sends three ships every year to Iodda, which are laden with linens of all colours, shawls, cotton and silk stuffs, frequently ornamented with gold and silver flowers. The sale of these goods produces ten millions of livres. (437,500*l*.) Two, and oftener three vessels belonging to the English, sail from Bengal for the same destination. They are fitted out by the free merchants of that nation. Formerly their company had concerns there;

there; at present these merchants have no associates but the Armenians. These united cargoes may be estimated at seven millions two hundred thousand livres. (315,000*l*.) They consist of rice, ginger, saffron, sugar, a few silk stuffs, and a considerable quantity of linens, which are for the most part ordinary. These vessels, which may enter the Mediterranean from the beginning of December till the end of May find the fleet of Suez at Iodda.

THIS fleet commonly consists of fourteen or fifteen vessels laden with corn, rice, and pulse, for the use of Arabia. They carry out for Asia Venetian glass-ware, coral, yellow-amber, of which the Indians make necklaces and bracelets. They arrive together in October, and return together in February, with six million five hundred thousand weight of coffee, and with linens or stuffs to the value of seven millions of livres. (306,250*l*.) Though they have only two hundred leagues to sail to regain their port, they employ two months in the voyage; being retarded by the north wind which blows continually in this sea. Their ignorance is such, that though they are accustomed to cast anchor every night, they think themselves fortunate when they lose only the sixth part of their ships. If to these losses we add the great expence of their armaments, the excessive imposts demanded at Suez, and the unavoidable extortions of a government that oppresses all industry, we shall be convinced that, in the present situation of things the correspondence between Europe and India by this channel is impracticable.

THE merchandise brought from Surat and Bengal, which the Egyptian fleet does not take off, is partly consumed in the country, and bought in great quantities by the caravans, which come every year to Mecca.

THE



**B O O K**  
**III.**

THE Arabs had ever entertained an affection for this city. They thought it had been the residence of Abraham, and they flocked from all parts to a temple of which they believed he was the founder. Mohammed, who was a man of too much understanding to attempt to abolish a devotion so generally established, contented himself with rectifying the object of it. He banished the idols from this revered place, and dedicated it to the unity of God. Mohammed was not the messenger of heaven; but he was an acute politician, and a great conqueror. To promote the concourse of strangers to a city which he intended to make the capital of his empire, he commanded that all who embraced his law should once in their lives undertake a pilgrimage thither, on pain of dying reprobates. This precept was accompanied with another, which makes it evident that he was not guided by superstition alone. He ordered that every pilgrim, of whatever country he was, should purchase five pieces of cotton, and get them consecrated, and made into handkerchiefs for himself, and all the persons belonging to his family, who were prevented by reasonable impediments, from undertaking this holy expedition.

THIS policy might naturally be expected to make Arabia the center of a prodigious trade, when the number of pilgrims should amount to several millions. This zeal is so much abated especially on the coast of Africa, in Indostan and Persia, in proportion to the respective distances of those places from Mecca, that the number is reduced to a hundred and fifty thousand: of which the Turks make the greatest part. They carry away with them seven hundred and fifty thousand pieces of linen; each ten ells in length, exclusively of those which many of them buy for sale. They are encouraged in these mercantile schemes, by the advantages they have in crossing the

the deserts, and in not being exposed to those oppressive tolls which are so destructive in the sea-ports of Suez and Bassora. The money received from these pilgrims and from the fleet, and by the Arabs from the sale of coffee, is expended in India. The vessels from Surat, Malabar, Coromandel, and Bengal, annually carry away 14,400,000 livres, (630,000*l.*) and about the eighth part of this sum in merchandise. When these riches come to be divided among the trading nations of Europe, the most considerable share is appropriated by the English. They have acquired the same superiority in Persia.

**B O O K**  
**III.**

THE English nation had scarce been admitted into the empire of the Sophis, when, as we have observed, the Dutch resorted there in great numbers. The trade of these republicans was at first established on a very disadvantageous footing; but being, by the civil wars of England, soon delivered from a rival whose various privileges were not to be overbalanced even by the greatest oeconomy, they were in a short time without competitors, and consequently acquired an authority to set what price they thought proper on the commodities they bought or sold. The connections of the Persians with the Dutch were founded on this destructive system; when the return of the English, who were soon after followed by the French, gave a new turn to affairs and put them upon a more equitable footing.

General  
view of the  
trade in the  
Persian  
Gulph, and  
that of the  
English in  
particular.

AT the time when the three nations exerted their utmost efforts to gain the superiority, and these efforts turned to the advantage of the empire, they were harassed with a thousand oppressions, some more unjust and odious than the rest. The throne was continually filled with tyrannical or weak princes, whose cruelty and injustice, weakened the correspondence of their subjects with

**B O O K**  
**III.**

with other nations. One of these tyrants was so savage, that a great man of his court used to say, *That whenever he came out of the king's closet he clapped both his hands to his head to feel whether it was still upon his shoulders.* When his successor was told that the finest provinces in empire were invaded by the Turks, he answered coldly, *That their progress gave him very little disturbance, provided they would leave him the city of Ispahan.* His son was so meanly enslaved to the most frivolous observances of his religion, that he was stiled, by way of derision, *Hussein the monk, or priest*: a character less odious, perhaps, in a prince, but much more dangerous to his people, than that of impiety, or defiance of the gods. Under these despicable sovereigns, mercantile affairs every day declined more and more at Gombroon. The Afghans reduced them to nothing.

THESE are a people of Candahar, a mountainous country, lying north of India. They have sometimes been subject to the Moguls, sometimes to the Persians, but more frequently independent. Those that do not reside in the capital live in tents, after the manner of the Tartars. They are of low stature and ill made; but are nervous, robust and skilled in the use of the bow, and in horsemanship, and inured to fatigue. Their manner of fighting is singular; picked soldiers, divided into two troops, fall upon the enemy without any order only endeavouring to open the way for the army that follows them. As soon as the battle is begun, they retire to the flanks and rear-guard, where their business is to prevent any person from giving way. If any soldier attempts to fly, they attack him with their sabres, and compel him to resume his ranks.

ABOUT the beginning of the century, this fierce people left their mountains poured into Persia, carried devastation every where, and at length subdued it, after a carnage



nage of twenty years. Fanaticism prolonged the horrid outrages with which they were stained in the course of their conquest. An insatiable zeal for the Turkish superstition, and an unconquerable aversion for the sect of Ali, prompted them to massacre thousands of Persians in cold blood. In the mean time, the provinces they had not entered, were ravaged by the Russians, Turks, and Tartars. Thomas Kouli-Khan drove these robbers out of this country, but shewed himself still more barbarous than they. His violent death gave birth to new calamities. Anarchy aggravates the cruelties of tyranny. One of the finest empires in the world, is become an extensive scene of desolation, and a lasting and shameful monument of that destructive instinct that animates uncivilized people, and is at the same time an inevitable consequence of the vices of despotic government.

DURING this general confusion, the English sales in Persia consisted of no more than a hundred bales of woollen goods, two hundred thousand weight of iron, and the same quantity of lead. These articles, taken together, brought them no more than from twelve to thirteen hundred thousand livres (554,687*l.* 10*s.*) paid in money. This deadness of trade determined the company to follow the example of their rivals, and to seek those advantages at Bassora, which they could not obtain at Gombroon.

BASSORA is a large city, built by the Arabs, in the height of their prosperity, fifteen leagues below the place where the Tigris and Euphrates meet and at the same distance from the Persian Gulph, into which these rivers disembogue themselves. Its inhabitants are computed at fifty thousand; consisting of Arabs, fifteen hundred Armenians, and a small number of families of different nations whom the hope of gain has attracted hither.

**B O O K**  
**III.**

hither. Its territory abounds in rice, fruits, pulse, cotton and particularly in dates.

THE port Bassora, as those who first established it foresaw, became a famous mart. The merchandize of Europe was brought thither by the Euphrates, and that of India by sea. The tyranny of the Portuguese intercepted this communication. It would have been opened again when their power declined, had not this unhappy country continually been the scene of the disputes between the Arabs, the Persians, and the Turks. This last power being in quiet possession of this harbour, have availed themselves of the troubles of their neighbours to renew the trade. The mercantile business, which was before transacted at Gombroon, is at present centered at Bassora, which has recovered its credit and importance.

THIS change has not been effected without difficulty. At first the people of the country were desirous of confining the traders to the river. They foresaw, that if these foreigners were permitted to settle in the city; they would not be so much under their direction, and might lay up in their magazines such of their commodities as they could not sell during one monsoon, with a view of disposing of them with greater advantage at another time. To this maxim, which was the result of an ill-judged avarice, were added others arising from superstitious notions. It was deemed a violation of the respect due to religion to permit infidels to inhabit a city consecrated by the blood of so many martyrs and saints of the Mohammedan persuasion. This prejudice seemed to have some weight with the government. These scruples were overcome. Pecuniary considerations were offered by these nations, and they were allowed to establish factories, and even to display their respective flags belonging to their country.

REVOLUTIONS

REVOLUTIONS are so frequent in Asia, that trade cannot possibly be carried on in the same continued track that it is in Europe. These events, joined to the little communication subsisting between the different states by sea and land, must naturally occasion great variations in the quantity and value of commodities. Bassora, on account of its great distance from the center of business, is more exposed to this inconvenience than any other place. However, upon an average, we may, without fearing to be very wide of the truth, venture to estimate the merchandise annually brought by way of the gulph, at twelve millions, (525,000*l.*) Of this the English furnish four millions, (175,000*l.*) the Dutch two; (87,500*l.*) the Moors, Banians, Armenians and Arabs, furnish the remainder.

THE cargoes of these nations consist of rice, sugar, plain, striped and flowered muslins from Bengal, spices from Ceylon, and the Molucca islands; coarse white and blue cottons from Coromandel; cardamon, pepper, sanders-wood, from Malabar; gold and silver stuffs, turbans, shawls, indigo, from Surat; pearls from Bahren, and coffee from Mocha; iron, lead, and woollen-cloth from Europe. Other articles of less consequence are imported from different places. Some of these commodities are shipped on board small Arabian vessels, but the greater part is brought by European ships, which have the advantage of a considerable freight.

THIS merchandise is sold for ready money; and passes through the hands of the Greeks, Jews, and Armenians. The current money is converted at Bassora, by the Banians, into specie that passes better in India.

THE different commodities collected at Bassora, are distributed into three channels. One half of them goes to Persia, where they are conveyed by the Caravans: there being no navigable river in the whole empire.

**B O O K**  
**III.**

The chief consumption is in the northern provinces, which have not been so much ravaged as those in the south. Both of them formerly made their payments in precious stones, which were become common by the plunder of India. They had afterwards recourse to copper utensils, which their mines furnished in great abundance. At present they give gold and silver in exchange, which had been concealed during a long scene of tyranny, and are constantly dug out of the bowels of the earth. If they do not allow time for the trees that produce gum and have been cut, to make fresh shoots; if they neglect to multiply the breed of the goats which afford such fine wool; and if the silks which are hardly sufficient to supply the few manufacturers remaining in Persia continue to be so scarce; if this empire does not rise again from its ashes, the mines will be exhausted, and this source of commerce must be given up.

THE second channel is a more sure one, by the way of Bagdad, Aleppo, and other intermediate towns, whose merchants come to buy their goods at Bassora. Coffee, linen, spices, and other merchandise that pass this way, are taken in exchange for gold, French woollen-cloths, galls, and orpiment which is an ingredient in colours, and much used by the eastern people in extirpating hair from their bodies.

ANOTHER much less considerable channel is that of Arabia Deserta. The Arabs, bordering upon Bassora, repair annually to Aleppo in the spring, to sell their camels. It is usual to give them credit for muslins to the amount of six hundred thousand livres, which they buy very cheap. They return in the autumn, bringing woollen-cloths, coral, hard-ware, and some glass and mirrors from Venice. The Arabian Caravans never meet with any interruption in their journey; nor are foreigners

foreigners in any danger, if they take care to carry along with them a person belonging to each of the tribes they may happen to meet with. This road through the desert would be universally preferred to that of Bagdad, on account of safety, expedition, and the advantages of sale, if the Pacha of the province, who has established tolls in different parts of his territory, did not use every possible precaution to hinder this communication. It is only, by eluding the vigilance of his deputies, that one can prevail upon the Arabs to carry with them some goods, which will not take up much room.

BESIDES these experiments, there is a pretty large consumption, especially of coffee, at Bassora, and the territories belonging to it. These articles are paid for in dates, pearls, rose-water, dried fruits, and grain when that is allowed to be disposed of to foreigners.

THIS trade would be more extensive if it were freed from the shackles that confine it. But the activity that might be expected from the natives of the country is continually damped by the oppressions they labour under, especially at a distance from the centre of the empire. The foreigners are no less distressed by the governors, whose extortions furnish them with the means of keeping their posts, and frequently of preserving their lives. Were it possible in some measure to assuage this thirst of gold, it would soon be renewed by the rivalry of the European nations, whose sole aim is to supplant one another, and, who, to gain their ends, scruple not to employ the most execrable expedients. A striking instance of this odious spirit of jealousy happened in 1748.

BARON Knyphausen managed the Dutch factory at Bassora with extraordinary success. The English found themselves in imminent danger of losing the superiority they had acquired at this place as well as in most of the



**B O O K**  
**III.**

sea-ports in India. The dread of an event which must wound at the same time their interests and their vanity betrayed them into injustice. They excited the Turkish government to suppress a branch of trade that was useful to it, and procured an order for the confiscation of the merchandise and possessions of their rivals.

THE Dutch factor, who under the character of a merchant, concealed the statesman, instantly took a resolution worthy of a man of genius. He retired with his dependents and the broken remains of his fortune to Kerek, a small island at the distance of fifteen leagues from the mouth of the river: where he fortified himself in such a manner, that by intercepting the Arabian and Indian vessels, bound for the city, he compelled the government to grant him an indemnification for the losses he had sustained by its behaviour. The fame of his integrity and abilities drew to his island the privateers of the neighbouring ports, the very merchants of Bassora and the Europeans who traded thither. This new colony found its prosperity increase every day, when it was abandoned by its founder. The successor of this able man did not display the same talents. Towards the end of the year 1765 he suffered himself to be dispossessed of his island by the Arabian Corsair Mirmahana. The company have lost an important post, and more than two millions (87,500*l.*) in artillery, provisions and merchandise.

By this event Bassora was freed from a rivalry that was prejudicial to its interest; but an unforeseen and much more formidable one has succeeded in its room, which is that of Muskat.

MUSKAT is a city in Arabia, situated on the western side of the Persian gulph. The great Albuquerque made himself master of it in 1507, and ruined its trade, which he wanted to transfer wholly to Ormus. When  
the

the Portuguese had lost this small kingdom, they were desirous of reviving the trade at Muskat, of which they still kept possession. Their endeavours proved ineffectual; and the merchants bent their course to Gombroon. They dreaded the insolence of the old tyrants of India; and were unwilling to rely upon their fidelity. No vessels entered the harbour except those brought by themselves. It ceased to be frequented by the ships of every nation, after these imperious masters were driven from it in 1648. Their pride getting the better of their self-interest, made them no longer desirous of going thither: and had still power sufficient to prevent any ships from entering or going out.

THE declension of their power tempted the inhabitants of Muskat to the same acts of piracy, to which they had long been exposed. They made descents upon the coasts of their ancient oppressors; and the success they met with encouraged them to attack the small Moorish and European vessels that frequented the Persian gulph. But they were so severely chastised for their depredations by several nations, and especially by the English, that they were obliged to desist. From that period the city remained in a state of neglect, which was prolonged for a considerable time by intestine broils, and foreign invasions. At length the government assuming a more regular form at Muskat, and in the whole country, under the jurisdiction of its Iman, its commerce began to revive about the year 1749.

THE articles of consumption in the country itself are rice; blue linens, iron, lead, sugar, and some spices; the returns for which are made in myrrh, incense, gum-arabic, and a small quantity of silver. This consumption, however, would not be considerable enough to invite ships hither, if Muskat, which is situated pretty near the entrance of the Persian sea,

**B O O K**  
**III.**

were not an excellent mart for the innermost part of the gulph. All trading nations begin to give it the preference to Bassora; because it makes their voyage shorter by three months; they are free from any kind of extortion; and imports are lowered to one and a half per cent. The merchandise, indeed, is afterwards to be carried to Bassora, where it pays a tax of three per cent. but the Arabs make such advantage of their boats, and have so many methods of eluding the tolls, that they will always find their account in disposing of their goods at Muskat. Besides this, the dates, which are produced at Bassora in greater plenty and perfection than any other article, and are often spoilt on board large vessels that sail slowly, are brought with the utmost expedition in light barks to Malabar, and the Red Sea. There is a particular reason which will always determine the English, who trade for themselves, to frequent Muskat. They are there exempted from the five per cent. which they are obliged to pay at Bassora, as well as at all other places where their company have made settlements.

THIS company have never attempted to establish themselves on the island of Baharen; which we are at a loss to account for. This island which lies in the Persian Gulph, has often changed its masters. It fell, with Ormus, under the dominion of the Portuguese, and was governed by the same laws. These conquerors were afterwards deprived of it, and it has since undergone a variety of revolutions. Thomas Kouli Khan restored it to Persia to which it had belonged. This haughty usurper at that time conceived the plan of an extensive authority. He wanted to make himself master of two seas, some coasts of which he already possessed: but finding that his subjects opposed his design instead of favouring it, he had recourse to one of those  
 arbitrary

arbitrary acts which tyrants make no scruple of exercising, and transported his subjects in the Persian gulph to the Caspian sea, and those in the Caspian sea to the Persian gulph. He looked upon this double transmigration as the necessary means of breaking the connections which both these people had formed with his enemies, and of securing their fidelity, if he could not engage their attachment. His death put a period to his vast designs: and the confusion into which his empire was thrown, afforded a fair opportunity to an ambitious and enterprising Arab of taking possession of Baharen, where he still maintains his authority.

THIS island, famous for its pearl fishery even at the time when pearls were found at Ormus, Kerek, Keshy, and other places in the Gulph, is now become of much greater consequence; the other banks having been exhausted, while those near it have suffered no sensible diminution. The time of fishing begins in April, and ends in October. It is confined to a tract of four or five leagues. The Arabs who alone follow this employment, pass their nights upon the island or the coast, unless they are prevented by the wind from going on shore. They formerly paid a toll which was received by the galliots on that station. Since the last changes, none but the inhabitants of this island pay this acknowledgment to their chief, who is not in a condition to demand them from others.

THE pearls taken at Baharen, though not so white as those of Ceylon and Japan, are much larger than those of the former place, and of a more regular shape than those of the latter. They are of a yellowish cast; but have this recommendation, that they preserve their golden hue; whereas the whiter kind lose much of their lustre by keeping, particularly in hot countries. The shell of both these species, which is known by the name

**B O O K**  
**III.**

of mother of pearl, is used in Asia for various purposes.

THE annual revenue, arising from the fishery in the latitude of Baharen, is computed at 3,600,000 livres, (157,500*l.*) The greatest part of the pearls that are uneven, are carried to Constantinople, and other ports of Turkey; where the larger compose part of the ornaments of the head-dress, and the smaller are used in works of embroidery. The perfect pearls are of course reserved for Surat, from whence they are distributed throughout all Indostan. The women have so strong a passion for luxury, and the sale of this article is so much increased by superstition, that there is not the least reason to apprehend any diminution either in the price or the demand. There are none of the Gentiles who do not make a point of religion to bore at least one pearl at the time of their marriage. Whatever may be the mysterious meaning of this custom among a people whose morality and politics are couched in allegories, or where allegory becomes religion; this emblem of virgin modesty has proved advantageous to the pearl trade. The pearls that have not newly been bored, make a part of dress; but cannot have a place in the marriage ceremony, where one new pearl at least is indispensable. They are accordingly always sold five and twenty or thirty per cent. cheaper than those brought from the Gulph where they are taken. There are no pearls at Malabar: but it has riches of another kind.

General  
 state of the  
 trade on  
 the coast  
 of Mala-  
 bar; and  
 that of the  
 English in  
 particular.

MALABAR is, properly speaking, a country situated between Cape Comorin, and the river of Neticeram. But to make our narrative the better understood by accommodating it to the notions generally received in Europe; we shall give this name to the whole tract extending from the Indus to Cape Comorin, including the adjacent islands, and beginning with the Maldives.

THE

THE Maldives form a longer chain of islands to the west of Cape Comorin, which is the nearest part of the Terra Firma. They are divided into thirteen provinces, which are called atollons. This division is the work of nature, which has surrounded each atollon with a barrier of rocks, which is a better defence than the best fortification against the impetuosity of the waves, or the attacks of an enemy. The natives compute the number of these islands at twelve thousand; the smallest of which are nothing more than banks of sand that are overflowed at high tides, and the largest very small in circumference. Of all the channels that separate them, there are only four capable of receiving ships. The rest are so shallow, that they have seldom more than three feet water. It is conjectured, with probability, that all these different islands were formerly one, and that the force of the waves and currents, or some great natural event has divided them into several portions.

It is probable, that this Archipelago was originally peopled from Malabar. Afterwards the Arabians sailed thither, usurped the sovereignty, and established their own religion. The two nations united together: when the Portuguese, soon after their arrival in India, reduced them into subjection. This tyranny was of short continuance. The garrison which held them in slavery was exterminated, and the Maldives recovered their independence. Since this period they have fallen under the yoke of an arbitrary prince, who keeps his court at Male, and has resigned the whole authority to the priests. He is the sole merchant in his dominions.

AN administration of this stamp, and the barrenness of the country which produces nothing but cocoa-trees, hinder the trade from being considerable. The exports consist only of cowries, fish and kayar.

KAYAR

**BOOK**  
**III.**

**KAYAR** is the bark of the cocoa-tree, of which cables are made, which serve for the Indian navigation. This is no where so good, and in such plenty as in the Maldives. A great quantity is carried together with cowries to Ceylon, where these commodities are exchanged for the arekka nut.

**THE** fish, called in the country, complemasse, is dried in the sun. It is salted by plunging it several times into the sea; and cut into pieces of the thickness and length of a man's finger. Cargoes of it are annually brought to Achen, which are purchased with gold and benzoin. The gold goes no farther than the Maldives; and the benzoin is sent to Mocha, where it procures in return about three hundred bales of coffee for the consumption of these islands.

**COWRIES** are white and shining shells. They fish for them twice a month; three days before the new moon, and three days after. This employment belongs to the women, who wade to the middle in water to gather them upon the sands. They are put up in parcels containing twelve thousand. Those that are not circulated in the country, or carried to Ceylon, are sent to the banks of the Ganges. A great number of vessels annually sail from this river, laden with sugar, rice, linen, and other less considerable articles for the use of the Maldives, and return with a cargo of cowries valued at about 700,000 livres, (30,625*l.*) One part is circulated in Bengal, where it serves as small coin. The rest is taken off by the Europeans, who turn it to account in their trade with Africa. They buy it at six fols (about 3*d.*) a pound, and sell it from twelve to eighteen (near 8*d.* on an average) in their several capitals: it is worth thirty-five (*l.* 16*s.* 7*d.*  $\frac{1}{2}$ .) in Guinea.

**THE** kingdom of Travancore, which extends from Cape Comorin to the frontiers of Cochin, was formerly  
little

little more opulent than the Maldives. It is probable that it owed the preservation of its independency to its poverty, when the Moguls made themselves masters of Madura. The present monarch's father added more dignity to his crown than any of his predecessors. He was a man of great abilities. One of the neighbouring states had sent him two ambassadors, one of whom began a long harangue, which the other was preparing to continue. *Be not tedious, life is short*, said the prince, with an austere brow. He formed a small body of troops of the French and Portuguese deserters, which, in time of peace, did duty in the citadel of Kotate, with as much regularity as our garrisons, and were of signal service in enlarging his dominions in time of war. The interior parts of his country were benefited by his conquests, a circumstance that rarely happens. He established there large cotton manufactures, which were sold at first to the Dutch at Tutocorin, and were afterwards carried to the English factory at Anjengo.

THERE are two European settlements in the kingdom of Travancore: that of the Danes at Kolechy is nothing more than a small storehouse, where they might nevertheless be regularly supplied with two hundred thousand weight of pepper. Such is their indolence, or their poverty, that they have made but one purchase, and that only of a very small quantity, these ten years.

THE English factory at Anjengo has four small bastions without ditches, and a garrison of a hundred and fifty black and white men. It is situated on a sandy point of land at the mouth of a small river, which is three fourths of the year choaked up with sand. Its village is well peopled, and a variety of trades are exercised there. This settlement is, in general, more lucrative to the agents of the company who buy pepper,



B O O K  
III.

per, large cinnamon, and very good kayar, on their account, than to the company themselves, who trade only for fifty thousand weight of pepper, and some linens of small value.

COCHIN was a place of great note when the Portuguese arrived in India. They made themselves masters of it, and were afterwards dispossessed by the Dutch. The sovereign, when he lost it, had preserved his dominions, which in the space of twenty-five years, have been repeatedly invaded by the kingdom of Travancore. His misfortunes have obliged him to retire under the walls of his ancient capital, where he lives upon a revenue of 14,400 livres, (630*l.*) which was stipulated to be paid him by ancient capitulations, out of the produce of his customs. In the same suburb is a colony of industrious Jews, who are white men, and idly pretend to have been settled here at the time of the Babylonish captivity, but have certainly been so a very long time. A town encompassed with fertile lands, and built upon a river that receives vessels of five hundred tons burthen, and communicates by several navigable branches to the interior parts of the country, may naturally be expected to be in a flourishing condition. If it is otherwise, the blame must lie on the oppressive nature of the government.

THIS malignant spirit is at least as sensibly felt at Calicut: all nations are admitted thither, but none have the ascendant. The sovereign who resigns there at present is a Bramin. This is almost the only throne in India that is filled by a person of this first class. In other places the crown is worn by the inferior classes; and even by persons of such obscure origin, that their domestics would be dishonoured and banished from their tribes, if they condescended even to eat with their monarchs. These people take care not to boast of  
supping

supping with the king: this prejudice is not, perhaps, more ridiculous than any other. It humbles the pride of princes, and cures courtiers of a piece of vanity. Such is the influence of superstition: it is this that gives rise to the universal prevalence of opinion. By superstition artifice divides the empire with power, when the latter has conquered and enslaved the world, the former interposes and prescribes laws in its turn: they enter into a league with each other, mankind fall prostrate, and submit to their chains. Accordingly the Bramins, who are the depositaries of religion and the sciences throughout Indostan, are every where employed by the Rajah as ministers or secretaries of state, and make what arrangements they think proper; but affairs are not the better managed on that account.

THE administration of Calicut is bad in general, and that of the capital still worse. No police is established, no fortifications are raised. The trade, which is clogged with a multiplicity of imposts, is almost entirely in the hands of a few of the most abandoned and faithless Moors in Asia. One of its greatest advantages is, that by the river Baypore, which is only at two leagues distance, it has the means of being furnished with teak timber, which grows upon the plains and mountains in great abundance.

THE territories that border upon Calicut, and belong to the House of Colastry, are little known; except by the French colony at Mahé, which is gathering fresh strength, and that of the English at Tellecherry, which has met with no disaster. The latter has a fort flanked with four bastions without ditches, a garrison of three hundred Europeans, five hundred sipahis, and inhabitants to the amount of about fifteen thousand. The company to which it belongs receives from it annually

**B O O K** usually fifteen hundred thousand pound weight of pepper.  
**III.**

If we except a few principalities that scarce deserve mention, the states we have been describing properly constitute the whole of the Malabar coast, a country more agreeable than opulent. The exports are few, besides aromatics and spices. The principal articles are sanders wood, Indian saffron, cardamon, ginger, bastard cinnamon, and pepper.

THE santalum or sanders grows to the size of a walnut tree; the fruit, which in some degree resembles a cherry, is of no value. The wood, which is better in Malabar than in any other place except Kanara, where it grows in still higher perfection, is either red, yellow, or white. From the two last kinds an oil is extracted, with which the Chinese, Indians, Persians, Arabians and Turks anoint their bodies. It is likewise burnt in their houses, and yields a fragrant and wholesome smell. The red sanders is least esteemed, and is scarce ever used but in medicine.

THE Indian saffron, called by the physicians curcuma, is a plant with leaves resembling those of the white hellebore; the flower is of a fine purple colour, and the fruit has, like our chestnuts a rough coat containing the seed, which is round like a pea. The root, which has a bitter taste, and has long been esteemed of an aperient quality, was formerly used as a remedy for the jaundice. The Indians make a yellow dye of it, and it is an ingredient in most of their dishes.

THE cardamon is a grain generally used in Indian ragoûts: it propagates itself without sowing or planting. Nothing more is required than, as soon as the rainy season is over, to set fire to the herb that has produced it. It is often mixed with arekka and betel, and sometimes chewed afterwards. The most esteemed sort,

fort, which is small, grows in the territory of Cana- **B O O K**  
 nor; it is used in medicine chiefly to help digestion, **III.**  
 and to strengthen the stomach.

**GINGER** is a plant whose root is white, tender, and almost as pungent to the palate as pepper. The Indians put it into their rice, which is their common diet, to correct its natural insipidity. This spice, mixed with others, gives the dishes seasoned with it a strong taste, which is extremely disagreeable to strangers. The Europeans, however, who come to Asia without fortunes, are obliged to accustom themselves to it. The others adopt it out of complaisance to their wives, who are generally natives of the country. It is here, as well as in all other places, much easier for the men to conform to the tastes and foibles of the women, than to get the better of them. Perhaps too the climate may require this manner of living.

**BASTARD** cinnamon, known in Europe by the name of *castia lignea*, is to be had at Timor, Java, and Mindanao; but that which grows on the Malabar coast is much superior. The Dutch, despairing of their power to extirpate the trees in the forests that produce it, fell upon the expedient during their superiority in Malabar, of compelling the sovereigns of the country to give up their right to bark them. This prohibition, which was never strictly complied with, has been less so since the nation that made it has lost its authority, and the price of the cinnamon of Ceylon has been advanced in consequence of that measure. The present produce at Malabar may be computed at two hundred thousand weight. The least part of it is brought to Europe, where it is sold for the best sort by merchants who are not very honest; the rest is sent over all India, where it sells from twenty to twenty-five sols (from 10d. halfp. to about 13d.) a pound, though it costs no more than  
 six,

**B O O K**  
**III.**

fix, (about 3d.) The trade is entirely in the hands of the free English merchants; it may admit of improvement, but will never come near that of pepper.

THE pepper-plant is a shrub whose root is small, fibrous, and flexible; it rises into a stem, which requires a tree or a prop to support it. Its wood has the same sort of knots as the vine; and when it is dry, it exactly resembles the vine-branch. The leaves, which have a strong smell and a pungent taste, are oval; but diminish towards the extremity, and terminate in a point. From the flower-buds, which are white, and are sometimes placed in the middle and sometimes at the extremity of the branches, are produced small berries resembling those of the currant-tree. Each of these contains between twenty and thirty corns of pepper; they are commonly gathered in October, and exposed to the sun seven or eight days. The fruit, which was green at first, and afterwards red, when stripped of its covering, becomes such as we see it. The largest, heaviest, and least shrivelled, is the best.

THE pepper-plant flourishes in the islands of Java, Sumatra, and Ceylon, and more particularly on the Malabar coast. It is not sown, but planted; and great nicety is required in the choice of the shoots. It produces no fruit till the end of three years; but bears so plentifully the three succeeding years, that some plants yield between six and seven pounds of pepper. The bark then begins to shrink; and the shrub declines so fast, that in twelve years time it ceases bearing.

THE culture of pepper is not difficult; it is only necessary to plant it in a rich soil, and that the weeds that grow in great abundance round its roots be carefully pulled up, especially the three first years. As the sun is highly necessary to the growth of the pepper-plant, when it is ready to bear, the trees that support it

it must be lopped to prevent their shade from injuring the fruit. When the season is over, it is proper to prune the plant quite to the top. Without this precaution there would be too much wood, and little fruit.

B O O K  
III.

THE pepper exported from Malabar, which was formerly entirely in the hands of the Portuguese, and is at present divided between the Dutch, English, and French, amounts to about ten millions weight. At ten sols a pound (5d.  $\frac{1}{4}$ .) it is worth five millions, (218,750l) it is exported, with other productions, for half that sum. By the sale of these commodities the country is enabled to purchase rice from the Ganges and Kanara, coarse linens from Mysore and Bengal, and several goods sent from Europe. The payments in money amount to little or nothing.

KANARA, a country bordering upon Malabar properly so called, was formerly more opulent. It was an almost inexhaustible granary of rice; but has been much on the decline since it submitted to the yoke of Heyder-Aly-Khan. The trade of this state, which was carried on freely at Mangalore the capital, is intirely engrossed by the conqueror, who refuses to let those have goods that do not furnish him with arms, powder and ammunition. The Portuguese are the only people exempted from this law, who having formerly been masters of this province, have always retained one storehouse which supplies Goa.

THE commerce that invited Venice from her canals and Amsterdam from her marshes, had rendered Goa the center of the riches of India, and the most celebrated mart in the world. It is now reduced to nothing, though defended by two thousand European soldiers, a company of artillery, five thousand sipahis, and costs the state annually thirteen or fourteen hundred thousand

**B O O K**  
**III.**

and livres, (about 59,100 on an average.) Superstition, the Autos da Fé, and the monks extinguish all desire of seeing it restored to its former state. Deprived of so many fertile provinces, which implicitly obeyed its laws, it has nothing remaining but the small island on which it is built, and the two peninsulas that form its harbour.

NEAR a century ago a power was established by sea and land to the north of Goa, the growth of which was not foreseen by any body. The name of the founder of it was Konna Ji Angria. He made himself master of the small island of Severndroog, where he served as a soldier, and built a light vessel on which he embarked as a pirate. At first he confined his attacks to the Moorish or Indian vessels trading upon that coast. His success, experience, and the number of adventurers whom the fame of his courage and generosity invited to join him, enabled him to engage in the greatest enterprises. By degrees he acquired a dominion extending forty leagues over the sea, and between twenty and thirty miles over land, according as the places were situated conveniently for defence. His success and renown were, however, principally owing to his naval operations: which were successfully kept up by his successors. Masters of the coast, these pirates attacked the vessels of all nations without distinction. Besides a great number of small craft, they seized the largest ships belonging to the English, the Jupiter belonging to the French, and three Dutch vessels at once, one of which carried fifty guns.

THE plan of the English was disconcerted by these depredations. They had viewed with pleasure the first attempts of these pirates, which threw the greatest part of the trade, and the whole navigation into their hands; because their ships were of greater force and better manned than those of the country. They could no longer

longer boast this advantage, when the vessels belonging to Bombay, which traded upon the coast were insulted, the cargoes plundered, and the sailors taken prisoners. The precaution taken never to sail without a convoy was very expensive, and proved ineffectual. The convoys were often dispersed and sometimes taken. These depredations determined the company in 1722 to join their forces with those of the Portuguese, who were equally exasperated against these pirates; and it was determined between them to destroy the place of their resort. The expedition was disgraceful and abortive. That which was undertaken by the Dutch, two years after, with seven men of war and two bomb ketches, met with no better success. At length the Marattos, upon Angria's refusing to pay a tribute which had long been customary, agreed to attack the common enemy by land, whilst the English attacked them by sea. This confederacy obtained for them a complete conquest. Most of the harbours and forts were taken in the campaign of 1755. Geriah, the capital, surrendered the year following, and with it fell an empire, whose prosperity had been only founded on public calamities. By its ruin the power of the Marattos, which was formidable already, was unhappily increased.

THESE people, who had been long confined within the limits of their mountains, have by degrees extended themselves towards the sea, and at present possess the large tract between Surat and Goa, where they equally threaten these two cities. They are famous for their incursions and depredations on the coast of Coromandel, the neighbourhood of Delhi, and on the banks of the Ganges; but the centre of their greatest strength, and their fixed station is at Malabar. That spirit of rapine, which they carry into the countries where they occasionally make inroads, is not to be found in the provinces



B O O K  
III.

they have conquered. One may venture to predict, that Bacaim Chaul, Dabul, and many other places, that were so long oppressed by the tyranny of the Portuguese will make some figure again under the government of the Marattos. The fate of Surat is an object of still greater importance.

THIS town was for a long time the only sea-port for the exportation of the manufactures of the Mogul empire, and the importation of whatever was necessary to supply its consumption. To secure its allegiance, and provide for its defence, a citadel was built, the commandant of which had no authority over that of the town; care was even taken to chuse two governors, who, from their character, were not likely to unite in oppressing trade. Some disagreeable circumstances gave rise to a third power. The Indian seas were infested with pirates who interrupted the navigation, and hindered devout Mussulmen from making voyages to Mecca. The emperor thought the superintendant of a colony at Coffrees, settled at Rajapour, would be a proper person to stop the progress of these depredations, and appointed him his admiral. Three lacks of roupies, or 720,000 livres, (between 30,000*l.* and 40,000*l.*) were assigned him for his annual pay. This salary not being punctually paid, the admiral seized the castle, and from that fortress laid the town under contribution. A scene of general confusion ensued; and the avarice of the Marattos, always restless, became more rapacious than ever. These Barbarians, who had extended their usurpations even to the gates of the place, had, for a long time, been allowed a third part of the duties, on condition that they should not molest the inland trade. They contented themselves with this contribution, so long as fortune did not throw more considerable advantages in their way. As soon as they perceived this ferment among the citizens, not doubting  
that

that one of the parties might be transported so far by resentment as to open the gates to them; they drew their forces near to the walls. The traders finding their effects daily in danger of being plundered, called the English to their assistance in 1759, and aided them in taking the citadel. The court of Delhi confirmed them in the possession of it, and in the exercise of the naval command, together with the appointments annexed to both commissions. This revolution restored tranquillity to Surat; but Bombay, which was the cause of it, acquired an addition of credit, wealth and power.

THIS small island, which is not more than twenty miles in circumference, was, for a long time, of little service to the English. Nobody chose to settle in a country, so unhealthy, as to give rise to the proverb, *That at Bombay a man's life did not exceed two monsoons*: the unwholesomeness of the air was attributed to the bad quality of the water, the low marshy grounds, and to the offensive smell of the fish used in manuring the roots of trees. Every possible remedy was used to remove these causes of mortality. The number of inhabitants in the colony increased in proportion as these destructive principles were diminished: and is computed to amount at present to fifty thousand Indians, born in the island, or induced to settle there by the lenity of the government. Of these, some are employed in the cultivation of rice, a greater number in that of cocoa-trees which cover the plains; and the rest are engaged in navigation and other useful labours, which are continually improving.

BOMBAY was first considered in no other light than that of an excellent harbour, which, in times of peace, served as a place of refreshment for the merchant-men frequenting the Malabar coasts; and in time of war, as a winter station for the squadrons that government

B O O K  
III.

might send to India. This was a very valuable advantage in seas where there are so few good bays, and where the English have no other but this. The settlement has since been rendered much more useful. The company have made it the mart of all their trade with Malabar, Surat, and the Persian and Arabian Gulphs. Its situation has invited the English merchants to resort thither; and by their means trade is carried on with greater spirit. The tyranny exercised by the Angrias upon the continent has compelled some of the Banians to take refuge at Bombay, notwithstanding the aversion these people, who never drink spirituous liquors, must have to live in a place where the water is so bad. Some rich Moors have likewise removed hither in consequence of the disturbances at Surat.

It is not to be imagined, that such a number of men, who, with the advantages of industry and large capitals, were intent on amassing wealth, should remain inactive. From Malabar, they furnished themselves with ship-timber, and kayar for cordage: these were worked up by the Persees from Guzarat. The sailors of the country, under the command of European officers, have been found capable of navigating their ships. Surat supplies cargoes, partly on its own account, and partly on account of the merchants of Bombay. They send out annually two ships from Bassora, one for Jodda, one for Mocha, and sometimes one for China. The cargoes of all these ships are immensely rich. Other vessels of less consequence are dispatched from the colony itself.

THE private ships of the company are destined for the factories they have established between Surat and Cape Comorin. The roupees of Bombay, which have been substituted instead of those of Surat, throughout the coast, and in the interior parts of the country, give  
the

the company an advantage of five per cent. over all the nations that are their rivals. They likewise send cargoes to Bassora, Bender-Abassi, and Sindi, where the sale of their cloths is the principal object of their settlements. Thirteen or fourteen hundred bales are sufficient to supply the consumption. Their connections with Surat are still more advantageous; this place buys of them a large quantity of iron and lead, and some woollen-cloths; the ships are freighted back from hence with manufactures to a great amount.

THE ships sent from Europe formerly sailed to the sea-port, where they were to take in their lading. They now put in at Bombay. This alteration owes its rise to the advantage the company have of transporting hither all the merchandise of the country without expence, since they have been invested with the dignity of admiral to the great Mogul, and in consequence of this appointment have been obliged to maintain a maritime force upon the coast.

THE detail into which we have entered, may incline the reader to suppose that the situation of the English at Malabar is equal to their wishes. It is nevertheless certain that they gain no more than 2,250,000 livres (not quite 100,000*l*.) from all the settlements they have upon this coast; whereas their annual expences exceed six millions, (above 260,000*l*.)

If the attention of the company had not been diverted by the great scenes in which they have been engaged on the coast of Coromandel and in Bengal, it is natural to believe their affairs would be in a better state at Malabar.

THE fortifications at Bombay would not have been enlarged, then reduced, then extended again, and in short altered a hundred different times. Had the plans been drawn by skilful engineers, and executed by honest workmen, those enormous expences, which have ex-

cited such a general indignation, might have been avoided.

THEY would have sent from the Ganges, or from Europe, a fund sufficient to purchase seven or eight rich cargoes every year, instead of three or four very slender ones furnished by a declining and almost deserted trade.

THE state of weakness, anarchy, and war, in which the independent kingdoms of this continent, particularly towards the south, are perpetually involved, would have suggested a plan conducive to the welfare of the inhabitants, and to the interests of the nation, by whose influence it would have been procured.

IN a word, the company might have obtained the island of Salsette, which was offered to them by the Marattos, on condition of their assisting them, on a sudden emergency, with five hundred men against the subah of the decan: and by this arrangement they would have freed themselves from the shameful necessity they are under of depending upon these people for subsistence.

THE fertile island of Salsette, which is twenty-six miles in length, and eight or nine in breadth, was taken by the Marattos from the Portuguese. Masters of this post, they threatened Bombay, which is only separated from it by a narrow channel fordable at low water. Now that the English have raised large fortifications, and placed a numerous garrison in their colony, which is become of greater importance, an invasion is impracticable. The Marattos themselves are convinced of it; but they think it is in their power to ruin this settlement even without attacking it. This, they affirm, would easily be done by refusing to furnish it with provisions from Salsette, and preventing its procuring them from the continent. Persons of observation, who are well acquainted with the situation of the places, find something more than probability in these ideas.

THE

THE truth is, that ever since that wrong step was taken, though perhaps it was unavoidable, of putting into the hands of the Marattos, all the ports which belonged to the Angrias, those barbarians are daily augmenting their marine. Their ambition will increase with their power; and it is impossible but in the long run, their claims and those of the English must interfere.

If we might hazard a conjecture we should not scruple to prophesy that the company's agents will be the authors of the rupture. Besides, that propensity to raise disturbances, which is common to all of that class, because confusion is favourable to their avaritious views; they are devoured with secret spleen at having no share in those immense fortunes, which are made on the Coromandel coast, and especially in Bengal. Their avarice, jealousy, and even their pride will incline them to represent the Marattos as turbulent neighbours, always intent upon the invasion of Bombay; to magnify the facility of dispersing these banditti, provided they have a proper force; to give exaggerated ideas of the advantage of plundering their mountains, filled with the treasures of Indostan, which they have been accumulating during a whole century. The company, accustomed to conquest, and having no longer any urgent occasion for their troops on the banks of the Ganges, will adopt a plan that promises them an accession of riches, glory, and power. If those who dread this spirit of ambition, should prevail with them not to embark in this new enterprize, they will be forced into it by their servants; and however the event of this war may operate upon their interests, those who involve them in it will be sure to be gainers. There is less reason to fear a misfortune of this kind on the coasts of Coromandel and Orixá, which extend from Cape Comorin to the Ganges.

**BOOK**  
**III.**

General  
trade of  
the coast of  
Coroman-  
del and  
that of the  
English in  
particular.

**GEOGRAPHERS** and historians always consider these as distinct countries inhabited by two nations, whose language, genius, and manners have not the least resemblance. But as the commerce carried on there is nearly the same, and carried on in the same manner ; we shall comprehend them both under the general name of Coromandel. The two coasts resemble each other in other respects. In both of them, there reigns from the beginning of May to the end of October an excessive heat, which begins at nine in the morning, and continues till nine in the evening. During the night it is always allayed by a sea-breeze, that blows from the south-east ; and most commonly this refreshing gale begins at three in the afternoon. The air is less inflamed, though too hot the rest of the year. It rains almost continually during the months of November and December. This immense tract is covered with a parched sand for the space of two miles, and sometimes only one mile.

**THERE** were many reasons why this country was at first neglected by the Europeans who came to India. It was separated by inaccessible mountains from Malabar, where these bold navigators endeavoured to settle themselves. Spices and aromatics, which were the principal objects of their attention were not to be found there. In short, civil dissensions had banished from it tranquillity, security and industry.

**AT** that period, the empire of Bisnagar, to which this vast country was subject, was falling to ruin. The first monarchs of that illustrious state owed their power to their abilities. They headed their armies in war ; in peace, they directed their councils, visited their provinces, and administered justice. Prosperity corrupted them. By degrees they fell into a habit of withdrawing themselves from the sight of their people, and of leaving the cares of government to their generals and ministers.

This

This conduct paved the way to their ruin. The governors of Visapour, the Carnatic, Golconda, and Oriza, threw off their dependence, and assumed the title of kings. Those of Madura, Tanjour, Mysore, Gingi, and some others, likewise usurped the sovereign authority, but retained their ancient stile of Naick. This great revolution had just happened, when the Europeans appeared upon the coast of Coromandel.

THE foreign trade was at that time inconsiderable ; it consisted only of diamonds from Golconda, which were carried to Calicut and Surat, and from thence to Ormus or Suez, whence they were circulated through Europe and Asia. Massulipatan, the richest and most populous city in these countries, was the only market that was known for linens ; they were purchased at a great fair annually holden there by the Arabian and Malayan vessels that frequented that bay, and by caravans that arrived from distant parts. The linens were exported to the same places as the diamonds.

THE fondness for the manufactures of Coromandel, which began to prevail here, inspired all the European nations trading to the Indian seas with the resolution of forming settlements there. They were not discouraged either by the difficulty of conveying goods from the inland parts of the country, where there was no navigable river ; by the total want of harbours, where the sea, at one season of the year, is not navigable ; by the barrenness of the coasts for the most part uncultivated and uninhabited ; nor by the tyranny and fluctuating state of the government. They thought that silver would be industriously sought after ; that Pegu would furnish timber for building, and Bengal corn for subsistence ; that a prosperous voyage of nine months would be more than sufficient to complete their loadings ; and that, by fortifying themselves, they should be secure against the attacks



B O O K  
III.

attacks of the weak tyrants that oppressed these countries.

THE first colonies were established near the shore. Some of them obtained a settlement by force: most of them were formed with the consent of the sovereigns, and all were confined to a very narrow tract of land. The boundaries of each were marked out by a hedge of thorny plants, which was their only defence. In time fortifications were raised; and the security derived from them added to the lenity of the government, soon increased the number of colonists. The splendor and independence of these settlements several times raised the jealousy of the princes in whose dominions they were formed; but their attempts to demolish them proved abortive. Each colony increased in prosperity in proportion to the riches and the wisdom of the nation that founded it.

NONE of the companies that exercised an exclusive privilege beyond the Cape of Good Hope had any concern in the trade of diamonds; which was always left to private merchants, and by degrees fell intirely into the hands of the English, or the Jews and Armenians that lived under their protection. At present this grand object of luxury and industry is much reduced. The revolutions that have happened in Indostan have prevented people from resorting to these rich mines; and the anarchy into which this unhappy country is plunged, leaves no room to hope that they will be frequented again. The whole of the commercial operations on the coast of Coromandel is confined to the purchase of cottons.

THE manufacturing of the white cottons brought there, differs so little from that of ours, that it would be neither interesting nor instructive to enter into a minute description of it. The process used in making their printed cottons, which was at first servilely followed in Europe,

Europe, has since been rendered more simple and brought to greater perfection by our manufacturers. The painted cottons, which are likewise bought there, we have not yet attempted to imitate. Those, who imagine we have been prevented from undertaking this branch, merely by the high price of labour among us, are mistaken. Nature has not given us the wild fruits and drugs necessary for the composition of those bright and indelible colours, which constitute the principal merit of the Indian manufactures; nor has she furnished us with the waters that serve to fix them; and which are good at Pondicherry, but excellent at Madras, Paliacate, Massulipatan, and Bimilipatan.

THE Indians do not universally observe the same method in painting their cottons; either because there are some niceties peculiar to certain provinces, or because different soils produce different drugs for the same uses.

WE should tire the patience of our readers, were we to trace the slow and painful progress of the Indians in the art of painting their cottons. It is natural to believe that they owe it to length of time, rather than to the fertility of their genius. What seems to authorize this conjecture is, that they have stopped in their career, and have not advanced a single step in the arts for many ages; whereas we have proceeded with amazing rapidity, and view with an emulation full of confidence, the immense space that still lies between us and the goal. Indeed, were we to consider only the want of invention in the Indians, we should be tempted to believe that from time immemorial they had received the arts they cultivate from some more industrious nation: but when it is remembered that these arts have a peculiar dependence on the materials, gums, colours, and productions of India, we cannot but be convinced that they are natives of that country.

It

**B O O K**  
**III.**

It may appear somewhat surprizing that cottons painted with all colours should be sold at so moderate a price that they are almost as cheap as those which have only two or three. But it must be observed that the merchants of the country sell, and to all the companies, a large quantity of cottons at a time: and that the demand for cottons painted of all colours makes but a small article in their assortments, as they are not much esteemed in Europe.

THOUGH cottons of all sorts are in some degree manufactured throughout the whole country of Indostan, which extends from Cape Comorin to the banks of the Ganges; it is observable, that the fine sorts are made in the eastern part, the common ones in the center, and the coarse ones in the most western parts. Factories are established in the European colonies, and upon the coast: they are found in greater number at the distance of five or six leagues from the sea, where cotton is more cultivated and provisions are cheaper. The purchases they make there, are carried thirty or forty leagues further into the country. The Indian merchants settled in our factories, have always the management of this business.

THE quantity and quality of the goods that are wanted are settled with these people: the price is fixed according to the patterns: and, at the time the contract is made, a third or a fourth part of the money agreed for, is advanced. This arrangement is owing to the necessity these merchants themselves lie under of advancing money to the workmen by their partners or agents who are dispersed through the whole country, of keeping a watchful eye upon them for fear of losing what they have advanced, and of gradually lessening the sum by calling for the cottons as fast as they are worked off. Without these precautions, nothing could be depended

pended upon in an oppressive government, where the weaver cannot work on his own account, either because his circumstances will not permit, or because he dares not venture to discover them for fear of exactions.

THE companies that have either success or good management constantly keep a year's advance-money in their settlements. By this method they are sure of having the quantity of goods they have occasion for, and of the quality they chuse, at the most convenient time : not to mention that their workmen, and their merchants, who are kept in constant employment, never leave them.

THOSE nations that want money and credit cannot begin their mercantile operations till the arrival of their ships. They have only five or six months, at most, to execute the orders sent from Europe. The goods are manufactured and examined in haste ; and they are even obliged to take such as are known to be bad, and would be rejected at any other time. The necessity they are under of completing their cargoes, and fitting out their vessels before the hurricanes come on, allow no time for nicety of inspection.

It would be a mistaken notion to imagine that the country agents could be prevailed upon to order goods to be made on their account, in hopes of selling them with a reasonable advantage to the company in whose service they are engaged. For besides that the generality of them are not rich enough to embark in so large an undertaking, they would not be certain of finding their account in it. If the company that employ them, should be hindered by unforeseen accidents, from sending the usual number of ships, these merchants would have no vent for their commodities. The Indians, the form of whose dress requires different breadths and lengths from those of the cottons fabricated for our use, would

**B O O K**  
**III.**

would not purchase them; and the other European companies would be provided, or certain of being provided with whatever the extent of their trade required, and their cash enabled them to purchase. The plan of procuring loans which was contrived to remedy this inconvenience, never has been, or can be useful.

It has been a custom, time immemorial in Indostan for every citizen who borrows money to give a written instrument to his creditor. This deed is of no force in a court of judicature, unless it be signed by three witnesses, and bears the day of the month, and the year when it was made, with the rate of interest agreed upon by the parties. If the borrower fails to fulfil his engagements, he may be arrested by the lender himself. He is never imprisoned, because there is no fear of his making his escape. He would not even eat without obtaining leave of his creditor.

THE Indians make a threefold division of interest; one of which is vice, another neither vice nor virtue, and a third virtue: this is their manner of expression. The interest that is sin, is four per cent. a month; the interest that is neither vice nor virtue is two; and the interest that is virtue, one. The last is, in their opinion, an act of beneficence that only belongs to the most heroic minds. Yet though the Europeans, who are forced to borrow, meet with this treatment, it is plain they cannot avail themselves of the indulgence without involving themselves in ruin.

THE foreign trade of Coromandel is not in the hands of the natives. Only in the western part, indeed, there are Mohammedans, known by the name of Chalias, who, at Naour and Porto-Nuovo, send out ships to Achen, Merguy, Siam, and the eastern coast. Besides vessels of considerable burden employed in these voyages, they have smaller embarkations for the coasting trade  
for

for Ceylon, and the pearl fishery. The Indians of Massulipatan turn their attention another way. They import white callicoes from Bengal, which they dye or print, and sell them again at the places from whence they had them, at thirty-five or forty per cent. advantage.

**B O O K**  
**III.**

EXCEPTING these transactions, which are of very little consequence, the whole trade is vested in the Europeans who have no partners but a few Banians and Armenians settled in their colonies. The quantity of callicoes exported from Coromandel to the different sea-ports in India, may be computed at three thousand five hundred bales. Of these the French carry eight hundred to Malabar, Mocha, and the isle of France; the English, twelve hundred to Bombay, Malabar, Sumatra, and the Philippine Islands; and the Dutch fifteen hundred to their several settlements. Except five hundred bales destined for Manilla, each of the value of 2,400 livres, (about 100 guineas.) the others are of so ordinary a kind that they do not exceed 720 livres (about 30 guineas.) at prime cost: so that the whole number of three thousand five hundred bales does not amount to more than 3,360,000 livres. (not quite 50,000*l*.)

COROMANDEL furnishes Europe with nine thousand five hundred bales; eight hundred of which are brought by the Danes; two thousand by the English; and three thousand two hundred by the Dutch. A considerable part of these callicoes is dyed blue, or striped with red and blue for the trade of the Blacks. The others are fine muslin, printed callicoes, and handkerchiefs from Massulipatam, or Paliacate. It is proved by experience, that one with another, each bale, in the nine thousand five hundred, costs only 960 livres, (42*l*.) consequently they ought to bring in to the workshop where they are manufactured 8,160,000 livres. (near 360,000*l*.)

**B O O K**  
**III.**

THE payments are not entirely made in specie either in Europe or Asia; we give in exchange, cloths, iron, lead, copper, coral, and some other articles of less value. On the other hand, Asia pays with spices, pepper, rice, sugar, corn, and dates. All these articles taken together, may amount to 4,800,000 livres. (about 210,000*l.*) From this calculation it follows, that Coromandel receives 6,720,000 livres (near 300,000*l.*) in money.

THE English, who have acquired the same superiority upon this coast that they have gained elsewhere, have formed on it several settlements. In 1757, they took possession of Madura, a considerable town, and tolerably well fortified: but they did not fix there with any commercial views. The cottons calculated for the eastern part of Asia, and for Africa, which are manufactured in the kingdom belonging to this capital, are, for the most part, carried to the Dutch factories on the coast of the pearl fishery. The only use the English make of this acquisition is to raise from it a revenue sufficient to overbalance the expences that are unavoidably incurred there.

TRICHINOPOLY, though totally destroyed by the cruel wars it has sustained, is of much more importance to them. This strong post is the key of Tanjour, Mysore, and Madura, and gives them great influence in those three states.

It was solely with the view of securing an easy communication with this celebrated fortress, that they took possession of Devi-Cottah in 1749, whose territory is no more than three miles in circumference. There is no kind of manufacture carried on, either upon the spot, or in the neighbourhood, the only produce being some wood, and a little rice. The defence of this factory costs about 40,000 livres; (42*l.*) an expence that takes away the whole profits of it. It would, notwithstanding, be a  
post

post of importance, if what has been advanced by some intelligent men be true, that the Coleroon might, at an easy expence, be put into a condition to receive the largest vessels. The coast of Coromandel would not then be without harbours; and the nation, masters of the only port in those parts, would have a powerful means of improving their commerce, which their rivals would be deprived of.

IN 1686, the English purchased Cudalore, with a territory extending eight miles along the coast, and four miles into the interior part of the country. This acquisition, which they obtained of an Indian prince for the sum of 742,500 livres, (about 1,800*l.*) was confirmed to them by the Moguls, who soon after made themselves masters of the Carnatic. Considering afterwards, that the fortress, which they found ready built, was more than a mile from the sea, and that the reinforcements destined for it might be intercepted; they built fort St. David within cannon-shot of it, at the mouth of a river, and on the verge of the Indian Ocean. Since that three aldeés have been erected, which, with the town and fortress, are computed to contain sixty thousand souls. Their employment is dying blue, or printing the cottons that come from the inland parts of the country, and in manufacturing the finest dimities in the world, to the amount of 1,500,000 livres. (about 32,000*l.*) The plundering of this settlement by the French in 1758, and the demolishing of its fortifications, have done it no lasting injury. Its spirit seems rather increased, though St. David has not been rebuilt, and Cudalore is only put into a condition of making a tolerable resistance. A revenue of 144,000 livres (about 6,300*l.*) defrays all the expences of this colony. Masulipatan affords advantages of another kind.

THIS town, which passed from the hands of the



B O O K  
 III.

French into those of the English in 1759, is by no means what it was when the Europeans, at the conclusion of the fifteenth century, doubled the Cape of Good Hope. There are but a few cottons made or sold there, which, notwithstanding their beauty, cannot furnish any considerable branch of export. Accordingly the new possessors consider their conquest not so much as a market for buying and selling large quantities of goods. By means of the caravans which come from very distant places to furnish themselves with salt; and by the intercourse they have formed with the inland parts of the country, they have managed to establish a demand for their cloths in the most remote countries of the Decan, and this trade is likely to flourish still more. To this may be added the farther advantage of drawing a revenue from the product of the salt, and that of the customs, amounting to 1,320,000 livres, (near 58,000*l.*) of which 600,000 livres (little more than 26,000*l.*) only are annually expended upon the settlement.

VRACAPATAN is a small town, with little territory belonging to it, and not four thousand inhabitants. Being situated between Massulipatan and Ganjam, it is the receptacle of the fine cottons that are made in that part of Oriza, amounting to five or six hundred bales, which cost 480,000 livres, (about 21,000*l.*)

THE merchandise produced from all these places and from a few subordinate factories that vary according to circumstances, is carried to Madras which is the center of all the English transactions on the coast of Coromandel.

THIS town was built a hundred years ago by William Langhorne, in the country of Arcot, and by the sea side. As he placed it in the midst of a sandy tract, altogether dry, and where there was no water fit for drinking, but what was fetched from the distance of  
 more

more than a mile ; people were curious to know what reasons could have determined him to make so bad a choice. His friends pretended that his view was to draw thither all the trade of St. Thomas, which has actually been the consequence, while his enemies imputed it to a desire of continuing in the neighbourhood of a mistress he had in that Portuguese colony. This settlement has increased so much since its first establishment, that it has been divided into three districts. The first of these, known in Europe by the name of Port St. George, and in India by that of the White Town, is occupied by four or five hundred English, men, women, and children. It is defended only by a slight wall, and four ill-constructed bastions. To the north lies the Black Town, which is larger, and still worse fortified ; and is the quarter where the Jews, Armenians, Moors, and the richest Indians reside. Beyond this are the suburbs which are entirely defenceless, and full of inhabitants. The three divisions, of which the place is composed ; two aldees, which lie at a small distance from it, and the whole territory, which is not more than fifteen miles in circumference ; contain two hundred and fifty thousand inhabitants, almost all of them natives of India.

AMONG this vast number, there are but few weavers. Fifteen thousand artists are employed in printing and painting the fine calicoes that are worn in Europe ; and a considerable quantity of common cottons destined for the different sea-ports of Asia, particularly for the Philippine islands. There are, perhaps, forty thousand people occupied in arranging and selling coral and glass-ware, with which the women in the interior parts of the country adorn their hair, or make necklaces and bracelets. Other branches of industry, inseparable from a large mart, employ a great number of hands. The inhabitants who have deservedly gained the confi-

**B O O K**  
**III.**

dence of the company, travel through Arcot and the neighbouring country, to buy what goods they have occasion for. The most considerable among them lend money to the English merchants, who though not of the company, have liberty to traffic in the different sea-ports of Asia; they enter into partnership with them, or embark on their vessels goods for their own private account. The business carried on by the company and the private merchants taken together, has made Madras one of the most opulent and important places in India.

BESIDES the profits accruing to the English from the cottons they purchase in this town, and from the cloths and other merchandise they vend there, the customs, the duties upon tobacco and betel, and some other imports, bring in a revenue of 1,200,000 livres. (about 52,000*l.* sterling.) The continuation of these advantages is secured by a garrison of a thousand Europeans, and of fifteen or eighteen hundred sipahis.

SUCH is the situation of the English company on the coast of Coromandel, considered merely as a mercantile body. Let us now examine it in a political light.

IN 1751, the English undertook to make Mohammed-Ali-Khan nabob of Arcot. The execution of this great plan was attended with innumerable difficulties, which were at length surmounted after a series of battles, defeats, victories and negotiations, that lasted several years. The new sovereign, who had still many enemies remaining, committed the safety of his person to the care of his protectors, by fixing his residence at Madras; and placed his provinces under the cover of their arms, leaving to them the sole charge of defending them. To enable them to support the burden they had undertaken, and to reimburse them for the money they had advanced, it was stipulated, that they should enjoy

enjoy the revenues of the country, which in times of the greatest prosperity were 12,000,000 livres, (525,000*l.*) and are still at least 8,400,000. (near 368,000*l.*) It is true we ought previously to deduct 2,880,000 (126,000*l.*) for public expences, and as much more for the maintenance of the Nabob; but there still remains 2,640,000 livres, (116,000*l.*) clear income to the company. By this management, they keep the Carnatic, that is the most industrious country in this immense tract in a state of absolute dependence.

B O O K  
III.

To strengthen their influence still more on these coasts the English had long meditated a plan of making a large acquisition of territory in the neighbourhood of Maffulipatan. In 1767 they succeeded so far as to procure, from the subah of Decan, the cession of the provinces of Candavir, Elur, Montasanagar, Rajamandry and Chicacol. From this prodigious accession of revenue and territory, they had begun to think that they had nothing more to do than to enjoy the advantages of their situation; when they saw a storm gathering which threatened to shake, if not to destroy their prosperity.

HYDER-ALI-KHAN, a soldier of fortune, who had learned the art of war from the Europeans, had made great conquests, and rendered himself master of Mysore. Relying upon his strength and his reputation, he summoned the subah of the Decan, and the nabob of the Carnatic to join with him in driving the English out of Coromandel, threatening, if they refused, to ravage all their provinces. The company thought both their credit and interest concerned to anticipate the designs of an enemy who announced his resentment and projects in so high a strain, and they sent out an army against him in March 1767.

COLONEL WOOD who had the command of it marched forward with confidence; when, to his great

**B O O K**  
**III.**

astonishment he beheld, in front, an army punctually paid, and excellently well disciplined, consisting of thirty thousand foot, and twenty thousand horse, with a considerable train of artillery. The war was carried on by contrivances, a circumstance very desirable to Hyder, whose genius was subtle and fruitful in stratagems. He found means to surprize his enemies in their camp, carry off their provisions and baggage, seized their best posts by procuring the most exact intelligence, drove their troops before him, vanquished, disheartened, and almost ready to revolt for want of pay; and at last alarmed them with the apprehension of seeing their capital besieged, plundered and destroyed. The panic was becoming universal, when some timely succours arrived, which enabled the English general to regain his ground. On the 4th of October 1768, he found means to compel the Indians to a general engagement, which they had hitherto seemed desirous to avoid. This was, perhaps, the most obstinate and bloody engagement that had ever happened in this part of the world. At last, Wood remained master of the field where both sides had fought so bravely: but this was all the advantage he gained by his victory.

HYDER, though defeated, kept up a menacing countenance, and was still formidable. Terms of accommodation were proposed to him. He listened to them with no small indifference; and it was not without much negotiation, nor, if some accounts may be believed, without considerable presents, that he was prevailed upon to conclude a peace after having carried on the war for two years. This prince continues to be considered by the English rather as an enemy, against whom it is necessary they should be constantly on their guard; than as an ally on whom they might depend. Some of the most judicious among them are even of opinion, that unless their

their nation by some means or other gets rid of a neighbour too ambitious, and too active for its repose, it cannot securely rely on the power which a combination of fortunate circumstances has given it on the coast of Coromandel. Let us take a view of its situation in Bengal.

B O O K  
III.

BENGAL is a vast country of Asia, bounded by the kingdom of Asham and Aracan on the east; by several provinces belonging to the Great Mogul on the west; by frightful rocks on the north, and by the sea on the south. It extends on both sides the Ganges, which rises from different sources in Thibet, and after several windings through Caucasus, penetrates into India across the mountains on its frontier. This river, after having formed it its course a great number of large, fertile, and well peopled islands discharges itself into the sea by several mouths, of which only two are known and frequented.

General  
trade of  
Bengal,  
and that of  
the Eng-  
lish in par-  
ticular.

TOWARDS the source of this river, was formerly a city called Palibothra. Its antiquity was so great, that Diodorus Siculus makes no scruple of assuring us that it was built by that Hercules to whom the Greeks ascribed all the great and surprizing actions that had been performed in the world. In Pliny's time, its opulence was celebrated through the whole universe; and it was looked upon as the general mart for the people inhabiting both sides of the river that washed its walls.

THE history of the revolutions that have happened in Bengal, is intermixed with so many fables that it does not deserve our attention. All we can with certainty discover is, that the extent of this empire has been sometimes greater and sometimes less; that it has had fortunate and unfortunate periods; and that it has alternately been formed into one single kingdom, or divided into several independent states. It was under the dominion  
of

**B O O K**  
**III.**

of one master, when a more powerful tyrant Egbar, grandfather of Aurengzebe, undertook the conquest of it; which was begun in 1590, and completed in 1595. Since this æra Bengal has always acknowledged the Mogul for its sovereign. At first, the governor to whom the administration of it was entrusted, held his court at Raja-mahul, but afterwards removed it to Dacca. Ever since the year 1718, it has been fixed at Muxadavad, a large inland town two leagues distant from Cassumbazar. There are several Nabobs and Rajas subordinate to this viceroy, who is called subah.

THIS important post was occupied for a long time by the sons of the Great Mogul: but they so frequently mis-employed the forces and treasure under their command, to raise disturbances in the empire, that it was thought proper to commit that province to men who had less influence, and were more dependent. True it is, the new governors gave no alarm to the court of Delhi; but they were far from being punctual in remitting the tribute they collected to the royal treasury. These abuses gained farther ground after the expedition of Kouli Khan; and matters were carried so far, that the emperor, who was unable to pay the Marattas what he owed them, authorised them, in 1740, to collect it in Bengal themselves. These banditti, to the number of two hundred thousand, divided themselves into three armies, ravaged this fine country for ten years together, and did not leave it till they had extorted immense sums.

DURING all these commotions, despotic government, which unhappily prevails all over India, maintained its influence in Bengal: but, at the same time, a small district that had hitherto preserved its independence, still continues to preserve it. This fortunate spot, which extends about a hundred and sixty miles, is called Bissen-pour. It has been governed time immemorial, by a Bra-  
 min

min family of the tribe of the Rajahputs. Here the purity and equity of the ancient political system of the Indians is found unadulterated. This singular government, the finest and most striking monument in the world has, till now, been beheld with too much indifference. We have no remains of ancient nations but brass and marble, which speak only to imagination and conjecture, those uncertain interpreters of manners and customs that no longer exist. Were a philosopher transported to Bissenpour, he would instantly be a witness of the life led by the first inhabitants of India many thousand years ago; he would converse with them; he would trace the progress of this nation celebrated as it were from its very infancy; he would see the rise of a government, which being founded in happy prejudices, in a simplicity and purity of manners, in the mild temper of the people, and the integrity of the chieftains, has survived those innumerable systems of legislation, which have made only a transitory appearance upon the stage of the world, with the generations they were destined to torment. More solid and durable than those political structures, which raised by imposture and enthusiasm, are the scourges of human kind, and are doomed to perish with the foolish opinions that gave them birth, the government of Bissenpour, the offspring of a just attention to order, and the laws of nature, has been established and maintained upon unchangeable principles, and has undergone no more alteration than those principles themselves. The singular situation of this country has preserved to the inhabitants their primitive happiness and the gentleness of their character, by securing them from the danger of being conquered, or of imbruing their hands in the blood of their fellow-creatures. Nature has surrounded them with water; and they need only open the sluices of their rivers to overflow the whole country. The  
armies



**B O O K**  
**III.**

armies sent to subdue them have so frequently been drowned, that the plan of enslaving them has been laid aside; and the projectors of it have thought proper to content themselves with an appearance of submission.

**LIBERTY** and property are sacred in Bissenpour. Robbery, either public or private, is never heard of. As soon as any stranger enters the territory he engages the attention of the laws, which provide for his security. He is furnished with guides at free cost, who conduct him from place to place, and are answerable for his person and effects. When he changes his conductors, the new ones deliver to those they relieve an attestation of their conduct, which is registered and afterwards sent to the Raja. All the time he remains in the country he is maintained, and conveyed with his merchandise, at the expence of the state, unless he desires leave to stay longer than three days in the same place. In that case he is obliged to defray his own expences, unless he is detained by any disorder, or other unavoidable accident. This beneficence to strangers is the consequence of the warmth with which the citizens enter into each other's interests. They are so far from being guilty of an injury to each other, that whoever finds a purse, or other thing of value, hangs it upon the first tree he meets with, and informs the nearest guard, who give notice of it to the public by beat of drum. These maxims of probity are so generally received, that they direct even the operations of government. Out of between seven and eight millions (about 330,000*l.* on an average.) it annually receives, without injury to agriculture or trade, what is not wanted to supply the unavoidable expences of the state, is laid out in improvements. The Raja is enabled to engage in these humane employments as he pays the Moguls only what tribute, and at what times, he thinks proper.

**THOUGH**

THOUGH the rest of Bengal is far from enjoying the same happiness, it is, nevertheless, the richest and most populous province in the whole empire. Besides its own consumption, which is necessarily considerable, its exports are immense. One part of its merchandise is carried into the inland country. Thibet takes off a quantity of its cottons, besides some iron and cloths of European production. The inhabitants of those mountains fetch them from Patna themselves, and give musk and rhubarb in exchange.

B O O K  
III.

THE rhubarb, which begins to be cultivated with success in the highlands of Scotland, is not, as is commonly believed, a creeping plant; but grows in tufts at some distance from each other. There is no occasion to sow it, as the seed naturally falls to the ground, and produces a new plant.

THE musk is a production peculiar to Thibet. It is contained in a small bag of the size of a hen's egg, which grows in the shape of a bladder under the belly of a species of goat, between the navel and the genitals. In its original state it is nothing more than putrid blood which coagulates in this bag. The largest bladder yields no more than half an ounce of musk. The smell of it is naturally so strong, that, for common use, it is necessary to moderate it by mixing it with milder perfumes. The hunters, with a view of increasing their profits, contrived to take away part of the musk from the bladders, and to fill the vacuity with the liver and coagulated blood of the animal minced together. The government, to put a stop to these fraudulent mixtures, ordered, that all the bladders, before they were sewed up, should be examined by inspectors, who should close them with their own hands, and seal them with the royal signet. This precaution has put a stop to the frauds practised to reduce the quality of the musk, but not to those

**B O O K**  
**III.**

those which are calculated to increase the weight of it; they contrive to open the bags artfully and pour particles of lead into them.

THE trade of Thibet is nothing in comparison of that which Bengal carries on with Agra, Delhi, and the provinces adjacent to those superb capitals, in salt, sugar, opium, silk, silk-stuffs, and an infinite quantity of cottons, particularly muslins. These articles, taken together, amounted formerly to more than forty millions a-year. (1,750,000*l.*) So considerable a sum did not reach the banks of the Ganges; but it was the means of retaining a sum nearly equal, which must have gone from thence to pay the duties or for other purposes. Since the viceroys of the Mogul have made themselves in a manner independent, and send him no revenues but such as they chuse to allow him, the luxury of the court is greatly abated, and the branch of exportation we have been speaking of, is no longer so considerable.

THE maritime trade of Bengal managed by the natives of the country, has not suffered the same diminution, nor was it ever so extensive, as the other. It may be divided into two branches, of which Catek is in possession of the greater part.

CATEK is a district of some extent, a little below the most western mouth of the Ganges. Balasore, situated upon a navigable river, serves it for a port. The navigation to the Maldives, which the English and French have been obliged to abandon on account of the intemperature of the climate, is carried on entirely from this road. Here they load their vessels with rice, coarse cottons, and some silk-stuffs for these islands, and receive cowries in exchange, which serves for money in Bengal, and are sold to the Europeans.

THE inhabitants of Catek, and some other people of Lower Ganges, maintain a considerable correspondence with

with the country of Afham. This kingdom, which is thought to have formerly made a part of Bengal, and is only divided from it by a river that falls into the Ganges, deserves to be better known, if what is asserted is true, that the invention of gunpowder is to be attributed to it, and that it was communicated from Afham to Pegu, and from Pegu to China. Its gold, silver, iron and lead mines would have added to its renown if they had been properly worked. In the midst of these riches it makes so little use of, it is in the most pressing necessity for want of salt, being obliged to have recourse to the expedient of procuring it from a decoction of certain plants.

IN the beginning of the present century, some Bramins of Bengal carried their superstitions to Afham, where the people were so happy as to be guided solely by the dictates of natural religion. The priests persuaded them, that it would be more agreeable to Brama if they substituted the pure and wholesome salt of the sea than that which they used in lieu of it. The sovereign consented to receive it on condition that the exclusive trade should be in his hands ; that it should be brought by the people of Bengal alone, and that the boats laden with it, should stop at the frontiers of his dominions. Thus have all these coined religions been introduced by the interest and for the interest of the priests who preach, and the kings who receive them. Since this arrangement has taken place, forty vessels from five to six hundred tons burden each are annually sent from the Ganges to Afham laden with salt, which yields two hundred per cent. profit. They receive in payment a small quantity of gold and silver, ivory, musk, eagle wood, gum-lac, and a large quantity of silk.

THIS silk, which is singular in its kind, requires no trouble ; it is found on the trees where the silkworms  
are

**B O O K**  
**III.**

are produced, nourished, and undergo their several metamorphoses. The inhabitants have no other trouble but that of collecting it. The neglected cods produce a new generation; during the growth of which, the tree puts forth new leaves, which serve successively for the nourishment of the young worms. These revolutions are repeated twelve times in a year; but do not turn to so good account in the rainy as in the dry seasons. The stuffs made of this silk have a great deal of lustre, but do not last long.

EXCEPTING these two branches of maritime trade, which, for particular reasons, have been confined to the natives of the country, all the rest of the vessels sent from the Ganges to the different sea ports of India belong to the Europeans, and are built at Pegu.

PEGU is a country situated on the Gulph of Bengal, between the kingdoms of Aracan and Siam. Revolutions, which are so frequent in all the despotic empires of Asia, have been here more frequently repeated than in any other. It has alternately been the centre of a great power, and a province to several states less extensive than itself. It is at present dependent upon Ava.

THE only port of Pegu that is open to strangers is Syriam. The Portuguese, during their prosperity, were long in possession of it, and it was then in great repute. At present it is hardly frequented but by the Europeans settled on the coast of Coromandel and Bengal. The latter can only sell there some coarse cottons, nor would they visit it at all, except for the building, or refitting of their ships; for which purpose they are furnished with all necessary materials (except iron and cordage) of an excellent quality, and at a moderate price. Since the disgust taken at the high rate of ship-building at Surat, Syriam is become a kind of general dock-yard for all vessels employed in the country trade.

THEIR

THEIR exports consist of teak timber, wax, ivory, some calum, and an excellent oil for the preservation of ships. The finest topazes, sapphires, amethysts, and rubies, in the world, come from Pegu. They are seldom to be met with at Syriam, nor can they be had without resorting to the court, which is kept at Ava. The Armenians have for some time had such an ascend-  
 ent, that they make the trade difficult to the Europeans, and even to the English, who are the only people that have formed a settlement at Pegu.

A STILL more considerable branch of commerce, which the Europeans at Bengal carry on with the rest of India, is that of opium. Opium is the produce of a species of poppy, whose root is nearly as large as the finger, abounding, as well as the rest of the plant, with a bitter juice. The stem, which is commonly pliable, and sometimes rather hairy, is two cubits high, and produces leaves resembling those of the lettuce, oblong, indented, curled, and of a sea-green colour. Its flower is in the form of a rose. When the poppy is full of sap, a slight incision is made at the top, from whence distill some drops of a milky liquor, which is left to congeal, and is afterwards gathered. This operation is repeated three times, but the produce gradually diminishes in quantity, nor is it of so good a quality. When the opium is gathered, it is moistened and kneaded with water or honey, till it acquires the consistence, viscosity, and glossiness of pitch when it is well prepared, and is then made into small cakes. That which is rather soft, and yields to the touch, is inflammable, of a brown blackish colour, and has a strong foetid smell, is esteemed the best; on the contrary, that which is dry, friable, burnt, and mixed with earth and sand, is thought good for nothing. According to the different manner of preparing it, and the doses in

B O O K  
III.

which it is given, it stupifies, excites agreeable ideas, or occasions madness.

PATNA, situated on the Upper Ganges, is the most celebrated place in the world for the cultivation of opium. The fields are covered with it. Besides what is carried into the inland parts, there are annually three or four thousand chests exported, each weighing three hundred pounds. It sells upon the spot at the rate of five or six hundred livres (between 24l. and 25l. on an average) a chest. This opium is not purified like that of Syria and Persia, which we make use of in Europe: it is only a paste that has undergone no preparation, and has not a tenth part of the virtue of purified opium.

AN excessive fondness for opium prevails in all the countries to the east of India. The Chinese emperors have suppressed it in their dominions, by condemning to the flames every vessel that imported this species of poison, and every house that received it. On the Malayan coast, at Borneo, the Moluccas, Java, Macassar, and Sumatra, the consumption is incredible. These people smoke it with their tobacco. Those who are going to perform some desperate action intoxicate themselves with this smoke. They then encounter indiscriminately every thing they meet. The Dutch, who are in possession of almost all the places where opium makes the greatest havoc, have been more intent on the profits arising from the sale of this article than touched with compassion for its numerous victims. Rather than prohibit the use of it, they have authorised individuals to massacre all those who, being disordered with opium, appears in the streets armed.

THE Dutch company formerly carried on the trade of opium in their settlements. They vended but little, because four hundred per cent. was gained by smug-

smuggling it. In 1743, they resigned this branch to a particular society, to which they deliver a certain quantity of opium at a fixed price. The gains of this society, which consist of the principal members of the government of Batavia, are immense: no one venturing to expose himself to their resentment by pursuing a contraband trade incompatible with their interests. The coast of Malacca, and part of the island of Sumatra, are furnished with opium by the free English merchants, who gain more by this merchandise than by the common cottons they bring to these different markets.

THEY send rice and sugar to the coast of Coromandel, for which they are paid in specie, unless they have the good fortune to meet with some foreign merchandise at a cheap rate. They send out one or two vessels laden with rice, cottons and silk: the rice is sold in Ceylon, the cottons at Malabar, and the silk at Surat; from whence they bring back cotton, which is usefully employed in the coarser manufactures of Bengal. Two or three ships laden with rice, gum-lac, and cotton stuffs go to Bassora, and return with dried fruits, rose-water and a quantity of gold. The rich merchandise carried to Arabia is paid for entirely in gold and silver. The trade of the Ganges with the other seaports of India brings twenty-eight millions (1,255,000*l.*) annually into Bengal.

THOUGH this trade passes through the hands of the Europeans, and is carried on in their bottoms, it is not entirely on their own account. The Moguls, indeed, who are commonly confined to the places of their government, have seldom any concern in these expeditions; but the Armenians, who, since the revolutions in Persia, are settled upon the banks of the Ganges, to which they formerly only made voyages, readily throw



B O O K

III.

their capital into this trade. The Indians employ still larger sums in it. The impossibility of enjoying their fortunes under an oppressive government, does not deter the natives of this country from labouring incessantly to increase them. As they would run too great a risque by engaging openly in trade, they are obliged to have recourse to clandestine methods. As soon as an European arrives, the Gentoos, who know mankind better than is commonly supposed, study his character: and if they find him frugal, active, and well informed, offer to act as his brokers and cashiers, and lend or procure him money upon bottomry, or at interest. This interest, which is usually nine per cent. at least, is higher, when he is under a necessity of borrowing of the Cheyks.

THESE Cheyks are a powerful family of Indians, who have, time immemorial, inhabited the banks of the Ganges. Their riches have long ago procured them the management of the bank belonging to the court, the farming of the public revenue, and the direction of the money, which they coin afresh every year, in order to receive annually the benefit arising from the mint. By uniting so many advantages, they are enabled to lend the government, forty, (1,750,000*l.*) sixty, (2,625,000*l.*) or even a hundred millions (4,375,000*l.*) at a time. When the government finds it impossible to refund the money, they are allowed to indemnify themselves by oppressing the people. That so prodigious a capital should be preserved in the center of tyranny, and in the midst of revolutions, appears incredible. It is not possible to conceive how such a structure could be raised, much less how it could be supported for so long a time. To explain this mystery it must be observed, that this family has always maintained a superior influence at the court of Delhi; that

that the nabobs and rajas in Bengal are dependent upon it; that those who are about the person of the subah have constantly been his creatures; and that the subah himself has been maintained, or dethroned by the intrigues of this family. To this we may add, that the different branches of it, and the wealth belonging to them being dispersed, it has never been possible to ruin above one half of it at a time, which would still have left them more resources than were necessary to enable them to carry on their resentment to the highest extremity. The Europeans who frequent the Ganges have not been sufficiently alarmed at this despotism, which ought to have prevented them from submitting to a dependence upon the Cheyks. They have fallen into the snare, by borrowing considerable sums of these avaritious financiers, apparently at nine, but in reality at thirteen per cent. if we take into the account the difference between the money that is lent them, and that in which they are obliged to make their payments. The engagements entered into by the French and Dutch companies have been kept within some bounds; but those of the English company have been unlimited. In 1755 they were indebted to the Cheyks about eight and twenty millions (1,225,000/.)

SUCH is the conduct of these great bodies, who are the sole managers of the European trade at Bengal. The Portuguese, who first frequented this rich country, had the wisdom to establish themselves at Chitigan, a port situated upon the frontier of Arracon, not far from the most eastern branch of the Ganges. The Dutch, who, without incurring the resentment of an enemy, at that time so formidable, were desirous of sharing in their good fortune, looked out for a port, which, without obstructing their plan, would expose them the least to hostilities. In 1603, they cast their eyes upon Bala-

III.

fore; and all the companies, rather through imitation than in consequence of any well-concerted schemes, followed their example. Experience taught them the propriety of fixing as near as possible to the markets from whence they had their merchandise; and they advanced up that arm of the Ganges, which separating itself from the main river at Mourcha above Cassumbazar, falls into the sea near Balasore under the name of the river Hughley. The government of the country permitted them to erect warehouses wherever there was plenty of manufactures, and to fortify themselves upon this river.

IN passing up this river, the first town that is met with is Calcutta, the principal settlement of the English company. The air here is unhealthy, the water brackish, the anchorage not very safe, and the neighbouring country affords but few manufactures. Notwithstanding these inconveniencies, great numbers of rich Armenian, Moorish, and Indian merchants invited by the prospect of liberty and security have fixed their residence here. The people have multiplied in proportion through a territory of three or four leagues in circumference, of which the company are the sole sovereigns. The fortress has this advantage, that the vessels bound to the European settlements are obliged to pass under its cannon.

Six leagues higher is situated Frederic Nagore founded by the Danes in 1756, in order to supply the place of an ancient settlement, where they could not maintain their ground. This new establishment has not yet acquired any solidity, and there is all the reason imaginable to believe, that it will never become considerable.

CHANDERNAGORE, which lies two leagues and an half higher, belongs to the French. It has the disadvantage

vantage of being rather exposed on the western side; but its harbour is excellent, and the air is as pure as it can be on the banks of the Ganges. Whenever any building is undertaken that requires strength, it must here, as well as in all other parts of Bengal, be built upon piles: it being impossible to dig three or four feet deep without coming at water. This district, which is hardly a league in circumference, has been full of manufactures ever since the invasion of the Marattas obliged the natives of the country to retire hither for refuge. Here is a large manufacture of handkerchiefs, and striped muslins; which have, indeed, rather degenerated since their removal. This active spirit of industry has not, however, made Chandernagore the rival of Calcutta, whose immense riches enables it to undertake the most extensive commercial enterprizes.

At the distance of a mile from Chandernagore, is Chinsura, better known by the name of Dougli, being situated near the suburbs of that anciently renowned city. The Dutch have no other possessions there, but merely their fort; the territory round it depending on the government of the country, which hath frequently made it feel its power by its extortions. Another inconvenience attending this settlement is a sand bank that prevents ships from coming up to it: they proceed no farther than Tulta, which is twenty miles below Calcutta, and this of course occasions an additional expence to administration.

THE Portuguese had formerly made Bandel, which is eighty leagues from the mouth of the Ganges, and a quarter of a league above the Hughley, the principal seat of their commerce. Their flag is still displayed, and there are a few unhappy wretches remaining there who have forgotten their country after having been forgotten by it. This factory has no other employ-

**B O O K**  
**III.**

ment than that of supplying the Moors and the Dutch with mistresses.

THOUGH in the months of October, November, and December, the frequent and almost continual hurricanes render the Gulph of Bengal impracticable; during the remainder of the year European ships may enter the Ganges. Those that design to go up the river previously make the Segogora, where they are received by pilots of their own nation, who reside at Balasore. The money they bring with them is put on board certain sloops belonging to the harbour of between sixty and a hundred tuns, which always precede the ships. The passage into the river Hughley lies through a narrow strait between two sand banks. The ships used formerly to come to an anchor at Culpy, but time has worn off the dread of those currents, quicksands, and shoals that seemed to choke up the navigation of the river, and the ships have been brought unto their respective places of destination. This boldness has occasioned many shipwrecks; but in proportion as more experience has been gained, and the spirit of observation has been carried further, accidents of that kind have been less frequent. It is to be hoped that the example of admiral Watson, who sailed as high as Chandernagore in a seventy gun-ship will not be forgotten: as a proper attention to it would save a great deal of time, trouble and expence.

BESIDES this great channel, there is another by which goods may be brought from the places which furnish them to the principal settlement of each company. For this purpose a number of small craft are employed, consisting of eighty or a hundred boats, and sometimes more. These are manned with black or white soldiers in order to check the insatiable avarice of the Nabobs and Rajas they meet with in their passage.

sage. The goods purchased in the higher parts of the Ganges, at Patna and Cassumbazar, are carried down the river Hughley: those purchased near the other branches of the Ganges, which are all navigable in the interior parts of the country, and communicate with each other, especially towards the lower division of that river, are conveyed into the Hughley by Rangafoula and Batatola, about fifteen or twenty leagues from the sea. From thence they are carried up the stream to the principal settlement belonging to each nation.

THE exports from Bengal to Europe consist of musk, gum lac, nicaragua wood, pepper, cowries, and some other articles of less importance brought thither from other places. Those that are the immediate produce of the country are borax, saltpetre, silk, silk-stuffs, muslins, and a hundred different sorts of cottons.

THE borax which is found in the province of Patna, is a saline substance, which the chymists in Europe have in vain attempted to counterfeit. Some of them take it for an alkaline salt, which is found completely formed in the rich country of Indostan; others will have it to be the produce of volcanos, or subterraneous fires.

BE this, as it may, the borax is of great use in the working of metals by facilitating their fusion and purification. This substance being quickly vitrified by the action of fire, attracts the heterogeneous particles that are intermixed with these metals, and reduces them to dross. The borax is likewise indispensably necessary in the assaying of mines, and the soldering of metals. The Dutch alone have the secret of refining it, which is said to have been communicated to them by some Venetian families that came to seek that liberty in the united provinces which they did not enjoy under the tyranny of their own aristocratical government;

SALT-

**B O O K**  
**III.**

**SALTPETRE** is likewise the produce of Patna. It is extracted from a clay, which is either black, whitish, or red. The manner of refining it is by digging a large pit in which this nitrous earth is deposited, and diluted with a quantity of water, which is kept stirred till it comes to a consistency. The water having drawn out all the salts, and the grosser parts subsiding at the bottom, the more fluid particles are taken out and put into another pit not so large as the former. This substance having undergone a second purification, the clear water that swims on the top, and is totally impregnated with nitre, is taken off, and boiled in caldrons; it is skimmed while it is boiling, and, in a few hours, a nitrous salt is obtained infinitely superior to any that is found elsewhere. The Europeans export about ten millions of pounds for the use of their settlements in Asia, or for home consumption in their respective countries. It is bought upon the spot for three sols (1*d.*  $\frac{1}{2}$ .) a pound, at the most, and is sold again to us for ten (5*d.*) at the least.

**CASSUMBAZAR**, which is grown rich by the ruin of Malda and Rajamahadel is the general market for Bengal silk, the greatest part of which is supplied from that territory. The silk-worms are brought up and fed there in the same manner as in other places; but the heat of the climate hatches them and makes them thrive every month in the year. A great quantity of silk and cotton stuffs are manufactured here, which are circulated through part of Asia: those that are made entirely of silk, are for the most part carried to Delhi. They are prohibited in France; and throughout the north of Europe, the consumption in the articles is almost entirely confined to a few armoisines, and a prodigious number of handkerchiefs. As for the unwrought silk, the quantity consumed in the European manufactures

tures may be estimated at three or four hundred thousand pounds weight. It is in general of a very inferior quality, ill twisted, and takes no gloss in dying. It is used for little else than the woof in brocades; and is sold upon the spot from 272 to 288 livres (from 11*l.* 18*s.* to 12*l.* 12*s.*) a quintal. The companies that have a capital, and industry and skill sufficient to twist it in their own warehouses, obtain it at a cheaper rate.

It would be a tedious and useless task to enumerate all the places where ticken and cottons, proper for the table, or intended to be worn plain, painted or printed, are manufactured. It will be sufficient to mention Dacca, which may be looked upon as the general mart of Bengal, where the greatest variety of the finest cottons are to be met with, and in the greatest abundance.

THIS town is situated in twenty-four degrees north latitude. The fertility of its soil, and the advantages of its situation have long since made it the centre of an extensive commerce. The courts of Delhi and Muxadavad are furnished from thence with the cottons wanted for their own consumption. They each of them maintain an agent on the spot to superintend the manufacture of them; who has an authority, independent of the magistrates, over the brokers, weavers, embroiderers, and all the workmen, whose business has any relation to the object of his commission. These unhappy people are forbidden, under pecuniary and corporal penalties, to sell to any person whatever a piece exceeding the value of 72 livres (three guineas): nor can they, but by dint of money, relieve themselves from this oppression.

IN this, as in all the other markets, the European companies treat with Moorish brokers settled upon the spot, and appointed by the government. They likewise lend their name to the individuals of their own nation



**B O O K**  
**III.**

nation as well as to Indians and Armenians living in their settlements, who, without this precaution, would infallibly be plundered. The Moors themselves, in their private transactions, frequently avail themselves of the same pretence, that they may pay only two instead of five per cent.

A DISTINCTION is observed, in their contracts between the cottons, that are bespoke, and those, which the weaver ventures, in some places, to manufacture upon his own account. The length, the number of threads, and the price of the former are fixed: nothing further than the commission for the latter is stipulated, because it is impossible to enter into the same detail. Those nations that make a point of having fine goods, take proper measures, that they may be enabled to advance money to their workmen at the beginning of the year. The weavers, who in general have but little employment at that time, perform their work with less hurry than in the months of October, November and December, when the demand is pressing.

SOME of the cottons are delivered unbleached, and others half bleached. It were to be wished that this custom might be altered. It is very common to see cottons, that look very beautiful, go off in the bleaching. Perhaps, the manufacturers and brokers foresee how they will turn out: but the Europeans have not so exquisite a touch, nor such an experienced eye as to discern this. It is a circumstance peculiar to India that cottons, of whatever kind soever they are, can never be well bleached and prepared but in the place where they are manufactured. If they have the misfortune to get damaged before they are shipped for Europe, they must be sent back to the places from whence they came.

AMONG

AMONG the cottons purchased at Dacca, the plain, striped and worked muslins are, beyond all comparison, of the greatest importance. Bengal is the only country in India where they are made, as it produces the only cotton proper for that manufacture. It is planted at the end of October, and gathered in February; when it is prepared with all expedition, that it may be ready for the loom in the months of May, June, and July. This is the rainy season; and as the cotton shrinks more, and is less apt to break at this time, it is therefore the fittest for the purpose of manufacturing muslins. The artists who work at other seasons of the year, give the cotton its requisite degree of moistness, by dipping the part immediately under the warp into water. In this sense we are to understand what is said of fabricating muslins in water.

B O O K  
III.

To whatever degree of fineness these cottons have been brought, it is certain it falls very short of the perfection of which they are capable. The practice of the government in obliging the best manufacturers to work on its own account, in paying them ill, and keeping them in a state of captivity, makes them afraid of displaying too much skill. A prevailing spirit of restraint and rigour stifles industry, which though the daughter of necessity, is at the same time the companion of liberty.

THE courts of Delhi and Muxadavad lay no great stress upon the embroidered work superinduced upon muslins: and the people of the country, the Moors, Patans, and Armenians, who give large orders, follow their example and take them as they find them. This indifference hinders the progress of the art of embroidery. The Europeans agree for embroideries as they do for muslins and other merchandise, with brokers authorized by the government, to which they pay an annual

**B O O K**  
**III.**

annual contribution for this exclusive privilege. These agents assign to the women the prices designed for plate embroideries, and those in chain-work to the men. The Europeans frequently content themselves with Indian patterns; at other times they send patterns for stripes and embroideries.

THE sum total of the purchases made in Bengal by the European nations amounted, a few years ago, to no more than twenty millions (above 870,000*l.*) One third of this sum was paid in iron, lead, copper, woollens, and Dutch spices: the remainder was discharged in money. Since the English have made themselves masters of this rich country, its exports have been increased, and its imports diminished, because the conquerors have carried away a greater quantity of merchandise, and pay for it out of the revenues they receive from the country. There is reason to believe, that this revolution in the trade of Bengal has not arrived at its crisis, and that sooner or later it will be attended with more important consequences and effects.

English  
 settlement  
 at St. Helena.

To maintain their correspondence with this vast country, and their other Asiatic settlements, the English company have fixed upon St. Helena as a place of refreshment. This island, which is only between twenty eight and twenty nine miles in circumference, lies in fifteen degrees fifty minutes south latitude, between Africa and America, and almost at an equal distance from those two quarters of the globe. It does not appear that the Portuguese, who discovered it in 1502, ever established a colony there; but it is certain that, agreeable to their usual method, they put on shore some cattle and poultry for the use of the ships that might touch there. These conveniences afterwards invited the Dutch to form a small settlement upon the island, which they were afterwards dispossessed of

of by the English, who have been settled there ever since the year 1673. BOOK  
III.

THOUGH St. Helena appears to be nothing but a large rock, beaten on all sides by the waves, it is nevertheless a delightful place. The climate is more temperate than might be expected; the soil, which is only a foot and a half deep, is covered with citrons, palms, pomegranates and other trees, laden with flowers and fruit at the same time; while streams of excellent water, which nature has distributed better than art could have done, enliven the whole scene. Those who are born in this fortunate abode enjoy a perfect state of health; passengers are here cured of their disorders, particularly of the scurvy. Four hundred families, composed of English and of French refugees, cultivate pulse, and breed cattle, which are of an exquisite flavour, and of great service to the ships crews that put in there. This settlement, which nature and art have united to render almost impregnable, has, however, one grand defect; the ships that return from India to Europe land there with ease and security, but the outward-bound ships cannot reach this asylum, being strongly repelled by winds and adverse currents. To avoid the inconveniences attending so long a voyage, when made without stopping, several of them put in at the Cape of Good Hope; others, particularly those bound to Arabia and Malabar; take in refreshments at the islands of Comora.

THESE islands, that lie in the Mozambique channel, between the coast of Zanguebar and Madagascar, are five in number; the principal one, from which this small archipelago takes its name, is little known. The Portuguese, who discovered it in the course of their first expeditions, brought the name of Europeans into such detestation by their cruelties, that all who have since ventured

The use  
the English  
make of  
the island  
of Comora.

B O O K

III.

ventured to go on shore there have either been massacred or very ill treated. It has accordingly been quite forsaken. The islands of Mayota, Moeti, and Anjuan, are not more frequented, on account of the difficulty of approaching them, and the want of a safe anchorage. The English vessels put in at the island of Joanna.

HERE it is that, within the compass of thirty leagues, nature displays all her riches, with all her simplicity. Hills ever green, and vallies ever gay, every where present a variety of delightful landscapes. Thirty thousand inhabitants, distributed into seventy-three villages, share its productions. They speak the Arabic language, and their religion is a very corrupt sort of Mohammedanism; their moral principles are more refined than they usually are in this part of the globe; the habit they have contracted of living upon milk and vegetables has given them an unconquerable aversion from labour. From this indolence arises a certain air of grandeur, which, in the people of distinction, consists in letting their nails grow to an immoderate length. To give a beauty to this negligence, they tinge them with a yellowish red, which they extract from a shrub.

THESE people, born to indolence, have lost that liberty which they, doubtless, came hither to enjoy from a neighbouring continent, of which they were the original inhabitants. An Arabian trader, not quite a century ago, having killed a Portuguese gentleman at Mozambique, threw himself into a boat, which chance conducted to Joanna. This stranger made such good use of his superior abilities, and the assistance of a few of his countrymen, that he acquired an absolute authority, which is still maintained by his grandson. This change in the government did not at all diminish the liberty and security enjoyed by the English, who landed upon the island. They continued to put their sick

on shore without molestation, where the salubrity of the air, the excellence of the fruits, provisions and water, soon restored them to health. They were only obliged to give a higher price for the provisions they wanted, for which the following reasons may be assigned.

B O O K  
III.

THE Arabians having been induced to frequent an island governed by an Arab, have brought the Indian manufactures into vogue; and as the cowries, cocoanuts, and other commodities they received in exchange, were not sufficient to defray the expence of this article of luxury, the islanders have been obliged to demand money for their goats and poultry, which they before exchanged for glass beads, and other baubles of as little value. This innovation has not, however, made the English desert a place of refreshment, which has no other inconvenience than that of being at too great a distance from our latitudes.

A SIMILAR inconvenience did not prevent the English company from extending their trade very considerably. The intercourse carried on between one port of India and another was too confined, and of too little consequence, to engage their attention for any long time. They were soon sufficiently enlightened to perceive that it was not for their interest to continue this kind of commerce; and therefore invited the private traders of their own nation to embark in it. They lent them their assistance, by taking a share in their expeditions, and granting them privileges on board their own fleets, and frequently even undertook to be the carriers of their merchandise at a low freight. This generous behaviour resulting from a national spirit, and so diametrically opposite to that of other companies, quickly gave activity, strength, and credit, to the English settlements. Their free merchants were soon in possession of a dozen brigantines, that were employed within the Ganges, or were

The English company leave the country trade to private adventurers.

**B O O K**  
**III.**

dispatched from thence to Acham, Keda, Johor and Ligor. They fitted out an equal number of larger vessels from Calcutta, Madras, and Bombay, which frequented all the sea-ports in the east. These vessels would have been still more numerous, had not the company exacted a duty of five per cent. in all the places where they had settlements, and eight and a half per cent. upon all the remittances made by the free merchants to the capital. When their necessities did not compel them to recede from this unaccountable arrangement, these merchants lent their money upon bottomry, sometimes to other European merchants that wanted it, but most frequently to the captains of ships belonging to their own nation, who, not being strictly dependent upon the company, can traffic for others in the voyages they make for them.

The company judge it improper to keep up their marine.

At its first rise this great body was ambitious of maintaining a maritime force. This was quite laid aside when it resumed its operations in the time of the Protector. Having nothing then in view but profit, they resolved to embark their goods on private bottoms; and what was then done through necessity, has since been continued through oeconomy. There are merchants who furnish them with ships, completely rigged and victualled, to carry out to India, and bring back to Europe, such a number of tons as they contract for. The time they are to stay at the place of their destination is always fixed. Those which happen to have no cargo to bring back, are usually hired by some free merchant, who engages to indemnify the owner. These are always the first sent home the following year, to prevent their rigging from being too much worn. In cases of necessity the company will equip them out of their own store-houses; but they oblige them to pay at the stipulated rate of fifty per cent. advance on them.

THE

THE vessels employed in this navigation carry from six to eight hundred tons burden. At their departure the company occupy just so much room as is sufficient to hold their iron, their lead, their copper, their woollens, and Madeira wine, which are the only merchandise they send to India. The owners are allowed to store the remaining part of each vessel with the provisions necessary for so long a voyage, and any other articles which the society they are concerned for do not trade in. On their return, they have likewise a right to assign to any use they think proper a space equal to thirty tons, which, by their contract, is reserved to themselves: they may even take in the same articles as are embarked for the company. Till lately they used to pay the company thirty per cent. on the value of these commodities; but since the 21st of October 1773, this duty has been reduced to one-half. It was thought that this indulgence would dispose the owners and their agents more punctually to fulfil their engagements, and would put a stop to fraudulent importations. The spirit of humanity, which is more common in free states than in others, has in England given rise to a very commendable custom: the surgeon of each ship that arrives from India receives, besides his pay, twenty two livres, ten sols, (near a pound,) by way of gratuity for every man in the ship's company that he brings back to Europe.

THE company, disengaged from the trouble necessarily attending the maintenance of a marine, as well as from the country trade in India, had no other object to take up their attention than the commerce carried on directly between Europe and Asia. They entered upon it with a capital of 8,322,547 livres 10 sols; (364,111*l.* 9*d.*  $\frac{3}{4}$ .) and, in 1676, having, by fortunate events, been enabled to make a division of cent. per cent. they thought it most for their interest to double their capital. This

Capital of  
the com-  
pany.



**B O O K**  
**III.**



Extent of  
the com-  
pany's  
trade.

capital still kept increasing, till in 1702 the two companies that had so obstinately opposed each other, threw their wealth, their plans, and their hopes, into one common stock. It has since risen to seventy-two millions (3,150,000*l.*) divided into shares, originally of 1,125, (not quite 50*l.*) and afterwards of 2,250 livres. (not quite 100*l.*)

THE trade was, in the beginning, carried on with great spirit and success, notwithstanding the smallness of their stock. As early as the year 1628, the company employed twelve thousand tons of shipping, and four thousand seamen. Their expeditions varied in an inconceivable manner; and were more or less considerable, according to the ignorance or capacity of those who conducted them; the different states of peace or war, the prosperity or misfortunes of the metropolis, the fondness or indifference of the Europeans for Indian manufactures; and the different degrees of competition they met with from other nations. Since the beginning of the present century, these changes have been neither so frequent, nor so remarkable. The trade has been established upon a more solid basis, and the sales have risen to seventy-eight millions. (above 3,400,000*l.*)

THEIR amount would have been still greater, had it not been for the restraints that are laid upon them. To enter into a detail of these would be too long and too minute a task. It will be sufficient to mention, that every ship returning from India is obliged to unlade in England, and that those which bring prohibited goods are compelled to land them at the port of London. The cottons and stuffs that come from these countries pay very high duties; those levied upon tea are still higher. If the government hoped, by laying on so enormous a tax, to abate the excessive fondness of the people for this liquor, its expectations have not been answered.

TEA

TEA was introduced into England by the Lords Arlington and Ossory, who imported it from Holland in 1666, and their ladies brought it into fashion among people of their own rank. At that time it sold in London for sixty-seven or sixty-eight livres (about 3*l.*) a pound, though it cost but three or four at Batavia. Notwithstanding the price was kept up with very little variation, the fondness for this liquor gained ground; it was not, however, brought into common use till towards the year 1715, when green tea began to be drank, whereas till then no sort was known but the bohea. The fondness for this Asiatic leaf has since become universal. Perhaps, the phrenzy is not without its inconveniencies; but it cannot be denied, that it has contributed more to the sobriety of the nation than the severest laws, the most eloquent harangues of christian orators, or the best treatises of morality.

IN 1766 six millions of pounds of tea were brought from China by the English, four millions five hundred thousand by the Dutch, two millions four hundred thousand by the Swedes, the same quantity by the Danes, and two millions one hundred thousand by the French. The sum total of these quantities amounts to seventeen millions four hundred thousand pounds. The preference given by most nations to chocolate, coffee, and other liquors, joined to a series of observations carefully pursued for several years, and the most exact calculations, that can possibly be made in such complicated cases, inclines us to think that the whole consumption throughout Europe does not exceed five millions four hundred thousand pounds. In this case, that of Great Britain must be twelve millions.

It is universally allowed, that there are at least two millions in the mother country, and a million in the colonies, who constantly drink tea. It is not unreasonable to

**B O O K**  
**III.**

suppose, that each individual consumes four pounds in a year; but should the quantity be something less, the deficiency is supplied by those who are less attached to it, and for this reason have not been taken into the account. A pound of tea, which costs only thirty sols (about 1s. 4d.) in the East, constantly sells in England for six livres ten sols, (near six shillings.) including the duty; consequently the rage for this Asiatic leaf costs the nation about seventy-two millions. (about 3,150,000*l*.)

To oppose the entries of the custom-house to this computation would argue either ignorance or artifice. It is true that the amount of the duties, which, according to this calculation, ought to be about 18,000,000 livres, (near 790,000*l*.) is hardly half so much; but the contraband trade in this commodity carried on in England is notorious. The government itself is so thoroughly convinced of it, that, in order to lessen it, it has lately lowered the duty twenty sols (10*d*.) a pound. In all probability it would have been still more generous, had it not unfortunately been under the necessity of considering its customs as a resource of finance, rather than as the thermometer of its commerce. This relaxation, which of itself is not sufficient to prevent the teas in the different ports of Europe from being smuggled into Great Britain, has been rendered more efficacious by the national acquisition of the Isle of Man, which belonged to the Athol family.

THOUGH most branches of the public revenue have been increased by an arrangement, which deprived the illicit trader of his most convenient market, the India Company have been particularly benefited by it. As their commodities were subjected to higher duties than any others, the clandestine importation of them was more common, and was principally carried on by the Isle of Man, which is admirably situated to receive vessels

sels from the North. Tea was the favourite object of this contraband trade. The English company will not fail, in future, to provide as much stock as may answer their demands, and to secure to themselves the advantages which their rivals ravished from them within the limits of their own empire.

B O O K  
III.

THE teas and other merchandise that arrive from India are paid for in money. The government which is not ignorant of this, has limited the exportation of specie to 6,750,000 livres. (about 295,000*l*.) This unaccountable restriction, so unworthy a commercial people, neither has been or can be carried into execution. The sums registered are always much higher, but this indulgence does not prevent considerable sums being clandestinely carried abroad without the knowledge of the custom-house officers. These fraudulent practices have increased in proportion as the trade has become more extensive; and the money sent out of the kingdom, has been long computed at one third of the profit arising from the sales.

THIS exportation of specie would have been more considerable if the company had adhered to that article in their charter, by which it is provided, that they shall export in merchandise of their own nation, the value of the tenth part of what they take in money upon their vessels. They have constantly made a charge for much greater sums in brass, lead, and English cloths, without reckoning the profits made in India upon iron from Sweden and Biscay, and other articles taken from several countries of Europe.

THEIR advocates, in order to reinstate them in the good opinion of the public, which they have but seldom enjoyed, have frequently asserted, that this body occasioned as much money to be brought into the country, as they carried out of it. This plea caused such a

**B O O K**  
**III.**

warm altercation in the beginning of the present century, that the government thought the question not unworthy of its attention. It was found by consulting the registers, that from the end of December 1712, to the end of December 1717, 52,563,037 livres 10 sols (2,299,632*l.* 17*s.* 9*d.*  $\frac{3}{4}$ .) had been exported to India. From all circumstances it appeared, that the cash clandestinely carried out amounted, at least, to one half; and that consequently, there could be no mistake in estimating the amount of both these sums at 78,844,566 livres 5 sols. (3,449,449*l.*) The sums remitted home by the company, in the same space of time, amounted to 75,058,391 livres 5 sols. (3,283,804*l.* 12*s.* 1*d.*  $\frac{1}{2}$ .) Thus, supposing these calculations to be just, the consumption of the Asiatic productions in England for five years, should not have risen so high as 3,786,165 livres: (about 165,645*l.*) but there is reason to believe that it rose much higher; and that a great deal of merchandise apparently sold to foreigners, never stirred out of the kingdom. The partiality that has lately prevailed in favour of Scotch and Irish linens, printed in England, and the increase of the silk manufacture, by lessening the demand for contraband goods, must of necessity render the commerce of the East more advantageous to the nation. Before the year 1720, Great Britain annually consumed three millions seven hundred and fifty thousand yards of India cottons; but this consumption is greatly diminished.

Divisions  
of the pro-  
prietors.

It is not to be supposed, that any changes could happen in the relative state of the Indian trade with the government in general, without producing some alterations in the private fortunes of the proprietors. Their profits have, at certain periods, been enormous; at others, very slender. The shares have been regulated in conformity to these variations. The dividend, which, for a long

long time, had been no more than seven per cent. was, in 1743, raised to eight. It was afterwards reduced to six, in 1766 it rose to ten, and since that time to twelve and a half. This was more than the situation of the company could afford; since, at this period, they had little more remaining than their original capital. If this be the case, how has it happened that so slender a capital should, in the opinion of the public, have acquired the value of 280,000,000, (about 12,250,000*l.*) which is the amount according to the price of the stock?

B O O K  
III.

THIS objection is not answerable. The enthusiasm of the English is well known. It has repeatedly been excited by circumstances that would not have made the least impression on the most volatile and trifling people. An important event has forcibly drawn the whole nation into its vortex. They have abandoned themselves with all the impetuosity of their character, to the vast prospects that have been opened to them by the late conquest of Bengal.

SHOULD it be asked, if this astonishing revolution, which has had so sensible an influence, both upon the state of the inhabitants of this part of Asia, and upon the trade of the European nations in these climates, hath been the consequence and result of a series of political schemes?—If it be one of those events, of which prudence has a right to claim the sole merit? We shall answer; No. Chance alone has determined it: and the circumstances that have opened this field of glory and power to the English, far from promising them the success they have had, seemed on the contrary to threaten them with the most fatal reverse of fortune.

Conquest  
of Bengal.  
Advanta-  
ges drawn  
by the  
English  
from this  
acqui-  
sition, and  
the con-  
duct they  
have hi-  
therto ob-  
served.

A PERNICIOUS custom had for some time prevailed in these countries. The governors of all the European settlements took upon them to grant an asylum to such of the natives of the country as were afraid of oppression  
or

**B O O K**  
**III.**

or punishment. As they received very considerable sums in return for their protection, they overlooked the danger, to which the interests of their principals were exposed by this proceeding. One of the chief officers of Bengal, who was apprized of this resource, took refuge among the English at Calcutta to avoid the punishment due to his treachery. He was taken under their protection. The subah, justly irritated, put himself at the head of his army, attacked the place, and took it. He put the garrison into a close dungeon, where they were suffocated in the space of twelve hours. Three and twenty of them only remained alive. These wretched people offered large sums to the keeper of their prison, to prevail upon him to get their deplorable situation represented to the prince. Their cries and lamentations were sufficient informations to the people who were touched with compassion; but no one would venture to address the despotic monarch upon the subject. The expiring English were told that he was asleep; and there was not, perhaps, a single person in Bengal who thought that the tyrant's slumbers should be interrupted, even to preserve the lives of one hundred and fifty unfortunate men.

ADMIRAL Watson, who was just arrived in India with his squadron, and Colonel Clive who had so remarkably distinguished himself in the war of the Carnatic, did not hesitate to revenge the cause of their country. They got together the English who had been dispersed, and were flying from place to place, they went up the Ganges in the month of December 1756, retook Calcutta, made themselves masters of several other places, and gained a complete victory over the subah.

SUCH a rapid and extensive success becomes in a manner inconceivable, when we consider that it was only with a body of five hundred men that the English were  
to

to stand against the whole force of Bengal. But if their superiority was partly owing to their better discipline, and to other evident advantages that the Europeans have in battle over the Indian powers; the ambition of eastern chiefs, the avarice of their ministers, and the nature of a government, whose only springs are fear and present interest, were of still more effectual service to them: they had experience enough to take advantage of the concurrence of these several circumstances in their first attack, and in all that succeeded it. The subah became detested by all his own people, as tyrants generally are, the principal officers sold their interest to the English; he was betrayed at the head of his army, the greatest part of which refused to engage; and he himself fell into the hands of his enemies, who caused him to be strangled in prison.

**B O O K**  
**III.**

THEY disposed of the subahship in favour of Jaffier-Ally-Khan, the ringleader of the conspiracy; who ceded to the company some provinces with a grant of every privilege, exemption and favour, to which they could have any pretence. But soon growing weary of the yoke he had brought upon himself, he was secretly looking out for means to get rid of it. His designs were discovered, and he was arrested in the center of his own capital.

COSSIM-ALLY-KHAN, his nephew, was proclaimed in his stead. He had purchased that usurpation with an immense sum of money. But he did not enjoy it long. Impatient of the yoke, as his predecessor had been, he gave some tokens of his intractability, and refused to submit to the laws the company imposed upon him. Upon this the war broke out again. The same Jaffier-Ally-Khan, whom the English kept a prisoner, was again proclaimed subah of Bengal. They marched against Cossim-Ally-Khan. His general officers were corrupted:



**B O O K**  
**III.**

corrupted : he was betrayed and entirely defeated : too happy, that whilst he lost his dignity, he still preserved the immense treasures he had amassed.

NOTWITHSTANDING this revolution, Cossim-Ally did not drop his hopes of vengeance. Full of resentment, and loaded with treasure, he set out for the nabob of Benarez, chief visir in the Mogul's empire. He and all the neighbouring princes re-united in opposition to the common enemy, who threatened them all equally. But now the contest lay no longer between them and a handful of Europeans just arrived from the coast of Coromandel; they were to engage with the whole strength of Bengal, of which the English were masters. Elated with their successes, they did not wait to be attacked; they set out directly and made head against so formidable a league, marching on with all the confidence which Clive could inspire, a leader, whose name seemed to have become the pledge of conquest. However, Clive did not care to hazard any thing. Part of the campaign was spent in negotiations; but in time the treasures which the English had drawn from Bengal, served to ensure them new conquests. The heads of the Indian army were corrupted; and when the nabob of Benares was desirous of coming to action, he was obliged to fly with his men without ever being able to engage.

By this victory, the country of Benarez fell into the hands of the English : and it seemed as if nothing could hinder them from annexing that sovereignty to that of Bengal : but either from moderation or prudence, they were content to levy eight millions by contribution : and they offered peace to the nabob on conditions which would render him incapable of doing them any hurt; but such as they were, he most readily agreed to them, that he might regain the possession of his own provinces.

IN

IN the midst of these calamities, Cossim-Ally still found means to preserve part of his treasures, and retired to the Cheyks, a people situated in the neighbourhood of Delhi, from whence he made an attempt to procure some allies, and to raise up a body of enemies to oppose the English. BOOK  
III.

WHILE matters were thus circumstanced in Bengal, the Mogul having been driven out of Delhi by the Patans, by whom his son had been set up in his room, was wandering from one province to another in search of a place of refuge in his own territories, and requesting succour from his own vassals but without success. Abandoned by his subjects, betrayed by his allies, without support, without any army; he was allured by the power of the English, and implored their protection, they promised to conduct him to Delhi, and re-establish him on his throne; but they began by causing him to cede to them before-hand the absolute sovereignty over Bengal. This cession was made by an authentic act, and attended with all the formalities usually practised throughout the Mogul empire.

THE English, securely possessed of this title, which was to give a kind of legitimacy to their usurpation, at least in the eyes of the vulgar, soon forgot the promises they had made. They gave the Mogul to understand that particular circumstances would not suffer them to be concerned in such an enterprize; that some better opportunity was to be hoped for; and to make up for all his losses, they assigned him a pension of six millions (262,500*l.*) with the revenue of Illahabad, and Shah Ichanabad or Delhi; upon which that unfortunate prince was reduced to subsist himself in one of the principal towns of the province of Banarez, where he has taken up his residence. Thus the Mogul empire comes to be shared between two governing powers, one of which is acknowledged

**B O O K**  
**III.**

known in the several districts of India, where the English company has any establishments and authority; the other in such provinces as border on Delhi, and in those parts to which the influence of that company does not extend.

THE English, thus become sovereigns of Bengal, have thought it incumbent on them to keep up the shadow of ancient forms, in a country where they have the lead, and, perhaps, the only power that is likely to be secure and lasting. They govern the kingdom still under the name of a nabob, who is of their nomination and in their pay, and seems to give his orders. It is from him that all public acts seem to proceed and issue, though the decrees in fact of the council at Calcutta; so that the people, notwithstanding their change of masters, have for a considerable time been induced to believe, that they still submitted but to the same yoke.

If we should wish to know the amount of the public revenues of Bengal, we shall find at the period of the conquest, it was equal to fourscore millions. (3,500,000*l.*) The outgoings, either for the government, or defence of the province, were stated at 41 millions; (1,793,750*l.*) six millions (262,500*l.*) were agreed to be given to the Mogul, and three millions (131,250*l.*) to the nabob; so that the remainder to the company was thirty millions. (1,312,500*l.*) Their purchases in the different parts of India might absorb a great part of this sum, but still it has been thought there must after all remain a surplus of several millions to be carried into Great Britain.

THIS new arrangement of matters without having wrought any sensible change in the exterior form of the English company, has essentially changed their object. They are no longer a trading body, they are a territorial

rial power which farms out its revenues in aid of a commerce that formerly was their sole existence, and which, notwithstanding the extension it has received, is no more than an additional object in the various combinations of their present real grandeur. The arrangements intended to give stability to a situation so prosperous are, perhaps, the most reasonable that can be. England has at present in India an establishment to the amount of nine thousand eight hundred European troops, and fifty-four thousand sipahis well armed and well disciplined. Three thousand of these Europeans, and twenty-five thousand sipahis are dispersed along the borders of the Ganges.

THE most considerable body of these troops has been stationed in Benares, once the nurse of Indian science, and still the most famous academy of these rich countries, where European avarice pays no regard to any thing. This situation is chosen because it appeared favourable for stopping the descent of the warlike mountaineers of the north; and in case of attack, the maintaining of a war in a foreign territory would be less ruinous than in the countries of which the company is to receive the revenues. On the south, as far as it has been found practicable, they have occupied all the narrow passes by which an enterprizing and active adversary might attempt to penetrate into the province. Dacca, which is in the center of it, sees under its walls a considerable force always ready to fly wherever their presence may be necessary. All the nabobs and rajahs, who are dependent on the subah of Bengal are disarmed, surrounded by spies in order to discover their conspiracies, and by troops to render them ineffectual.

IN case of any unlucky revolution which might oblige the victorious power to change its quarters, and abandon

**B O O K**  
**III.**

don its posts, they have constructed a fort near Calcutta called Fort William, which, in case of urgent necessity, would serve as a place of refuge for the army, should they be forced to retreat, and give time to expect the necessary reinforcements for the recovery of their superiority. This fort is a regular octagon with eight bastions, several counter-guards, and some half moons already begun without a glacis, or covered way. The ditch of this fort may be about one hundred and sixty feet broad, its depth nearly eighteen. On the side of the Ganges, the place is least strong, and the curtains are covered only with redans, over which there is a double battery raised on piles. The principal inconvenience of this citadel, whose construction cost twenty millions, (875,000*l.*) is, that it does not serve to protect Calcutta, which is now become the city of the greatest importance in India, whose people amount to six hundred thousand souls, and has prodigious riches centered within her walls, and by a variety of circumstances is now become the theatre of a most extensive commerce: It must necessarily be that wholesomeness of the air, and the advantage of a very fortunate position has prevailed over every other consideration.

NOTWITHSTANDING these precautions taken by the English, they are not, and cannot be, without apprehensions. The Mogul power may gain strength, and wish to rescue one of its finest provinces out of the hands of a foreign oppressor. They have reason to fear that the barbarous nations may be again allured by the softness of the climate. The princes now at variance may, perhaps, put an end to their contests, and re-unite in favour of their common liberty. It is not impossible but the Indians, who are in the pay of the victorious English, and actually constitute their force,  
may

may one day turn upon them those arms of which they have been taught the use. The grandeur of the company, founded solely on delusion, may, perhaps, moulder away without their being actually driven from what they possess. It is well known that the Marrattas have their eyes continually turned towards this fine country, and are constantly threatening it with an invasion. Unless the English are successful enough, either by bribery, or intrigue, to divert the storm, Bengal will be the object of pillage and rapine, whatever measures may be taken to oppose a light cavalry, whose alertness exceeds every thing we can say of it. The incursions of those ravagers may be repeated; and then they will have less tribute to pay, but their expence must be increased. Supposing, however, that none of the mischiefs we have ventured to foresee, should take place, is it likely that the revenues of Bengal should always continue the same? We must have leave to doubt it. The English company no longer exports any silver, but even carries away some for the use of their factories. Their merchants's agents make immense fortunes, and even private persons gain a tolerable competence, which they repair to the capital to enjoy. The other European nations find in the treasures of this ruling power, accommodations which make it unnecessary to introduce new duties. Must not all these combinations serve to bring about a blank in the reckoning of those countries, and such as will sooner or later force itself to be left in the making up of the public accounts?

THAT period might be at some distance, indeed; if the English respecting the rights of Humanity were to rid those countries of the oppression under which they have continued to groan for so many ages. Then Calcutta, far from being an object of terror to the Indians, would be rendered a tribunal always open to the com-

B O O K  
III.

**B O O K**  
**III.**

plaints of those unhappy sufferers whom tyranny should dare to molest. Property would grow into respect, so that the treasure which has been buried so long would be drawn out of the bowels of the earth, and fulfil its destined purpose. Agriculture and manufactures would be encouraged to such a degree, that the objects of export would become from day to day more considerable, and the company by following such maxims as these, instead of being driven to the necessity of lessening the tributes which they found established, might possibly find means to bring about an augmentation consistent with the general satisfaction of the natives. Let it not be said, that such a plan is chimerical. The English company of itself has already proved the possibility of it.

THE Europeans, who have acquired any territory in India, for the most part choose for their farmers the natives of the country, from whom it is common to exact such considerable sums in advance, that in order to pay them they are obliged to borrow at an exorbitant interest. The distress, which these greedy farmers voluntarily bring on themselves, obliges them to exact of the inhabitants to whom they underlet some parcels of the land, at so considerable a rent, that the poor wretches quit their villages, and abandon them for ever. The contractor, ruined by this elopement, which renders him insolvent, is dismissed to make room for a successor, who commonly meets with the same fate; so that it very frequently happens that nothing but the first sum deposited is ever received from the estate, or very little more.

DIFFERENT steps have been taken in the English colonies, on the coast of Coromandel. It had been observed that the villages had been formed by several families, who for the most part were connected with each other; this remark served to banish the custom of

of employing farmers. Every land was taxed at a rent certain by the year, and the head of the family was security for his relations and connexions. This method united the colonists one with another, and created in them a disposition as well as the means of affording themselves a reciprocal support. This has occasioned the rise of the settlements of that nation to the utmost degree of prosperity they were capable of receiving; while those of her rivals were languishing for want of cultivation and manufactures, and consequently of population.

Why must a mode of conduct which does so much honour to reason and humanity not be extended beyond the small territory of Madras? Can it then be true that moderation of temper is a virtue singly attached to moderate fortunes? The English company till these latter times had always held a conduct superior to that of the other settlements. Their agents, their factors, were well chosen. The most part of them were young men of good families, already instructed in the rudiments of commerce, and such as were not afraid, when the service of their country called upon them to cross those seas which England considers but as a part of her empire. The company had generally regarded their commerce in a great scale, and had almost always carried it on like an association of true politicians as well as a body of merchants. Upon the whole their planters, merchants and soldiers had retained more honesty, more regularity, and more firmness than those of the other nations.

Who would ever have imagined that this same company, by an immediate alteration of conduct, and change of system should soon make the people of Bengal regret the despotism of their ancient masters? That fatal revolution has been but too sudden and too real.



B. O. O. K

III

A settled tyranny has taken the place of arbitrary authority. The exactions are become general and stated, the oppression continual and absolute. The destructive art of monopolies is carried to perfection, and new ones have been even invented. In a word, they have altered and tainted the public sources of confidence and happiness.

UNDER the government of the Mogul Emperors, the subahs, who had the care of the revenues, were, from the nature of the business, obliged to leave the receipt of them to Nabobs, Polygars, and Jemidars, who were a sort of under-security to other Indians, and these still to others; so that the produce of the lands passed on, and was partly sunk amidst a multitude of intermediate hands, before it came into the coffers of the subah, who, on his part, delivered but a very small portion of it to the emperor. This administration, faulty in many respects, had in it this favourable circumstance for the people, that the farmers never being changed, the rent of the farms remained always the same; because the least increase, as it disturbed the whole chain of advantage which every one perceived in his turn, would infallibly have occasioned a revolt: a terrible resource, but the only one left in favour of humanity in countries groaning under the oppressions of despotic rulers.

It is probable that in the midst of these regulations there were many injuries and partial distresses. But, at least, as the receipt of the public monies was made upon a fixed and moderate assessment, emulation was not wholly extinguished. The cultivators of the land being sure of laying up the produce of their harvest, after paying with exactness the rate of their farms, assisted the natural goodness of the soil by their labour; the weavers, masters of the price of their works, being at liberty to make choice of the buyer which best suited them,

them, exerted themselves in extending and improving their manufactures. Both the one and the other, being easy on the head of their subsistence, yielded with satisfaction to the most delightful inclinations of nature, or the prevailing fancy of their climate; and beheld in the encrease of their family nothing more than the means of augmenting their riches. Such are evidently the reasons why industry, agriculture, and population, have been carried to such a length in the province of Bengal. One would think they might still be carried further under the government of a free people, friends to humanity; but the thirst of money, the most devouring, the most cruel of all passions, has given rise to a pernicious and destructive government.

THE English, become sovereigns of Bengal, scarce content to receive the revenues on the same footing as the ancient subahs, have been desirous all at once to augment the produce of the farms, and to appropriate to themselves the rents. To accomplish both these objects, they are become the farmers to their own subah; that is, to a creature on whom they have just conferred that empty title, the more securely to impose on the Indian people. The consequence of this new plan has been to pillage the farmers, in order to substitute in their room the company's agents. They have also monopolized the sale of salt, tobacco, and betel, objects of the first necessity in those countries, but they have done this under the name, and apparently on the account of the subah. They have gone still further, and have obliged the very same subah to establish in their favour an exclusive privilege for the sale of cotton coming from any other province, in order to raise it to an exorbitant price. They have had the duties augmented, and to conclude all, have obtained an edict, which has been published, to forbid all private Europeans trad-

**B O O K**  
**III.**

ing in the interior parts of Bengal, and leaving it open and lawful only for the English.

WHEN we reflect on such a barbarous prohibition, it seems as if it had been contrived only to exhaust all the powers of doing mischief to that unfortunate country, whose prosperity, for their own sake, ought to be the only object of the English company. Besides, it is easy to see that the personal avarice of the members of the council at Calcutta has dictated that shameful law. Their desire was to ensure to themselves the produce of all the manufactures, at length to force the merchants of other nations, who chose to trade from one part of India to another, to purchase these articles of them at an exorbitant price, or to renounce their undertakings.

BUT still in the midst of this overbearing conduct, so contrary to the advantage of their constituents, these treacherous agents have attempted to disguise themselves under the mask of zeal. It was necessary, say they, to export to England a quantity of merchandise proportioned to the extent of her commerce, but the competition of private traders was prejudicial to the purchases of the company.

UNDER the same pretext, and in order to extend this exclusion to the foreign settlements while they appear to respect their rights, they have of late years ordered more merchandise than Bengal could furnish. At the same time the weavers have been forbidden to work for other nations until the English orders were completed. Thus the workmen, not being any longer at liberty to choose among the several purchasers, have been forced to deliver the fruits of their labour at the price they were pleased to give for them.

LET us consider too how these workmen have been paid. Here reason is confounded; we are at a loss for  
excuses

excuses or pretexts. The English, conquerors of Bengal, possessors of the immense treasures which the fruitfulness of the soil, and the industry of the inhabitants, had got together, have ventured to take upon themselves to alter the value of the specie. They have set the example of this meanness unknown to the despotic rulers of Asia; and it is through this disgraceful act that they have announced to the natives their sovereignty over them. It is true that such an operation, so contrary to the fidelity of trade and the public faith, could not last long. The company themselves found the pernicious effects of it, and was resolved to call in all the false coin, in order to replace it with other money, perfectly conformable to that which was always current in those countries. But let us attend to the manner in which so necessary an alteration was conducted.

THEY have struck in gold rupees to the amount of about fifteen millions (656,250*l.*) nominal value, but which represented in fact but nine millions (393,750*l.*); for four-tenths, or something more, was alloy. All who were found to possess these gold rupees of false alloy, were enjoined to bring them into the treasury at Calcutta, where they should be reimbursed for them in silver rupees; but instead of ten rupees and a half of silver, which each gold rupee ought to be worth, according to its rate they gave them but six; so that the amount of the alloy became the clear loss of the holder of their money.

AN oppression so general must necessarily be attended with violence; and consequently they have several times been obliged to have recourse to force of arms to carry into execution the orders of the council at Calcutta. These forces have not been employed against the Indians alone; tumults and military preparations have again broke out on all sides, even in the midst of peace.

**B O O K**  
**III.**

The Europeans have been exposed to signal acts of hostility, and particularly the French, who notwithstanding their being so reduced, and so weak, have still excited the jealousy of their former rivals.

If to the picture of public distresses we were to add that of private extortions, we should find the agents of the company, almost every where, exacting their tribute with extreme rigour, and raising contributions for them with the utmost cruelty. We should see them carrying a kind of inquisition into every family, and sitting in judgment upon every fortune; robbing indiscriminately the artizan and the labourer, imputing it as a crime against him that he is not sufficiently rich, and punishing him accordingly. We should view them selling their favour and their credit, as well to oppress the innocent as to screen the guilty. We should find in consequence of these irregularities, despair seizing every heart, and an universal dejection getting the better of every mind, both tending to a general stop in the progress and activity of commerce, agriculture, and population.

It will be thought, without doubt, after these details, it was impossible that Bengal should have fresh evils to dread. But, however, as if the elements, in league with mankind, had intended to bring all at once upon the same people, every calamity that by turns lays waste the universe, a drought of which there never had been an instance in those climates, came upon them, and prepared the way for a most dreadful famine in a country of all the most fertile.

In Bengal they have two harvests; one in April, the other in October. The first, called the little harvest, consists of the meager grain; the second, stiled the grand harvest, is singly of rice. The rains which commence regularly in the month of August, and end in the

the middle of October, are the occasion of these different productions; and it was by a drought which happened in 1769, at the season when the rains are expected, that there was a failure in the great harvest of 1769, and the lesser harvest of 1770. It is true that the rice on the higher grounds did not suffer greatly by this disturbance of the seasons, but there was far from a sufficient quantity for the nourishment of all the inhabitants of the country; add to which, the English, who were engaged before hand to take proper care of their subsistence, as well as of the sipahis belonging to them, did not fail to keep locked up in their magazine a part of the grain, though the harvest withal was insufficient.

**B O O K**  
**III.**

They have been accused of having made a very bad use of that necessary foresight, in order to carry on the most odious and the most criminal of all monopolies. It may be true that such a horrible method of acquiring riches may have tempted some individuals, but that the chief agents of the company, that the council of Calcutta could have adopted and ordered such a destructive operation, that, to gain a few millions of rupees, the council should coolly have devoted to destruction several millions of their fellow creatures, and by the most cruel means; this is a circumstance we never can give credit to. We even venture to pronounce it impossible; because such wickedness could never enter at once into the minds and hearts of a set of men, whose business it is to deliberate and act for the good of others.

BUT, still this scourge did not fail to make itself felt throughout the extent of Bengal. Rice, which is commonly set at one sol ( $\frac{1}{4}$ ) for three pounds, has gradually been raised till it came so high as to be sold at four sols (2d.) per pound, and it has even been up to five or six sols (about 3d.); neither indeed was there any to be found,

**B O O K**  
**III.**

found, except in such places where the Europeans had taken care to collect it for their own occasions.

THE unhappy Indians were every day perishing by thousands under this want of sustenance, without any means of help and without any resource, not being able to procure themselves the least nourishment. They were to be seen in their villages, along the public ways, in the midst of our European colonies, pale, meagre, fainting, emaciated, consumed by famine; some stretched on the ground in expectation of dying, others scarce able to drag themselves on to seek for any nutriment, and throwing themselves at the feet of the Europeans, intreating them to take them in as their slaves.

To this description, which makes humanity shudder, let us add other objects equally shocking; let imagination enlarge upon them, if possible; let us represent to ourselves infants deserted, some expiring on the breast of their mothers; every where the dying and the dead mingled together; on all sides the groans of sorrow, and the tears of despair; and we shall then have some faint idea of the horrible spectacle Bengal presented for the space of six weeks.

DURING this whole time the Ganges was covered with carcases; the fields and highways were choaked up with them; infectious vapours filled the air, and diseases multiplied; and one evil succeeding another, it was near coming to pass, that the plague had carried off the remainder of the inhabitants of that unfortunate kingdom. It appears, by calculations pretty generally acknowledged, that the famine carried off a fourth part; that is to say, about three millions.

BUT it is still more remarkable, and serves to characterise the gentleness, or rather the indolence, as well moral as natural of the natives, that amidst this terrible distress, such a multitude of human creatures, pressed

pressed by the most urgent of all necessities, remained in an absolute inactivity, and made no attempts whatever for their self-preservation. All the Europeans, especially the English, were possessed of magazines, and these very magazines were respected; private houses were so too; no revolt, no massacre, not the least violence prevailed. The unhappy Indians, resigned to a quiet despair, confined themselves to the request of succour they did not obtain, and peaceably waited the relief of death.

LET us now represent to ourselves any part of Europe afflicted by a similar calamity. What disorder! what fury! what atrocious acts! what mischiefs would ensue! how should we have seen among us Europeans, some contending for their food with their dagger in hand, some pursuing, some flying, and, without remorse, cutting one another's throats. How should we have seen men at last turn their rage on themselves, tearing and devouring their own limbs, and, in the blindness of despair, trampling under foot all authority, as well as every sentiment of nature and reason.

HAD it been the fate of the English to have had the like events to dread on the part of the people of Bengal, perhaps the famine would have been less general and less destructive. For setting aside, as perhaps we ought, every charge of monopoly, no one will undertake to defend them against the reproach of negligence and insensibility. And in what crisis have they merited that reproach? In the very instant of time when the life or death of several millions of their fellow-creatures was in their power. One would think that, in such an alternative, the very love of human kind, that sentiment innate in all hearts, might have inspired them with resources. Might not the poor wretches expiring before the eyes of the Europeans with reason have cried out,

“ Is



**B O O K**  
**III.**

“ Is it then but for our ruin that you are fertile in ex-  
 “ pedients for your own preservation ? The immense  
 “ treasures which a long succession of ages had accu-  
 “ mulated in this country, you have made your own  
 “ spoils ; you have transported them into your own  
 “ country ; you have raised your contributions on us ;  
 “ you have got your agents to receive them for you ;  
 “ you are masters of our interior commerce ; you are  
 “ the sole managers of all our exported merchandize ;  
 “ your numerous vessels laden with the produce of our  
 “ industry and our soil, pass and repass to the enriching  
 “ of your factories and your colonies. All these things  
 “ you regulate, and you carry on for your own ad-  
 “ vantage. But what have you done for our preserva-  
 “ tion ? What steps have you taken to remove from us  
 “ the scourge that threatened us ? Deprived of all au-  
 “ thority, stripped of our property, weighed down by  
 “ the terrible hand of power, we can only lift our hands  
 “ to you to implore your assistance. Ye have heard  
 “ our groans ; ye have seen famine making very quick  
 “ advances upon us ; and then ye attended to your own  
 “ preservation. Ye have boarded up the small quan-  
 “ tity of provisions which escaped the pestilence ; ye  
 “ have filled your granaries with them, and distributed  
 “ them among your soldiers. But we, the sad dupes  
 “ of your avarice, wretches in every regard, as well  
 “ by your tyranny as by your indifference, ye treat us  
 “ like slaves, while you suppose we have any riches ;  
 “ but when it appears we are but a set of beings full of  
 “ wants, then you no longer regard us even as human  
 “ creatures. Of what service is it to us that you have  
 “ the management of our public forces entirely in your  
 “ hands ? Where are the laws and the morals of which  
 “ ye are so proud ? What then is that government  
 “ whose wisdom you so much boast of ? Have you put  
 “ a stop

“ a stop to the prodigious exports carried by your pri- B O O K  
 “ vate traders? Have ye changed the destination of III.  
 “ your ships? Have they traversed the neighbouring  
 “ seas in search of the means of subsistence for us?  
 “ Have ye requested it of the adjacent countries? Ah,  
 “ why has Providence suffered you to break the chain  
 “ which attached us to our ancient sovereigns? Lefs  
 “ grasping, and more humane than ye are, they would  
 “ have invited plenty from all parts of Asia; they  
 “ would have opened every communication; they  
 “ would have lavished their treasures, and have thought  
 “ they did but enrich themselves while they preserved  
 “ their subjects.”

THIS last reflection, at least, was calculated to make  
 an impression on the English, supposing even that every  
 sentiment of humanity was extinguished in their hearts  
 by the effect of depravity. The barrenness had been  
 announced by a drought; and it is not to be doubted,  
 that, if instead of having solely a regard to themselves,  
 and remaining in an entire negligence of every thing  
 else, they had from the first taken every precaution in  
 their power, they might have accomplished the prefer-  
 vation of many lives that were lost.

It could not happen otherwise, than that an admini-  
 stration so faulty in itself should defeat the means of  
 prosperity attached to the possession of those extensive  
 countries. The company, pressed by real necessities,  
 and finding only insufficient resources in those treasures  
 which served to dazzle their imagination, has already  
 been obliged to tear aside the veil which concealed their  
 situation from the eyes of all the world. According to  
 a calculation, authenticated on the first of January 1773,  
 the total amount of the company's possessions in Eu-  
 rope, whether in arrears hereafter to be received, or  
 in real merchandise now in their storehouses, or even  
in

B O O K

III.

in immoveables, comes to the sum of 175,156,000 livres (7,663,075*l.*): whereas their engagements amount to 207,430,000 livres (14,075,062*l.* 10*s.*); so that there is a deficiency of 32,274,000 livres (1,411,987*l.* 10*s.*). It is true, that the means of the company in India, that is to say, their specie in the chests of their different settlements, outstanding debts due to them, the value of their wares, their civil and military preparations, their elephants, ships and their cargoes at sea, form a capital of 143,939,000 livres (6,297,331*l.* 5*s.*). On the other hand, their debts are not less than the sum of 45,726,000 livres (2,000,462*l.* 10*s.*); so that upon the whole, of their affairs in India, there is a balance in their favour of 98,213,000 livres (3,798,068*l.* 15*s.*). From this must be deducted what the company owes in Europe, that is to say, 32,274,000 livres (1,411,987*l.* 10*s.*), which reduces the sum of the general account to 65,939,000 livres (2,884,831*l.* 5*s.*); and as the amount of their stock is 72,000,000 livres (3,150,000*l.*); it follows, that on their capital, there is a real loss of 6,061,000 livres (265,168*l.* 15*s.*). So that, in case all the effects of the company, as well in Europe as in India, could be converted into money, a supposition extremely in their favour, the proprietors would not find their original deposit. Doubtless it was not easy to suspect their situation to be such, when we find the sales of the company have progressively risen from 44,000,000 livres (1,925,000*l.*), the amount of that in 1762, to 80,000,000 livres (3,500,000*l.*) according to the account of that of 1769. The trade of the company has been carried to such a pitch, that the sales for these last ten years, to 1771 inclusive, have produced the net sum of 649,207,000 livres (28,402,806*l.* 5*s.*). But it is essential to remark, that during

during the said period the company paid for different duties, to which their goods are subject, to the amount of 170,665,000 livres (7,466,593*l.* 15*s.*), that is more than five and twenty per cent. on the produce of the sales. And still this sum, so considerable as it is, is exclusive of an annual stipend of 9,000,000 livres (393,750*l.*); on which condition, government has given up to the company all territorial rights over Bengal.

To make good engagements so extensive, and to distribute at the same time to the proprietors a dividend of 9,000,000 livres (393,750*l.*), at the rate of twelve and a half per cent. The revenues of India ought to have been managed with great wisdom and oeconomy: then they might have been sufficient, as well for the purchases the company makes in India, as for those made in China, and they might have waved sending any sums to their small factories. It was with this confidence that the proprietors of stock enjoyed quietly their dividend, and even expected it to be raised by the importation of money which had been announced to them. But so far was the event from answering their large expectations, that the company's agents at Bengal, Bombay, and Madras, have continually drawn upon them to make good the insufficiency of the revenues. The draughts drawn upon them during the last five years, viz. from 1768 to 1772, both inclusive, amount to the sum of 49,250,000 livres (2,154,687*l.* 10*s.*). These draughts have made it unnecessary to send out coin to India; but during the same period they have been obliged to remit to China the sum of 20,000,000 livres (875,000*l.*). And even this remittance not having been answerable to the prodigious purchases made for the company at Canton, the factory there

B O O K  
III.

there have been obliged to draw on them for 7,780,000 livres (340,875*l.*). The company, moreover, have exported to India, within the same time, as much as 60,140,000 livres (2,631,125*l.*) of merchandise; so that, bringing together all these sums, it appears, that during these five years, which seemed likely to be the period of their greatest prosperity, the company, whether by exportations abroad, or by draughts paid in Europe, has employed in trade 137,590,000 livres, (6,019,562*l.* 10*s.*) which makes the sum of 27,515,000 livres (1,203,781*l.*) *communibus annis*. However, notwithstanding this prodigious difference between the speculations and the real transactions, if the revenues of Bengal had not been subject to unparalleled depredation, the company might have been enabled to support with ease all their expenses, and still continue a dividend of twelve and a half per cent. to the stockholders. The proof of this will appear in the abstract of their commerce, calculated upon the receipts and disbursements of the last years, on the experience of which it may be proper to ground our opinion of the actual state of things.

## R E C E I P T.

|                                                                           | <i>Livres.</i>          |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------|
| Produce of their sales, deducting discount,                               | 78,750,000 <sup>a</sup> |
| Produce of duties for the benefit of the<br>company laid on private trade | } 560,000 <sup>b</sup>  |
| Value of 500 tons of saltpetre wanted<br>annually for the army            |                         |
|                                                                           | } 500,000 <sup>c</sup>  |

Total 79,810,000<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> 3445,312*l.* 10*s.*

<sup>b</sup> 24,500*l.*

<sup>c</sup> 21,875*l.*

<sup>d</sup> 3,447,937*l.* 10*s.*

D I S -

DISBURSEMENTS.

|                                                                                                                  | <i>Livres.</i>          |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------|
| Amount of duties — —                                                                                             | 20,250,000 <sup>a</sup> |
| Freight and charges out —                                                                                        | 11,250,000 <sup>b</sup> |
| Value of goods annually exported —                                                                               | 11,250,000 <sup>c</sup> |
| Amount of bullion exported to China,<br>and of the draughts the factory there<br>draws annually on the company } | 4,500,000 <sup>d</sup>  |
| The impost of five per cent. on the<br>rough produce of the annual sales,<br>set at eighty-four millions — }     | 4,200,000 <sup>e</sup>  |
| Bills of exchange taken from different<br>parts of India — }                                                     | 8,080,000 <sup>f</sup>  |
| Annual stipend to be paid to govern-<br>ment on account of Bengal — }                                            | 9,000,000 <sup>g</sup>  |
| Annual dividend on the footing of<br>twelve and a half per cent. per ann. }                                      | 9,000,000 <sup>h</sup>  |
| Interest of bills beyond what the com-<br>pany receives of government }                                          | 1,120,000 <sup>i</sup>  |
| <hr/>                                                                                                            |                         |
| Total                                                                                                            | 78,650,000 <sup>k</sup> |

If, from the amount of the receipt stated at 79,810,000 livres, (3,491,687*l.* 10*s.*) we deduct the latter sum of 78,650,000 livres, (3,440,937*l.* 10*s.*) the surplus of the receipt will be 1,160,000 livres, (50,750*l.*)

THIS state, the several articles of which having undergone the inspection of parliament cannot be call-

|                                               |                                             |                                             |
|-----------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| <sup>a</sup> 885,937 <i>l.</i> 10 <i>s.</i>   | <sup>b</sup> 492,187 <i>l.</i> 10 <i>s.</i> | <sup>c</sup> 492,187 <i>l.</i> 10 <i>s.</i> |
| <sup>d</sup> 196,875 <i>l.</i>                | <sup>e</sup> 183,750 <i>l.</i>              | <sup>f</sup> 353,500 <i>l.</i>              |
| <sup>g</sup> 393,750 <i>l.</i>                | <sup>h</sup> 393,750 <i>l.</i>              | <sup>i</sup> 49,000 <i>l.</i>               |
| <sup>k</sup> 3,440,937 <i>l.</i> 10 <i>s.</i> |                                             |                                             |

**B O O K**  
**III.**

ed in question, serves to shew, that even supposing a wiser administration, both at home and in India, the proprietors had no reason to expect any advantage beyond the dividend of twelve and a half per cent. which had been fixed for them.

BUT, if we ascend from the particular interest of the trading company to considerations of more extent, what resources, what advantage does not the commerce of India procure to the state? The amount of duties on the company's importations, the impost of five per cent. on the rough produce of their sales, the stipend exacted by government on account of Bengal, form a tribute of 33,450,000 livres (1,463,437*l.* 10*s.*) paid annually to Great Britain out of the commerce and possessions of Asia. And so long as the public treasure, supported by this new branch of revenue, turns it to the improvement of the power and prosperity of the kingdom, the annual mass of riches is still increased by the exports of the company's merchandise; by the charges of their navigation, by the benefit of the dividend at eight and a half above the common interest, by the draughts they pay, since these draughts are the representatives of the fortunes made by their agents in their service, and which they return home to enjoy. All these objects brought together constitute nearly a total of 40,000,000 livres, (1,750,000*l.*) expended on the commerce of India to the advantage of the land and manufactures of England: and yet this sum of 40,000,000 livres, (1,750,000*l.*) together with the other of 33,450,000 livres, (1,463,437*l.* 10*s.*) received by the government, require no more than an export of 2, or 3,000,000 in bullion, (about 109,000*l.* on an average). Thus the purse of the state and the kingdom are equally enriched by the produce of a commerce, which by the good effect of a most extraordinary management, threatens

threatens with ruin the very proprietors who farm it out to their agents.

B O O K  
III.

It is easy to judge from the sketch just given, that for a long time they must sacrifice their dividends to clear away entirely that deficiency of 32,000,000 livres, (1,400,000*l.*) which has taken place in their affairs in Europe. But what will be attended with still more difficulty will be, to revive in India the order and oeconomy necessary for discharging the debt of 45,000,000 livres (1,968,750*l.*) contracted there on the company's account.

We must allow that the corruption to which the English have given themselves up from the first beginning of their power, the oppression which has succeeded it, the abuses every day multiplying, the entire loss of all principle; all these circumstances together form a contrast totally disagreeing with their past conduct in India, and the real constitution of their government in Europe. But this sort of problem in morals will be easily solved, upon considering with attention the natural effect of circumstances and events.

BEING now become absolute rulers in an empire where they were but traders, it was very difficult for the English not to make a bad use of their power. At a distance from home, men are no longer restrained by the fear of being ashamed to see their countrymen. In a warm climate where the body loses its vigour, the mind must lose some of its force. In a country where nature and custom lead to indulgence, men are apt to be seduced. In countries where they come for the purpose of growing rich, they easily forget to be upright.

PERHAPS, however in a situation so dangerous, the English would have preserved some appearance of moderation and virtue, had they been checked by the restraint of the laws: but there were none to direct or to bind



**B O O K**  
**III.**

them. The regulations made by the company for the carrying on of their commerce, did not apply to this new state of things; and the English government considering the conquest of Bengal but as a help towards increasing numerically the revenue of Great Britain, gave up to the company for 9,000,000 livres (393,750*l.*) per annum, the destiny of twelve millions of people.

HAPPILY for this portion of our fellow-creatures, a revolution of a peaceable nature is at hand. The nation has been struck with such enormous excesses. She has heard the groans of such a number of victims sacrificed to the avarice and passions of some individuals. The parliament is already employed on this great object. Every detail of that administration is under their inspection, every fact will be cleared up, every abuse unveiled, the reasons of them inquired into and removed. What a sight to be presented to Europe! What an example to be left to posterity! The hand of liberty is going to weigh the destiny of a whole people in the scale of justice.

Yes, august legislators, ye will make good our expectations! Ye will restore humanity to her rights, ye will put a curb on avarice, and break the yoke of tyranny. The authority of law, which is not to be shaken, will every where take place of an administration purely arbitrary. At sight of that authority, the monopolist, that tyrant over industry, will for ever disappear. The fetters which private interest has rivetted on commerce ye will make to give way to general advantage.

You will not confine yourselves to this momentary reformation. You will carry your views into futurity; you will calculate the influence of climate, the danger of circumstances, the contagion of example; and, to prevent their effects, you will select persons without connexions, without passions to visit these distant countries,

tries; issuing from the bosom of your metropolis, they are to pass through these provinces in order to hear complaints, rectify abuses, redress injuries; in a word, to maintain and reunite the ties of order throughout the country.

B O O K  
III.

By the execution of this salutary plan, you will, without doubt, have done much towards the happiness of these people: but not enough for your own honour. One prejudice you have still to conquer, and that victory is worthy of yourselves. Venture to put your new subjects into a situation to enjoy the sweets of property. Portion out to them the fields on which they were born: they will learn to cultivate them for themselves. Attached to you by these favours, more than ever they were by fear, they will pay with joy the tribute you impose with moderation. They will instruct their children to adore, and admire your government; and successive generations will transmit down with their inheritance, the sentiments of their happiness mixed with that of their gratitude.

THEN shall the friends of humanity applaud your success; they will incline to hope they may once more see prosperity revive in a country embellished by nature, and no longer ravaged by despotism. It will be pleasing to them to think that the calamities which afflicted those fertile countries are for ever removed from them. They will pardon in you those usurpations, which have been only for the despoiling of tyrants, and they will invite you to new conquests, when they see the influence of your sublime constitution of government extending itself even to the very extremities of Asia, to give birth to liberty, property and happiness.

## B O O K IV.

*Voyages, settlements, wars and trade of the French in the East-Indies.*

B O O K  
IV.

Ancient  
revolutions  
of com-  
merce in  
France.

**T**HE ancient Gauls, almost always at war with each other, had no other intercourse together but such as were suitable to savage nations, whose wants are always few. Their connections abroad were still more circumscribed. Some navigators from Vannes carried earthen-ware to Great Britain, where they bartered it for dogs, slaves, pewter and furs. Such of these articles as they could not dispose of at home, were conveyed to Marseilles, and there exchanged for wines, stuffs and spices, which were brought thither by traders from Italy or Greece.

THIS kind of traffic was not carried on by all the Gauls. It appears from Cæsar's account that the inhabitants of Belgia had prohibited the importation of all foreign commodities, as tending to corrupt their morals. They thought their own soil sufficiently fruitful to answer all their wants. The Celtic and Aquitanian Gauls were not so strict. Their growing passion for foreign commodities, which they could be supplied with from the Mediterranean, but which they could not afford to purchase, induced them to apply to a kind of labour which they had never thought of before: they picked up all the gold dust that was brought down

down with the sand along the stream of several of their rivers. BOOK  
IV.

THOUGH the Romans had neither a turn for trade, nor held it in any kind of estimation, it necessarily increased in Gaul, after they had subdued, and in some measure civilized it. Sea-ports were opened at Arles, Narbonne, Bourdeaux, and other places. Magnificent roads were every where made, the ruins of which we still behold with astonishment. Every navigable river had its company of merchants, to whom considerable privileges were granted. These were called *Nautes*, and were the agents and springs of a general circulation.

THIS rising spirit was checked by the inroads of the Franks and other barbarous nations; nor was it restored to its former activity, even when these robbers had established themselves in their conquests. To their savage fury succeeded an unbounded passion for wealth, to gratify which, they had recourse to every kind of oppression. Every boat that came to a town was to pay so much for entrance, so much for the salute, so much for the bridge, so much for approaching the shore, so much for anchorage, so much for leave to unload, and so much for the store-room. Land carriages were not more favourably treated, and were exposed to the insufferable tyranny of custom-house officers who were dispersed all over the country. These excesses were carried so far, that sometimes the goods brought to market did not fetch enough to pay the preliminary expences. A total discouragement was the necessary consequence of such enormities.

CLOYSTERS soon became the only places where industry prevailed, and manufactures were carried on. The monks were not then corrupted by idleness, intrigue, and debauchery. Useful labours filled up the

B O O K  
IV.

vacancies of an edifying and retired life. The most humble and robust of them shared the toils of agriculture with their servants. Those to whom nature had imparted less strength or more understanding, applied themselves to the cultivation of the forlorn and abandoned arts. All of them in silence and retirement, were engaged in the service of their country, whose substance their successors have incessantly devoured and disturbed its tranquillity.

DAGOBERT roused the spirit of his countrymen in the seventh century. Fairs were opened, to which the Saxons flocked with tin, and lead from England; the Jews with jewels, and gold or silver plate; the Sclavonians with all the metals of the north; traders from Lombardy, Provence and Spain, with the commodities of their respective countries, and those they received from Africa, Egypt and Syria; and merchants of every province in the kingdom, with whatever their soil and their industry afforded. Unfortunately this prosperity was of a short duration; it disappeared under indolent kings, but revived under Charlemagne.

THAT prince, who might without flattery be ranked with the greatest men recorded in history, had he not been sometimes influenced by sanguinary schemes of conquest, and sullied with acts of persecution and tyranny; seemed to follow the footsteps of those first Romans, who made rural labours a relaxation from the fatigues of war. He applied himself to the care of his vast domains, with that closeness and skill which would hardly be expected from the most assiduous man in a private station. All the great men of the state followed his example, and devoted themselves to husbandry, and to those arts which attend, or are immediately connected with it. From that period the French had plenty of their own productions to barter, and  
could

could with great ease make them circulate throughout the immense empire, which was then subject to their dominion. BOOK  
IV.

So flourishing a situation presented a fresh allurements to the Normans to indulge the inclination they had for piracy. Those barbarians, accustomed to seek from plunder that wealth which their soil did not afford, poured out of their inhospitable climate in quest of booty. They fell upon all the sea-coasts, but most eagerly upon those of France, which promised the richest harvest. The ravages they committed, the cruelties they exercised, the flames they kindled for a whole century in those fertile provinces, cannot be remembered without horror. During that fatal period, they were wholly taken up with the thoughts of escaping slavery or death. There was no communication between the nations, and consequently no trade.

In the mean-time the nobles, intrusted with the administration of the provinces, had insensibly made themselves masters of them, and had found means to make their authority hereditary. They had not, indeed, thrown off all dependence on the head of the empire, but retaining the modest appellation of vassals, they were not much less formidable to the state than the king in the neighbourhood of its frontiers. They were confirmed in their usurpations at the memorable æra, when the sceptre was removed from the family of Charlemagne to that of the Capets. From that time there was no more national assembly, no tribunals, no laws, no government. In that fatal confusion the sword usurped the place of justice, and the free citizens were forced to embrace servitude, to purchase the protection of a chief who was able to defend them.

COMMERCE could not possibly thrive under the fetters of slavery, and in the midst of the continual disturbances

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

ances occasioned by the most cruel anarchy. Industry is the child of peace; nothing depresses it so much as servitude. Genius languishes when it is not animated by hope and emulation; and neither of these can subsist where there is no property. Nothing is a stronger recommendation of liberty, or more fully proves the rights of mankind, than the impossibility of working successfully to enrich barbarous masters.

SEVERAL of the kings of France entertained some suspicion of this important truth; they attempted to abridge the power of these petty tyrants, who, by ruining these unfortunate vassals, kept up the calamities of the monarchy. St. Lewis was the first who introduced trade into the system of government. Before his time it was only the work of chance and circumstances. He brought it under the regulation of stated laws, and he himself drew up statutes, which have served as a model for those that have since been enacted.

THESE first steps led the way to measures of greater importance. The old law, which forbade the exportation of all productions of the kingdom, was still in force and agriculture was discouraged by this absurd prohibition. The wise monarch removed these fatal impediments; expecting, not without reason, that a free exportation would restore to the nation those treasures which his imprudent expedition had lavished.

SOME political events seconded these salutary views. Before the reign of St. Lewis, the kings had but few ports on the ocean, and none on the Mediterranean. The northern coasts were divided between the Counts of Flanders and the Dukes of Burgundy, Normandy, and Bretagne; the rest belonged to the English. The southern coasts were possessed by the Counts of Toulouse, and the Kings of Majorca, Arragon, and Castile. By this repartition, the inland provinces had little

or

or no communication with the foreign markets. The union of the county of Toulouse with the crown removed this great obstacle, at least for that part of the French territory.

B O O K  
IV.

PHILIP, the son of S. Lewis, desirous of improving this kind of conquest, endeavoured to draw to Nismes, a city under his jurisdiction, part of the trade carried on at Montpellier which belonged to the king of Arragon. The privileges he granted produced the desired effect; but it was soon found to be an object of little consequence. The Italians supplied the kingdom with spices, perfumes, silks, and all the rich stuffs of the East. The arts had not made such progress in France as to afford their own manufactures in exchange; and the produce of agriculture was not sufficient to defray so many articles of luxury. So dear a consumption could only be supported by ready money, and there was but little in the kingdom, especially since the Crusades, though France was not so poor as most of the other European nations.

PHILIP, surnamed le Bel, was sensible of these truths; he found means to improve agriculture, so as to answer the demands of foreign importations, and these he reduced by establishing new manufactures, and improving the old ones. Under this reign the ministry first undertook to guide the hand of the artist, and to direct his labours. The breadth, the quality, and the dressing of the cloths was fixed; the exportation of wool was prohibited; which the neighbouring nations came to purchase, in order to manufacture it. These were the best measures that could be taken in those times of ignorance.

SINCE that period the arts advanced in their progress in proportion to the decay of feudal tyranny. The French, however, did not begin to form their taste till



**B O O K**  
**IV.**

till the time of their expeditions into Italy. They were dazzled with a thousand new objects that presented themselves at Genoa, Venice, and Florence. The strictness observed by Anne of Bretagne, under the reigns of Charles VIII. and Lewis XII. at first restrained the conquerors from giving full scope to their propensity for imitation; but no sooner had Francis I. called up the women to court, no sooner had Catharine of Medicis crossed the Alps, than the great affected an elegance unknown before, since the first foundation of the monarchy. The whole nation was led by this alluring example of luxury, and the improvement of the manufactures was the natural consequence.

FROM Henry II. to Henry IV. the civil wars, the unhappy divisions of religion, the ignorance of government, the spirit of finance which began to have its influence in the council, the barbarous and devouring avarice of men in business encouraged by the protection they enjoyed; all these several causes retarded the progress of industry, but could never destroy it. It revived with fresh splendour under the frugal administration of Sully. It was almost extinguished under those of Richelieu and Mazarine, both governed by the farmers of the revenue; one wholly taken up with his ambition for empire and his spirit of revenge, the other with intrigue and plunder.

First voyage of the French to the East Indies.

No king of France had ever seriously considered the advantages that might accrue from a trade to India, nor had the emulation of the French been roused by the lustre which other nations derived from it. They consumed more eastern productions than any other nation; they were as favourably situated for fetching them from the first hand; and yet they were content to pay to foreign industry what their own might as well have shared.

SOME

SOME merchants of Rouen had ventured, indeed, in 1535, upon a small armament; but Genonville, who commanded the expedition, met with violent storms at the Cape of Good Hope, was cast upon unknown lands, and with much difficulty got back to Europe.

IN 1601 a society formed in Bretagne fitted out two ships, to endeavour to get a share, if possible, of the riches of the East, which the Portuguese, the English, and the Dutch, were contending for. Pyrard, who commanded these ships, arrived at the Maldivia islands, and did not return to his own country till after an unfortunate navigation of ten years.

A NEW company, headed by one Girard, a native of Flanders, fitted out some ships from Normandy for the island of Java, in 1616 and 1619. They returned with cargoes sufficient to defray the adventurers, but not enough to encourage them to any fresh undertakings.

CAPTAIN Reginon, upon the expiration of this fruitless grant in 1633, prevailed upon some merchants of Dieppe two years after, to enter upon a track which might be productive of great riches, if properly pursued. Fortune baffled the endeavours of the new adventurers. The only advantage gained by these repeated expeditions was the high opinion that was conceived of the island of Madagascar, discovered by the Portuguese in 1506.

THIS gave rise to a company in 1642, which was to make a considerable settlement on that island, to secure to their ships the necessary helps for sailing further.

UPON a survey of the island, it was found to be situated along the eastern coast of Africa; that it was three hundred and thirty-six leagues long, and one hundred and twenty broad in the widest part, and about eight hundred in circumference. By whatever wind a ship is brought there, nothing but dreary and barren sands are

Settlement  
of the  
French at  
Madagascar. Description  
of that island.

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

are to be seen; but at a greater distance from the shore the soil is sometimes black, sometimes reddish, mostly fruitful, and every where watered by a great number of rivers. Vegetation is here very quick, and requires little labour; nature produces rice, potatoes, bananas, pine-apples, indigo, hemp, cotton, silk, sugar, palm-trees, cocoa-trees, orange-trees, gum-trees, and woods fit for building, and for every art. The pastures are excellent, and are covered with oxen of the largest kind, and sheep exactly resembling those of Barbary.

THE island of Madagascar is divided into a great many provinces; each of them has a chief called Dian, which answers to the word Lord. All the ensigns of his dignity are his slaves and his flocks. His place is hereditary, but, in default of heirs, it devolves upon the oldest of his delegates. His council is composed of some of such magistrates as he makes choice of, and the rest, which is the greatest number, reside in the villages to preserve peace, and administer justice. He can neither declare war without their consent, nor support it without the voluntary contributions and actual assistance of his people.

SUCH is the general form of government in the island; the province of Anossi alone differs from it, having been possessed by the Arabs for several centuries past. Though few in number, they soon became the strongest, and divided the country into twenty-two districts, each of which had a master of their own nation, to whom they gave the name of Boandrian, or descendant of Abraham. These petty sovereigns are continually at war with each other, but never fail to unite against the other princes of Madagascar, who hold them in detestation, as being foreigners and usurpers. This is of all the island that part which is the most destitute of morals, activity, industry and bravery, because it is the only one where there is no liberty.

SOME

SOME of the French settled at Fort Dauphin in the country of Anossi, have lately in their excursions discovered a new race of men, called Kimos, the tallest of whom are not above four feet high. They inhabit about forty villages in the interior parts, on the north-west side of the island. They are said to be more mischievous than their neighbours, and, what appears very extraordinary, not so cowardly. They never stir out of their mountains, nor suffer any one to penetrate into them.

THE other inhabitants of Madagascar are tall, nimble, and of a haughty countenance. They will mask a deep design, or a strong passion under a smiling face, as artfully as any knave in a civilized nation. They are ignorant of the origin of their laws, but observe them with great uniformity. The old men, who are intrusted with the care of enforcing them, never take any fee for the trial of a criminal, and think themselves sufficiently rewarded if they can rid their country of a malefactor. In civil causes the parties bring them so many head of cattle, in proportion to the importance of the affair.

THE offence that is most frequently brought before these magistrates is theft. Though it is customary to bore the hand of the thief, these people have a universal propensity to robbery. The inhabitants, ever afraid for their property, live in continual mistrust of each other. For their mutual security they seal their engagements with the most solemn oaths. They are so accustomed to these formalities, that they practise them even when they treat with Europeans. On these important occasions, he who represents the nation puts into a vessel filled with brandy, gold, silver, gun-flint, if possible some of the dust of the tomb of his ancestors, and frequently blood, which, after the manner of the ancient Scythians, the parties draw out of their arms by incision. During these preparatives, their weapons are laid on the ground in the form of a cross. Soon after, both parties

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

ties pick them up, and hold them with the point in the cup, constantly stirring the contents till the agreement is made. Then the contracting parties, the witnesses, and the spectators, all drink out of the cup till it is empty, after which they embrace and withdraw.

RELIGIOUS principles are no check upon the people of Madagascar. Though in general they admit the prevailing doctrine of the two principles, they have but a confused notion of it, nor have they any worship whatever. Notwithstanding this indifference, they are addicted to every kind of superstition. In their uncouth notions of astrology they see nothing, nor imagine any thing, but what they connect with futurity.

THE most dangerous of all their prejudices is, doubtless, the distinction between lucky and unlucky days. They inhumanly put to death all children born under the unlucky day. This destructive principle is one cause among many others which prevents the population of this country.

THOSE who do not fall victims to this cruel superstition are circumcised at the age of two years, or twenty-four moons, as they express it. The ceremony is performed with all possible solemnity. While the operation is performing, one of the child's parents holds a cup under the sacred knife; and the most distinguished of the uncles swallows the part of the prepuce that has been cut off. The rest of the family, and the by-standers, dip a finger into the blood, and taste it. These singular mysteries are concluded with festivity, dancing, and pleasures of all kinds.

THE people of Madagascar never receive any kind of education, and marry as soon as they attain to the state of manhood. A man of the lower sort, even a slave, takes as many wives as he pleases, or as many as he can find. The better sort have but one lawful wife, but, in order to vary their pleasures, they keep concubines. They all put  
away

away their wives whenever they dislike them, and both parties are at full liberty to marry again, or to remain single. BOOK  
IV.

THE people of Madagascar lead an idle and dissolute life, and seldom arrive at old age. An unwholesome climate, bad food, constant debauchery, the want of proper assistance, together with other causes, concur to hasten their end. When a man dies, the whole neighbourhood is apprized of it by lamentations, expressed in an incessant mournful singing. The relations meet, and partake of the most profuse entertainments, whilst the most affectionate of the slaves keeps asking the deceased, "What could induce him to quit all that was dear to him." After eight days the corpse is buried with his choicest jewels; nor is he then forgotten. The respect for ancestors is incredible in those barbarous regions. It is no uncommon thing to see men of all ages go and weep over the tombs of their fathers, and ask their advice in the most important occurrences of life.

THE common food of the inhabitants of Madagascar is rice, which multiplies a hundred fold, in spite of the worst of culture. Their drink is a kind of mead, and wine made with sugar and banana. Their greatest finery is a piece of cloth over their shoulders, and another round their waist.

MADAGASCAR had been visited by the Portuguese, the Dutch, and the English, who had despised it, finding none of those objects which brought them to the East. The French, who seemed to have no determinate object in view, spent that capital they had reserved for the purpose of trade, in subduing the island. They found some gold scattered in one corner of the island, and directly concluded there must be gold mines, never suspecting that it might have been brought thither by the Arabs. They were punished for their greediness by the loss of their whole stock. At the expiration of their grant they had nothing left but a few tenements,

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

situated in five or six different parts of the coast built of boards covered with leaves, surrounded with stakes, and decorated with the pompous name of forts, because they mounted a few bad pieces of cannon. Their defenders were reduced to about a hundred robbers, who, by their cruelties, daily increased the hatred conceived against their nation. The whole of their conquests amounted to a few small districts, forsaken by the natives, and some few larger cantons, from whence they forcibly extorted a tribute of provisions.

MARSHAL de la Meilleraie seized upon these ruins, and conceived the project of restoring this ill-conducted undertaking for his own private emolument. His success was so indifferent, that his property sold but for 20,000 livres (875*l.*) which was full as much as it was worth.

At last, in 1664, Colbert presented to Lewis XIV. a plan for an East India company. Agriculture was then so flourishing in France, and industry so brisk, that this branch of commerce seemed to be needless. The minister was of a different opinion; he foresaw that the other European nations would follow his example, and set up manufactures of their own, and would have their Eastern connections besides. This was considered as a very deep thought, and an East India Company was accordingly created, vested with all the privileges enjoyed by the Dutch East India Company. They even went further. Colbert, considering that in order to carry on great commercial undertakings there must always be a certain confidence in republics, which cannot be expected in monarchies, had recourse to every expedient that could produce it.

THE charter was granted for fifty years, that the company might be encouraged to form great settlements, with a prospect of reaping the fruits of them.

ALL

ALL foreigners advancing 20,000 livres, (875*l.*) were to be deemed Frenchmen, without being naturalized. BOOK  
IV.

ON the like terms, officers, whatever corps they belonged to, were excused from residence, without forfeiting the rights of their post, or their pay.

WHATEVER was wanted for the building, arming or victualling of the ships, was to be entered duty free, and be excused all duties to the admiralty.

THE government engaged to pay fifty livres (2*l.* 3*s.* 9*d.*) per ton for all goods exported from France to India, and seventy-five livres (3*l.* 5*s.* 7*d.*  $\frac{1}{2}$ ) for every ton imported from thence.

THE government entered into engagements to convoy their outward and homeward bound ships, with as strong a squadron as exigencies should require.

THE reigning passion of the nation was made subservient to this establishment. Special honours and hereditary titles were promised to such as should distinguish themselves in the service of the company.

As trade was yet in its infancy in France, and was unable to furnish the fifteen millions (above 656,200*l.*) that were to constitute the stock of the new society, the ministry engaged to lend as far as three millions. (131,250*l.*) The nobles, the magistrates, all orders of men were invited to share the rest. The nation, proud to please their king, who had not yet crushed them with the weight of his false greatness, came into the proposal with great eagerness.

THE persisting in the resolution of forming a settlement at Madagascar deprived the company of the benefit of the first voyage. They were at length obliged to relinquish that island, whose savage and unconquerable inhabitants could not be reconciled either to the commodities, the worship, or the manners of Europe.



**B O O K**  
**IV.**

At that period it was, that the company's ships began to sail directly to India. By the intrigues of Marcara, a native of Ispahan, but in the French service, they obtained leave to establish factories on several places on the coast of the peninsula. They even attempted to secure a share of the Japan trade. Colbert offered to send none but protestants, but by the artifices of the Dutch, the French were denied an entrance into that empire, as the English had been before.

The French make Surat the center of their trade. Account of this famous city, and of the province of Guzarat, in which it is situated.

SURAT had been pitched upon for the center of all the business which the company was to carry on in those parts. It was from that capital of Guzarat that all orders were to be issued out for the subaltern settlements. There all goods destined for Europe were to be brought.

GUZARAT forms a peninsula between the Indus and Malabar. It is about one hundred and sixty miles in length, and much the same in breadth. It is separated from the kingdom of Agra by the mountains of Marva. It rains there incessantly from June to September; at all other times, scarce a cloud is to be seen. The burning heat of the sun, however, is happily tempered by refreshing dews, which cool the air and moisten the ground. The richness of a soil abounding in corn, rice, sugar, cotton, cattle, game, fruits of all kinds in an uninterrupted succession, added to variety of important manufactures, was sufficient for the happiness of the inhabitants; when, in the beginning of the eighth century, strangers came and introduced new branches of industry among them.

SOME Persians, who were persecuted for their opinions by the Saracens their conquerors, took refuge in the isle of Ormus, whence they sailed some time after for India, and landed at Diu. In this asylum they continued but nineteen years, and then embarked again.

They

They were driven by the winds upon a pleasant shore between Daman and Bacaim. The prince who governed that country, consented to admit them among his subjects, on condition that they should reveal the mysteries of their belief, that they should lay down their arms, that they should speak the Indian language, that their women should go abroad unveiled, and that they should celebrate their nuptials at the close of the evening, according to the custom of the country. As these stipulations contained nothing repugnant to their religious notions, the people who fled there for protection agreed to them. A piece of ground was allotted them, where they built a town, whence they soon spread farther up the country.

B O O K  
IV.

A HAPPY necessity had made them contract a habit of labour, so that both the lands and the manufactures prospered in their hands. They were so wise as not to interfere with government or war, and enjoyed profound tranquillity in the midst of all the revolutions that happened from time to time. In consequence of this circumspection, and of the affluence in which they lived, they multiplied very fast. They always remained a separate people, distinguished by the name of Parsis, never intermarrying with the Indians, and adhering to the principles which had occasioned their banishment. Their tenets were those of Zoroaster, somewhat altered by time, ignorance, and the rapaciousness of the priests.

THE prosperity of Guzarat, partly owing to the exiled Persians, excited the ambition of two formidable powers. Whilst the Portuguese annoyed it by the sea side by the ravages they committed, by the victories they gained, and by the conquest of Diu justly esteemed the bulwark of the kingdom; the Moguls, already masters of the north of India, and eager to advance towards the southern parts where trade and riches were to be found, threatened it from the continent.

**BOOK**  
**IV.**

**BADUR**, a Patan by birth, who then reigned over Guzarat, saw how impossible it would be for him at once to withstand two such enemies, both bent upon his destruction. He thought he had less to fear from a people whose forces were parted from their dominions by immense seas, than from a nation firmly settled on the frontiers of his provinces. This consideration made him determine to be friends with the Portuguese. The concessions he made them even induced them to join with him against Akebar, whose activity and courage they dreaded little less than himself.

THIS alliance disconcerted men who thought they had only Indians to deal with. They could not think of engaging with Europeans, who were reputed invincible. The natives, not yet recovered from the consternation into which these conquerors had thrown them, represented them to the Mogul soldiers, as men come down from heaven, or risen from the waters, of a species infinitely superior to the Asiatics, and far surpassing them in valour, genius and knowledge. The army seized with a panic, was urging the generals to march back to Delhi, when Akebar, convinced that a prince who undertakes a great conquest must command his own troops, hastened to his camp. He did not hesitate to promise his troops that they should beat a people enervated by luxury, riches, pleasures, and the heat of the climate; and that the glory of purging Asia of that handful of banditti was reserved for them. The army, in fresh spirits, applauded the emperor and marched on with confidence. They soon came to an engagement; the Portuguese, ill seconded by their allies, were surrounded and cut to pieces. Badur fled, and disappeared for ever. All the cities of Guzarat hastened to open their gates to the conqueror. This fine kingdom in 1565, became a province of that vast empire which was soon to invade all Indostan.

UNDER

UNDER the Mogul government, which was then in its full glory, Guzarat enjoyed more tranquillity than before. The manufactures were multiplied at Cambaya, Amabadat, Broitschia, and several other places. New ones were set up in those towns which were yet unacquainted with this industry. The culture of lands was improved, and their productions increased. That part of Malabar which borders upon Guzarat, long since tired of the impositions of the Portuguese, brought their linen cloths thither. The goods manufactured on the banks of the Indus were likewise sent to this country, as they could not conveniently be conveyed down the river, as the stream is too rapid above to land them, and below, the waters discharge into the sea by so many streams, that they are in a manner lost in the sands.

ALL these riches centered at Surat, which stands on the river Tapta, a few miles from the ocean. This city was indebted for this advantage to a fort, which protected the merchants, and to its harbour, the best on that coast, though not an excellent one. The Moguls, who had then no other maritime town, drew all their articles of luxury from thence, and the Europeans who had not yet any of the great settlements they have since made at Bengal and on the coast of Coromandel, bought most of their Indian commodities at that place. They were all collected there, as the people of Surat had taken care to procure a navy superior to that of their neighbours.

THEIR ships, which lasted for ages, were for the most part of a thousand or twelve hundred tons burthen. They were built of a very strong wood called Teak. Far from launching them with a costly apparatus and complicated engines, they let in the tide into the dock, and it set them afloat. The cordage was made of the bark of the cocoa-tree; they were rough-

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

er and less pliable than ours, but at least as solid. Their cotton sails were neither so strong nor so lasting as our hempen ones, but more pliable and less apt to split. Instead of pitch, they made use of the gum of a tree called Damar, which is, perhaps, better. The skill of their officers, though but moderate, was sufficient for those seas and those seasons in which they sailed. As to their sailors, called Lascars, the Europeans have found them good ones for their voyages from one part of India to another. They have even been employed successfully in bringing home into our stormy latitudes such ships as had lost their crew.

So many united advantages had brought to Surat a great concourse of Moguls, Indians, Persians, Arabs, Armenians, Jews and Europeans. We hardly suspected that there was such a thing as commercial principles, and they were already known and practised in this part of Asia. The value of money was very low, and it was easily obtained; and bills of exchange might be had for every market in India. Insurances for the most distant navigations were much in vogue. Such was the honesty of these traders, that bags of money ticketed and sealed by the bankers would circulate for years, without ever being counted or weighed. Fortunes were proportionable to the ease with which they were to be acquired by industry. Those of five or six millions (about 240,000*l.* on an average.) were not uncommon, and some were even more considerable.

THESE fortunes were mostly possessed by the Banians, a set of traders who were noted for their honesty. A few moments were enough for them to transact the most important business. In the most intricate discussions, they preserved an evenness of temper and a politeness which can hardly be conceived.

THEIR children, who assisted at all bargains, were early trained up to this gentleness of manners. Scarce  
 had

had they a dawning of reason, but they were initiated into all the mysteries of trade. It was a common thing to see a child of ten or twelve years old, able to supply his father's place. What a contrast, what a distance between this and the education of our children; and yet, what a difference between the attainments of the Indians, and the progress of our knowledge!

B O O K  
IV.

SUCH of the Banians as had Abyssinian slaves, and very few of these good natured men had any, treated them with such humanity as must appear very singular to us. They brought them up as if they had been of their own family, trained them to business, advanced them money to enable them to trade for themselves, and not only suffered them to enjoy the profits, but even allowed them to dispose of them in favour of their descendents if they had any.

THE expences of the Banians were not proportioned to their fortunes. As they were restrained by the principles of their religion from eating meat or drinking strong liquors, they lived upon fruits, and a few plain dishes. They never departed from this frugality but upon the settlement of their children. On this single occasion, no cost was spared for the entertainment, or for the music, dancing and fireworks. Their whole ambition was to tell how much the wedding had cost. Sometimes it amounted to a hundred thousand crowns. (13,125*l.*)

THEIR very women had a taste for this simplicity of manners. All their glory consisted in pleasing their husbands. Perhaps, the great veneration in which they held the nuptial tie arose from the custom of engaging them in their earliest infancy. That sentiment was in their opinion the most sacred part of religion. Never did they allow themselves the least conversation with strangers. Less reserve would not have satisfied their husbands, who could not hear, without astonishment,

B O O K  
IV.

ment, of the familiarity that prevailed between the two sexes in Europe. When they were told that this freedom was attended with no ill consequence, they were not convinced, but shook their heads, and answered by one of their proverbs, which signifies, *That if you bring butter too near the fire, you can hardly keep it from melting.*

EXCEPTING the Moguls, who were in possession of all places under the government, who were very extravagant in their stables, their baths and their seraglios, and ran into every kind of indulgence to drown the sense of the despotism under which they lived, all the merchants of Surat conformed to the frugality of the Bani-ans, as far as the difference of religion would admit. Their greatest expence was the decorating of their houses.

THESE were contrived in the best manner to guard against the heat of the climate. The outside walls were covered with beautiful wainscoting, and the inside ones inlaid with porcelain. The panes of their windows were of shell or mother of pearl, which tempered the glare of the sun without too much obstructing the light. The apartments were prettily disposed and furnished, suitably to the customs of the country; and in one of the rooms was a fountain of water, spouting up from a marble basin, whose gentle murmurs invited the company to soft slumbers.

DURING their repose, the common indulgence of the inhabitants of Surat was to stretch themselves upon a sofa, where they were rubbed by men of singular dexterity, or rather kneaded like dough. The necessity of promoting the circulation of the fluids, too often retarded by the heat of the climate, first suggested the notion of this operation, which affords them an infinite variety of delightful sensations. They fall into such a tender state of langour, that they sometimes almost faint away. This custom was said to be brought to the Indies from China; and some epigrams of Mar-  
tial

tial and declamations of Seneca, seem to hint that it was not unknown to the Romans at the time when they refined upon every pleasure, as the tyrants who enslaved those masters of the world afterwards refined upon every torture.

THEY had another species of pleasure at Surat, which, perhaps, our effeminacy would have envied them still more, and this was their female dancers whom the Europeans call Balliaderes, a name given them by the Portuguese.

NUMBERS of these are collected together in seminaries of pleasure. The better sort of these societies are devoted to the richest and most frequented Pagodas. Their destination is to dance in the temples on their great festivals, and to be subservient to the pleasures of the Bramins. These priests, who have not taken the artful and deceitful vow of renouncing all, that they may the more freely partake of every enjoyment, chuse rather to have women of their own, than at once to defile celibacy and wedlock. They do not invade another man's right by adultery, but are jealous of the dancers, whose worship and vows they share with the gods; but they never suffer them without reluctance to contribute to the amusement of kings and great men.

THE rise of this singular institution is not known. Probably, one Bramin who had a concubine or a wife, associated with another Bramin, who had likewise his concubine or his wife; and in process of time, the mixture of so many Bramins and women occasioned such confusion, that the women came to be common to all those priests. Let but a number of single persons of both sexes be collected into one cloyster, and a commonality of men and women will soon take place.

THIS freedom, we may suppose, put an end to jealousy. The women were not uneasy at the increase of  
their



**B O O K**  
**IV.**

numbers, nor the Bramins at that of their order. It was rather a new conquest than a rivalry.

WE may likewise suppose, that in order to palliate this licentiousness in the eyes of the people, all those women were consecrated to the service of the altars. It is no less probable that the people readily consented to this kind of superstition, as it insured the safety of their wives and daughters, by confining the lawless desires of the monks to one particular spot.

THE contrivance of stamping a sacred character upon these courtezans, might make parents the more willing to part with their beautiful daughters, and to consent that they should follow their calling, and devote themselves to these seminaries, from whence the superannuated women might return to society without disgrace: for there is no crime that may not be sanctified by the intervention of the gods. The most sacred truths may be perverted by wicked men to the worst of purposes. The very notion of a Supreme Being may, in the hands of a crafty priest, be made subversive of all morality. He will affirm, not that such a thing is pleasing to the gods, because it is good; but that such a thing is good; because it is pleasing to the gods.

THE Bramins wanted only to gain another point in order to complete this institution, which was to persuade the people that it was decent, holy, and pleasing to all the gods, to marry a balladiere, in preference to all other women, and thereby induce them to solicit the relics of their debaucheries as a special favour.

IN every city there are other companies, not so choice as the former, for the amusement of the rich. The Moors and Gentiles may equally procure a sight of these dancers at their country houses, or in their public assemblies. There are even strolling companies of them, conducted by old women, who having been themselves trained up these seminaries, are promoted in time to the direction of them.

THESE

**T**HERE handsome girls have the shocking custom of being always followed by an old deformed musician, perhaps, as a foil, whose employment is to beat time with an instrument of brass, which we have lately borrowed of the Turks, to add to our military music, and which in the Indies is called a tam. The man who holds it, is continually repeating that word with such vehemence, that by degrees he works himself up into dreadful convulsions, whilst the balladieres, intoxicated with the desire of pleasing, and the sweets with which they are perfumed, at length lose their senses.

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

**T**HEIR dances are, in general, love pantomimes: the plan, the design, the attitudes, the time, the airs, the cadence, all is expressive of this passion, with all its raptures and extravagancies.

**E**VERY thing conspires to the amazing success of these voluptuous women: the art and richness of their attire, as well as their ingenuity in setting off their beauty. Their long black hair falling over their shoulders, or braided and turned up, is loaded with diamonds and stuck with flowers. Their necklaces and bracelets are enriched with precious stones. Even their nose jewels, that ornament which shocks us at first sight, is wonderfully pleasing; sets off all the other ornaments by the charms of symmetry, and has an effect which cannot be explained, but is felt in time.

**N**OTHING can equal the care they take to preserve their breasts as one of the most striking marks of their beauty. To prevent them from growing large or ill-shaped, they inclose them in two cases made of an exceeding light wood which are joined together, and buckled behind. These cases are so smooth and so supple, that they give way to the various attitudes of the body, without being flattened, and without injuring the delicacy of the skin. The outside of these cases is covered with

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

a leaf of gold, studded with diamonds. This is certainly the most refined kind of ornament, and the best calculated to preserve beauty. They take off, and put it on again with singular facility. This covering does not prevent one from seeing the palpitations, sighings and tender emotions of the breast: it conceals nothing that can contribute to excite desire.

MOST of these dancers imagine it an addition to the beauty of their complexion, and the impression of their looks, to trace a black circle round their eyes with a hair bodkin dipped in the powder of antimony. This borrowed beauty, celebrated by all the eastern poets, appeared very odd at first to the Europeans, but custom has reconciled them to it.

This art of pleasing is the whole life, the whole employment, the whole felicity of the balladieres. It is hard to resist their seducing manners. They even obtain a preference over those beauties of Cassimere, which fill the seraglios of Indostan, as the fair Georgians and Circassians fill those of Ispahan and Constantinople. The modesty, or rather the reserve of proud slaves, sequestered from the society of men, cannot balance the arts of these expert courtezans.

THEY were no where so much in repute as at Surat, the richest, and most populous city in India. It began to decline in 1664. It was sacked by the famous Sevagi, who carried off twenty-five or thirty millions. (About 1,200,000*l.* on an average.) The plunder would have been infinitely greater, had not the English and Dutch escaped the public disaster, by the care they had taken to fortify their factories, and had not the most valuable effects been lodged in the castle, which was out of the reach of attack. This loss made the inhabitants more cautious. They surrounded the city with walls, to prevent the like disaster. The mischief was repaired,

repaired, when the English, in 1686, were so unwarrantably and shamefully greedy, as to stop all the ships that were sending out from Surat to the several seas. This piracy, which lasted three years, deprived this famous mart of almost every branch of trade that was not its own peculiar property. The town was nearly reduced to its own natural riches.

OTHER pirates have since infested those latitudes, and from time to time disturbed the operations of Surat. Their very caravans, that carried their merchandises to Agra, to Delhi, and all over the empire, were not respected by the subjects of the independent rajas, which they met with on the several roads. They had formerly had recourse to a strange contrivance for the security of their caravans, which was, to put them under the protection of a woman or a child of sacred race, held such by the nations they dreaded. When those banditti approached to plunder the caravans, the guardian threatened to make away with herself if they persisted in their resolution; and actually did so if they did not yield to her remonstrances. Those profligate men, who had not been restrained out of respect for sacred blood, were excommunicated, degraded, and cast out of their tribe. The dread of these severe punishments was sometimes a check upon avarice; but since all has been in combustion in Indostan, no consideration can allay the thirst of gold.

NOTWITHSTANDING all these misfortunes Surat is still a great trading city. The produce of the numberless manufactures all over Guzarat is deposited in her warehouses. A great part is carried into the inland countries; the rest is conveyed to all parts of the globe by an uninterrupted navigation. The most common

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

mong goods are dutties, a kind of coarse unbleached cloth, worn in Persia, Arabia, Abyssinia, and the eastern coast of Africa, and blue linens, which are disposed of in the same manner; and are likewise sold to the English and Dutch for their Guinea trade.

THE blue and white checks of Cambaya, which are worn for mantles in Arabia and Turkey: some are coarse and some fine, and some even mixed with gold for the wear of the rich.

THE white linens of Broitschia, so well known by the name of Bafras. As they are extremely fine, they make summer castans for the Turks and Persians. The sort of muslin, with a gold stripe at each end, with which they make their turbans, is manufactured at the same place.

THE printed linens of Amadabat; whose colours are as bright, as fine and as durable as those of Coromandel. They are worn in Persia, in Turkey, and in Europe. The rich people of Java, Sumatra and the Molucca islands make pagnes and coverlids of these chintzes.

THE gauzes of Bairapour; the blue ones are worn by the common people in Persia and Turkey, for their summer cloathing, and the red ones by the better sort. The Jews, who are not allowed by the Porte to wear white, make their turbans with these gauzes.

MIXED stuffs of silk and cotton, plain, striped, some with sattin stripes, some mixed with gold and silver. If they were not so dear, we should like them even in Europe for the brightness of their colours, and the fine execution of the flowers, though their patterns are so indifferent. They soon wear out; but this is of no consequence in the seraglios of Turkey and Persia, where the consumption of them is made.

SOME

SOME are all silk, called tapis. These are pagnes of several colours, much esteemed in the eastern parts of India. Many more would be wove, were they not under a necessity of using foreign materials, which enhances the price too much. BOOK  
IV.

SHAULE, very light, warm and fine cloths, made of the wool of Cassimere. They are died of different colours, striped and flowered. They are worn for a winter dress in Turkey, Persia, and the more temperate parts of India. With this precious wool they weave turbans, that are ell wide, and a little more than three ells long, which sell from 2400 to 3600 livres. (about 130*l.* on an average.) Though it is sometimes manufactured at Surat, the finest works of this kind are made at Cassimere.

BESIDES the prodigious quantity of cotton made use of in the manufactures of Surat, seven or eight thousand bales at least are annually sent to Bengal. Much more is sent to China, Persia and Arabia when the crops are very plentiful. If they are moderate, the overplus is carried down the Ganges, where it always fetches a better price.

THOUGH Surat receives in exchange for her exports, porcelain from China, silk from Bengal and Persia; masts and pepper from Malabar; gums, dates, dried fruits, copper and pearls from Persia; perfumes and slaves from Arabia; great quantities of spices from the Dutch; iron, lead, cloth, cochineal, and some hard wares from the English; the balance is so much in her favour, as to bring in yearly twenty-five or twenty-six millions of livres (on an average about 1,116,000*l.*) in ready money. The profit would be much greater, if the source of the riches of the court of Delhi was not turned away.

HOWEVER, this balance could never again rise to  
VOL. I. F f what

BOOK

IV.



what it was when the French settled at Surat in 1668. Their leader was one Caron. He was a merchant of French extraction, who was grown old in the service of the Dutch company. Hamilton says, that this able man, who had ingratiated himself with the emperor of Japan, had obtained leave to build a house for his masters, on the island where the factory stood which was under his direction. This building proved to be a castle. The natives, who knew nothing of fortification, did not entertain any suspicion of it. They surprized some pieces of cannon that were sending from Batavia, and informed the court of what was going forward. Caron was ordered to repair to Jeddo, to give an account of his conduct. As he had nothing reasonable to allege in his vindication, he was treated with great severity and contempt. They plucked off his beard by the roots, put him on a fool's cap and coat, and in this trim exposed him to the insults of the populace, and he was banished from the empire. The reception he met with at Java gave him a disgust against the interests he had espoused; and actuated by revenge he went over to the French, and became their agent.

Attack of  
the French  
upon the  
islands of  
Ceylon  
and St.  
Thomas.  
Their set-  
tlement at  
Pondi-  
cherry.

SURAT, where they had fixed him, did not answer his notion of a chief settlement. He disliked the situation; he lamented his being obliged to purchase his safety by submissions; he foresaw it would be a disadvantage to carry on trade in competition with richer nations, who knew more, and were held in greater esteem than themselves. He wished to find an independent port in the center of India, or in some of the spice islands, without which he thought it impossible for any company to support itself. The Bay of Trinquinale in the island of Ceylon, appeared to him to unite all these advantages, and he accordingly sailed for that place with a powerful squadron, which had been sent him

him from Europe under the command of La Haye, and which was to act under his direction. They believed, or feigned to believe, that they might settle there without encroaching upon the rights of the Dutch, whose property had never been acknowledged by the sovereign of the island, with whom they had entered into a treaty.

B O O K  
IV.  


ALL that they alledged might indeed be true; but the event did not answer their expectation. They divulged a project which they ought to have kept a profound secret; they executed slowly an expedition which ought to have been effected at once; they were intimidated by a fleet which was not in a condition to fight, and which could not, possibly, have received orders to hazard an engagement. The greater part of the ships crews and land forces, perished with want and sickness; some men were left in a small fort they had erected, where they were soon compelled to surrender. With the remainder they went to seek for provisions on the coast of Coromandel, but finding none either at the Danish settlement of Tranquebar or any where else, in a fit of despair they went and attacked St. Thomas, where they were informed there was great plenty.

THIS town, which had long been a flourishing one, was built by the Portuguese above a hundred years before. The king of Golconda having conquered the Carnatic, could not suffer so important a place to remain in foreign hands; he sent his generals to attack it in 1662, and they made themselves masters of it. The fortifications, though considerable and in good repair, did not stop the progress of the French, who took them by storm in 1672. They were soon invested, and were forced to surrender two years after; because the Dutch, who were at war with Lewis XIV. joined with the Indians to expel them.



**BOOK**  
**IV.**

Settlement  
of the  
French at  
Siam.  
Their de-  
signs on  
Tonquin  
and Co-  
chinchina.

THIS last event would have entirely ruined the enterprize, after all the expence the government had been at to support the company, had not Martin been one of the merchants sent on board La Haye's squadron. He collected the remains of the two colonies of Ceylon and St. Thomas, and with them he peopled the little town of Pondicherry, which had been lately ceded to him, and which was rising to a city, when the company conceived the fairest hopes of a new settlement which they had now an opportunity of making in India.

SOME priests belonging to the foreign missions had preached the gospel at Siam. They had gained the love of the people by their doctrine and by their behaviour. Plain, good-natured, and humane men, without intrigue or avarice, they gave no jealousy to the government nor to the people; they had inspired them with respect and love for the French in general, and in particular for Lewis XIV.

A GREEK, of a restless and ambitious spirit, named Constantine Faulkon, in his travels to Siam, had been seen by the prince, who was so much pleased with him, that in a short time he raised him to the post of prime minister, or barcalon, an office which nearly answers to our ancient maires of the palace.

FAULKON governed both the people and the king with despotic sway. The prince was a weak valetudinarian, and had no issue. His minister conceived a project to succeed him; possibly to dethrone him. It is well known that these attempts are as easy and as frequent in despotic governments, as they are difficult and uncommon in countries where the prince governs by the rules of justice; where the principles and measure of his authority are founded on fundamental and immutable laws, which are under the guardianship of numerous bodies of able magistrates. There the enemies  
of

of the sovereign shew that they are enemies of the state ; B O O K  
IV.  
there they find themselves soon stopped in their projects by all the forces of the nation ; because, by rising up against the head, they rise up against the laws, which are the standing and immutable will of the nation.

FAULKON contrived to make the French subservient to his scheme, as some ambitious men had formerly made use of a guard of six hundred Japanese, who had more than once disposed of the crown of Siam. He sent ambassadors into France in 1684 to make a tender of his master's alliance, and to offer sea ports to the French merchants, and to ask for ships and troops.

THE ostentatious vanity of Lewis XIV. took advantage of this embassy. The flatterers of that prince, who was too much extolled, though he deserved commendation, persuaded him that his fame abroad throughout the whole world, entitled him to the homage of the East. He did not content himself with the enjoyment of these vain honours ; he endeavoured to improve the dispositions of the king of Siam, to the benefit of the India Company, and still more of the missionaries. He sent out a squadron with more Jesuits than traders ; and in the treaty which was concluded between the two kings, the French ambassadors, directed by the Jesuit Tachard, attended much more to the concerns of religion than to those of commerce.

THE company still entertained great hopes of the settlement at Siam, and these hopes were not ill grounded.

THAT kingdom, though it is divided by a ridge of mountains that runs on till it meets with the rocks of Tartary, is so prodigiously fruitful, that many of the cultivated lands yield two hundred to one. Some will even bear plentiful crops spontaneously. That grain, left to the care of nature, sows itself again, and grows

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

the next year, without any other culture than what the waters of the river afford, which flows all across the kingdom.

THERE is, perhaps, no country where fruits grow in such plenty and variety, or are so wholesome, as in this delightful spot. Some are peculiar to the country, and others are much higher flavoured than any where else.

THE earth, always covered with these ever-growing treasures, conceals, under a very thin surface, mines of gold, copper, loadstone, iron, lead, and calin, that species of tin which is so highly esteemed all over Asia.

ALL these advantages are rendered useless by the most horrid despotism. A prince corrupted by his very power, oppresses his people by his caprices, whilst he is indulging in his seraglio, or suffers them to be oppressed by his indolence. At Siam there are none but slaves, and no subjects. The men are divided into three classes: the first serve as a guard to the monarch, till his lands, and work at different trades in his palace. The second are appointed to public labours, and to the defence of the state. The last are magistrates, ministers, the principal officers of the kingdom. No Siamese is advanced to any eminent post, but he is allowed a certain number of men who are at his disposal; so that the salaries annexed to great officers are well paid at the court of Siam, because they are not paid in money, but in men, who cost the prince nothing. These unfortunate people are registered at the age of sixteen. On the first summons every one must repair to the post assigned him, upon pain of being put in irons, or condemned to the bastinado.

IN a country where all the men must work for the government for six months in the year, without being paid or subsisted, and the other six to earn a subsistence for the

the whole year ; in such a country, the very lands must feel the effects of tyranny, and consequently there is no property. Those delicious fruits that enrich the gardens of the monarch and the grandees, are not suffered to ripen in those of private men. If the soldiers who are sent out to examine the orchards, discover some choice tree, they never fail to mark it for the tyrant's table, or those of his ministers. The owner becomes the guardian of it, and is answerable for the fruit, under very severe penalties.

THE men are not only slaves to men but to the very beasts. The king of Siam keeps a great number of elephants. Those of his palace are waited upon, and treated with extraordinary honours. The meanest have fifteen slaves to attend them, who are constantly employed in gathering grass, bananas and sugar canes for them. The king takes so much pride in these creatures which are of no real use, that he rates his power rather by their number than by that of his provinces. Under pretence of feeding them well, their attendants will drive them into grounds and orchards to destroy them, unless the owners will purchase an exemption from these hardships by continual presents. No body would dare to shut his field against the king's elephants, many of whom are decorated with honourable titles, and advanced to the highest dignities in the state.

So many kinds of tyranny make the Siamese detest their native country, though they look upon it as the best upon earth. Most of them fly from oppression into the forests, where they lead a savage life, infinitely preferable to that of society corrupted by despotism. So great is this desertion, that from the port of Mergui to Juthia the capital of the empire, you may travel for a week together and not meet with the least population, through immense plains, well watered, with a fine rich

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

soil and still bearing the marks of former culture. That fine country is now over-run with tygers.

It was formerly peopled with men. Besides the natives, it was full of colonies, which were come successively from all the eastern parts of Asia. Their inducement was the immense trade carried on there. All historians attest that in the beginning of the sixteenth century, a vast number of ships came into their roads every year. That tyranny, which prevailed soon after proved the destruction of the mines, manufactures and agriculture. With them disappeared all the foreign merchants, and even the trading part of the nation. The state fell into confusion, and consequently grew languid. The French, on their arrival found it sunk into this state of degradation. It was in general poor, and under the dominion of a despotic tyrant, who, engrossing all the trade to himself, must of course bring it to nothing. What few ornaments and articles of luxury were consumed at court and in the houses of the great, came from Japan. The Siamese had a great regard for the Japanese, and were very fond of their work.

It was no easy matter to divert them from this attachment, and yet it was the only way of procuring a demand for the produce of French industry. If any thing could effect this change, it was the Christian religion, which the priests of the foreign missions had preached to them, and not without success ; but the Jesuits, too much devoted to Faulkon, who began to be odious, abused the favour they enjoyed at court, and drew upon themselves the hatred of the people ; and this odium reflected upon their religion. They built churches before there were any christians. They founded monasteries, and by these proceedings revolted the common people and the Talapoys. These are their monks ; some live solitary, and some are intriguing men.

They

They preach to the people the doctrines and precepts of Sommona Kodom. That lawgiver of the Siamese was long honoured as a sage, and has since been revered as a god, or as an emanation of the deity, a son of god. They relate a thousand wonderful stories of this man. He lived upon one grain of rice a-day. He pulled out one of his eyes to give to a poor man, having nothing else to give him. Another time he gave away his wife. He commanded the stars, the rivers and the mountains. But he had a brother who was always thwarting his endeavours for the good of mankind. God avenged him, and crucified that unhappy brother. This fable prejudiced the Siamese against the religion of a crucified God ; and they could not revere Jesus Christ, because he died the same death as the brother of Sommona Kodom.

If the French could not carry their commodities to Siam, they could at least inspire the people with a taste for them, prepare the way for a great trade with this country, and avail themselves of that which actually offered, to open connections with all the east. The situation of that kingdom between two gulphs, where it takes up one hundred and sixty leagues of sea-coast on the one, and about two hundred on the other, would have opened the navigation of all the seas in that part of the world. The fortress of Bancoe, built at the mouth of the Menan, which had been put into the hands of the French, was an excellent mart for all dealings they might have had with China, the Philippines, or any of the eastern parts of India. Mergui, the principal port of the kingdom, and one of the best in Asia, which had likewise been ceded to them, greatly facilitated their trade with the coast of Coromandel, and chiefly with Bengal. It secured to them an advantageous intercourse with the kingdoms of Pegu, Ava, Aracam and Lagos;  
countries

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

countries still more barbarous than Siam, but where are found the finest rubies and some gold dust. All these countries, as well as Siam, produce the tree which yields that precious gum, with which the Chinese and Japanese make their varnish; and whoever is in possession of this commodity, may be sure of carrying on a very lucrative trade with China and Japan.

BESIDES the advantage of coming into good settlements, which were no expence to the company, and might throw into their hands a great part of the trade of the east, they might have brought home from Siam ivory, logwood like that which is cut in the bay of Campeachy, a great deal of cassia, and all that quantity of buffalo and deer skins that the Dutch formerly fetched from thence. They might have grown pepper there, and, possibly, other spices which were not to be found there, as they did not understand the culture of them, and because the wretched inhabitants of Siam are so indifferent to every thing, that nothing succeeds with them.

THE French paid no attention to these objects. The factors of the company, the officers, the Jesuits, all were ignorant of trade: their whole attention was taken up in converting the natives, and making themselves masters of them. At last, after having given a very trifling assistance to Faulkon, at the instant when he was ready to execute his designs, they were involved in his disgrace; and the fortresses of Mergui and Bancocok, defended by French troops, were taken from them by the basest of all nations.

DURING the short time that the French were settled at Siam, the company sought to get a footing at Tonquin. They flattered themselves that they might trade safely and to advantage with a nation which had for ages been instructed by the Chinese. Their religion is  
 Theism,

Theism, the doctrine of Confucius, whose precepts and writings are held in greater veneration than even in China. But there is not the same agreement as in China between the principles of government, religion, laws, opinions, rites and ceremonies. Accordingly, though Tonquin has the same lawgiver, it is far from having the same morals. You find there neither that respect for parents, that love for the prince, those reciprocal affections, nor those social virtues which you meet with in China; nor have they the same good order, police, industry or activity.

THIS nation, which is devoted to excessive indolence, and is voluptuous without taste or delicacy, lives in constant distrust of its sovereigns and strangers. It is doubtful whether their seditious humour proceeds from a natural restlessness of temper, or whether the Chinese system of morality has instructed the people without mending the government. The improvement of knowledge, whether it ascends from the people to the government, or descends from that to the people, should unite their assistance, else it will be productive of fatal revolutions. In Tonquin, there is a continual struggle between the eunuchs who govern, and the people who impatiently bear the yoke. Every thing languishes and tends to ruin in the midst of these dissensions; and these calamities must increase, till the people have compelled their masters to grow wiser, or the masters have rendered their subjects quite insensible. The Portuguese and the Dutch who had attempted to form some connections in Tonquin, had been forced to give them up. The French were not more successful. No Europeans have since carried on that navigation, except some few merchants of Madras, who have alternately forsaken and resumed it. They divide with the Chinese the exportation of copper



**B O O K**  
**IV.**

copper and ordinary silks, the only tolerable commodities that country affords.

**COCHINCHINA** lay too near Siam not to draw the attention of the French, and they would, probably, have fixed there, had they had sagacity enough to foresee what degree of splendour that rising state would one day acquire. The Europeans are indebted to a philosophical traveller for what little they know with any certainty concerning that fine country. The following is the result of his observations.

WHEN the French arrived in those distant regions, they learned that about half a century before, a prince of Tonquin as he was flying from his sovereign, who pursued him as a rebel, had, with his soldiers and adherents, crossed the river, which serves as a barrier between Tonquin and Cochinchina. The fugitives, who were warlike and civilized men, soon expelled the scattered inhabitants, who wandered about without any society or form of government, or any laws but that mutual interest which prompted them not to injure one another. Here they founded an empire upon the principles of culture and property. Rice was the food the most easily cultivated, and the most plentiful; upon this, therefore, the new colonists bestowed their first attention. The sea and the rivers afforded an ample provision of excellent fish, which was an inducement to inhabit their banks. They bred domestic animals, some for food and others for labour. They cultivated the trees they were most in want of, such as the cotton for their clothing. The mountains and forests, which could not possibly be cultivated, afforded wild fowl, metals, gums, perfumes and timbers of an excellent kind. These productions proved so many materials, means and objects of commerce. One hundred galleys  
were

were built, which are constantly employed in defending the coasts of the kingdom.

B O O K  
IV.

ALL these several advantages were well bestowed upon a people of a mild and humane disposition; a disposition which they partly owe to the women, either from the natural ascendant of beauty, or from their assiduity to labour, or from their readiness at business. In general, it is certain, that in the first beginnings of all societies, the women are sooner civilized than the men. Their very weakness, their sedentary life, their being more taken up with a variety of lesser cares, furnish them sooner with that knowledge and experience, and incline them to those domestic attachments, which are the first promoters and strongest ties of society. This is, perhaps, the reason why, in many savage nations, the women are intrusted with the administration of civil government, which is but a higher degree of domestic economy. So long as the state is but as one great family, the women are capable of undertaking the management of it. Then, undoubtedly, the people are happiest, especially in a climate where nature has left but little for man to do.

SUCH is the climate of Cochinchina. The people, though but imperfectly civilized, enjoy that happiness which might excite the envy of more improved societies. They have neither robbers nor beggars. Every one is at liberty to live at his own house, or at his neighbour's. A traveller freely enters a house in any village, sits down to table, eats and drinks, without being invited or asked any questions, and then goes away without returning thanks. He is a man, and therefore a friend and relation of the family. If he is a foreigner, he will excite more curiosity, but is equally welcome.

THESE customs are the relics of the government of the six first kings of Cochinchina, and derived from the original

BOOK  
IV.

original contract entered into between the nation and their leader, before they crossed the river that divides Tonquin from Cochinchina. These men were weary of oppression. They dreaded the like calamity, and therefore took care to guard against the abuse of authority, which is so apt to transgress its due limits, if not kept under some restraint. Their chief, who had set them an example of liberty, and taught them to revolt, promised them that felicity which he himself chose to enjoy; that of a just, mild and parental government. He cultivated with them the land into which they had taken refuge together. He never demanded any thing of them, but a yearly and voluntary supply, to enable him to defend the nation against the tyrant of Tonquin, who, for a long time, pursued them beyond the river.

This primitive contract was religiously observed for upwards of a century, under five or six successors of that brave deliverer: but at last it has been infringed. This reciprocal and solemn engagement is still renewed every year in the face of heaven and earth, in a general assembly of the whole nation, held in open air, where the oldest man presides, and where the king only assists as a private person. That prince still honours and protects agriculture, but does not, like his predecessors, set the example of labour. When he speaks of his subjects, he still says, *they are my children*; but they are no longer so. His courtiers have styled themselves his slaves, and have given him the pompous and sacrilegious title of *king of heaven*. From that moment, men must have appeared to him but as so many insects creeping on the ground. The gold which he has dugged out of the mines, has put a stop to agriculture. He has despised the homely roof of his ancestors, and would have a palace. Its circumference has been marked out, and comprehends a whole league. Thousands of cannon placed round

round the walls of this palace, make it formidable to the people. It now incloses a despotic monarch; in a short time he will no more be seen; and this invisibility, which constitutes the majesty of eastern kings, will substitute the tyrant to the father of the nation.

THE discovery of gold has brought on that of taxes; and the name of administration of the finances will soon supersede that of civil legislation and social contract. Contributions are no longer free-will offerings, but extortions levied by compulsion. Designing men go to the king's palace, and craftily obtain the privilege of plundering the provinces. With gold they at once purchase a right of committing crimes, and the privilege of impunity: they bribe the courtiers, elude the vigilance of the magistrates, and oppress the husbandmen. The traveller already sees as he passes along, fallow grounds, and whole villages forsaken by their inhabitants. This *king of heaven*, like the gods of Epicurus, carelessly suffers plagues and calamities to vex the land. He is ignorant of the sufferings and distresses of his people, who will soon fall into a state of annihilation, like the savages whose territories they now possess. All nations governed by despotism must inevitably perish in this manner. If CochinChina relapses into that chaos out of which it emerged about a hundred and fifty years ago, it will be wholly disregarded by the navigators who now frequent the ports of that kingdom. The Chinese, who carry on the greatest trade there, get in exchange for their own commodities wood for small work, and timber for building houses and ships.

AN immense quantity of sugar, the raw at four livres (3s. 6d.) a hundred weight, the white at eight, (7s.) and sugar-candy at ten. (8s. 9d.) Very good silk, fattins, and pitre, the fibres of a tree, not unlike the banana, which they fraudulently mix in their manufactures. Black and ordinary tea, which serves for the consumption of common

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

common people. Such excellent cinnamon, that it sells three or four times dearer than that of Ceylon. There is very little of it; it grows only upon one mountain, which is always surrounded with guards. Excellent pepper, and such pure iron, that they work it as it comes out of the mine, without smelting. Gold of three and twenty carrats. It is found there in greater plenty than in any other part of the East. Eagle-wood, which is more or less esteemed as it is more or less resinous. The pieces that contain most of this rosin are commonly taken from the heart, or from the root of the tree. They are called calunbac, and are always sold for their weight in gold to the Chinese, who account them the highest cordial in nature. They are carefully preserved in pewter-boxes, to keep them from drying. When they are to be administered they are ground upon a marble, with such liquids as are best suited to the disorder they are intended to remove. The inferior eagle-wood, which always sells at least a hundred livres (4*l.* 7*s.* 6*d.*) a pound, is carried to Persia, Turkey, and Arabia. They use it to perfume their cloaths, and sometimes their apartments, upon very particular occasions, and then they mix it with amber. It is also used for another purpose. It is a custom among those nations, when they are desirous of shewing their visitors great civilities, to present them with pipes, then with coffee and sweetmeats. When conversation begins to grow languid, the sherbet is brought in, which is looked upon as a hint to depart. As soon as the stranger rises to go away, they bring in a little pan with eagle-wood, and perfume his beard, sprinkling it with rose-water.

THOUGH the French, who had scarce any thing else to bring but cloth, lead, gunpowder, and brimstone, were obliged to trade with Cochinchina chiefly in money, yet they were under a necessity of pursuing this trade in competition with the Chinese. This inconvenience might  
 have

have been obviated by the profit that would have been made upon goods sent to Europe, or sold in India; but it is now too late to attempt it. Probity and honesty, the essentials of an active and solid trade, are forsaking these regions, which were formerly so flourishing, in proportion as the government becomes arbitrary, and consequently unjust. In a short time no greater number of ships will be seen in their harbours than in those of the neighbouring states, where they were scarcely known.

HOWEVER this may be, the French company driven from Siam, and without hopes of settling at the extremities of Asia, began to regret their factory at Surat, where they dared not appear again, since they had left it without paying their debts. They had lost the only market they knew of for their cloths, their lead, and their iron; and they were continually at a loss in the purchase of goods to answer the fancies of the mother country, and the wants of the colonies. By fulfilling all their former engagements, they might have recovered their forfeited liberty. The Mogul government wished for a greater competition in their roads, and would have preferred the French to the English, who had purchased of the court an exemption from all duties, and often urged them to it. Whether it was for want of honesty, of skill, or of means, certain it is that the company never could remove the reproach they had incurred. They confined their whole attention to the fortifying of Pondicherry, when they were suddenly prevented by a bloody war, which was owing to remote causes.

The loss and recovery of Pondicherry, which became the chief settlement in India.

THE northern Barbarians who had overturned the Roman empire, that was mistress of the world, established a form of government which would not admit of augmenting their conquests, and kept every state within its natural limits. The abolition of the feudal

BOOK  
IV.

laws, and the alterations consequent upon it, seemed to tend to a second universal monarchy; but the Austrian power, weakened by the great extent of their possessions and their distance from each other, could not overturn the bulwarks that were raising against it. After a whole century of contests, hopes, and disappointments, it was forced to yield to a nation, whose strength, position, and activity, rendered her more formidable to the liberties of Europe. Richelieu and Mazarine began this revolution by their intrigues. Turenne and Condé completed it by their victories. Colbert settled it by the introduction of arts, and of all kinds of industry. If Lewis XIV, who may be said to have been not, perhaps, the greatest monarch of his age, but one who best supported the dignity of the throne, had been more moderate in the exercise of his power, and the sense of his grandeur, it is difficult to determine how far he might have carried his good fortune. His vanity proved detrimental to his ambition. After bending his own subjects to his will, he wanted to do the same with his neighbours. His pride raised him more enemies than his influence and his genius could supply him with allies and resources.

He was delighted with the flatteries of his panegyrists and courtiers, who promised him universal monarchy, and the pleasure he took in these adulations contributed still more than the extent of his power to inspire a dread of universal conquest and slavery. The distresses and invectives of his protestant subjects dispersed by a tyrannical fanaticism, completed the hatred he had incurred by his successes, and the abuse he made of his prosperity.

THE Prince of Orange, a man of a steady, upright disposition, and of a penetrating judgment, endowed with every virtue that is consistent with ambition, became

came the center of all these resentments, which he had long fomented by his negotiations and his emissaries, France was attacked by the most formidable confederacy recorded in history, and yet she was constantly triumphant.

BOOK  
IV.

SHE was not so successful in Asia as in Europe. The Dutch first endeavoured to prevail upon the natives to attack Pondicherry, which they could never be compelled to restore. The Indian prince, to whom they applied for that purpose, was not to be bribed by their gold to agree to so perfidious a proposal. His constant answer was, *The French have bought that place, it would be unjust to turn them out.* What the Raja refused to do, the Dutch did themselves. They besieged the town in 1693, and were obliged to restore it at the peace of Ryswick, in a much better condition than they found it.

MARTIN was again appointed director, and managed the affairs of the company with that wisdom, skill, and integrity, which was expected from him. That able and virtuous merchant drew fresh colonists to Pondicherry, and made the place agreeable to them, by the good order he maintained there, and by his moderation and justice. He found means to be beloved by the neighbouring princes, whose friendship was of consequence to an infant colony. He selected and trained up excellent subjects, and sent them to the Asiatic markets, and to the several princes. He had persuaded the French, that as they were come last to India, finding themselves there in a weak condition, and without hopes of assistance from home, the only way to succeed was, to give the natives a good opinion of them. He made them put off that levity, and those scornful airs, which so often make their nation insufferable to strangers. They grew modest, gentle, and assiduous to bu-



**B O O K**  
**IV.**

finess; they learnt the art of behaving suitably to the genius of the several nations, and to particular circumstances. Those who did not confine themselves to the company's service, frequenting different courts, got acquainted with the places where the finest stuffs were manufactured, the staples where the choicest commodities were to be met with, and, in short, with all the particulars relative to the inland trade of every country.

ALL that Martin could do was to lay the foundation of future success to the company, by the good opinion he gave of the French, by the pains he took to train up agents, by the informations he acquired, and by the good order he maintained in Pondicherry, which daily acquired new inhabitants; but all this was not sufficient to invigorate a feeble constitution as that of the company had always been.

Decline of  
the French  
company,  
and the  
cause of it.

THE first scheme was to establish a great empire at Madagascar. A single armament carried over 1688 persons, who were made to expect a delightful climate and a rapid fortune, whereas they found nothing but famine, discord and death.

So unfortunate a beginning discouraged the adventurers from an undertaking, which they had entered upon for fashion's sake, or out of complaisance. The owners of shares had not made good their payments so punctually as they ought, which is an essential thing in commercial concerns. The government, which had engaged to lend without interest a fifth part of the sums which should come into the company's coffers, and had as yet been called upon but for two millions, (87,500*l*.) again drew the same sum out of the public treasure, in hopes of supporting the work they had begun. Some time after, they carried their generosity further still, and freely gave what at first was only lent.

THIS

THIS sacrifice of the ministry could not, however, enable the company to proceed in their operations. They were forced to confine them to Surat and Pondicherry; and to abandon their settlements at Bantam, Rajapore, Tilseri, Mazulipatam, Gombroon and Siam. No doubt they had too many factories, and some were ill situated; but this was not the reason for putting them down; it was merely their inability to support them.

B O O K  
IV.

SOON after, they were obliged to proceed a step further. In 1682, they gave permission indiscriminately to French subjects and foreigners to trade to the East Indies for five years on the company's ships, paying the freight that should be agreed upon; and on condition that the goods brought home should be deposited in the company's ware-houses, sold with their own, and pay them a duty of five per cent. The public so eagerly came into this proposal, that the directors entertained great hopes from the increase of these small profits, which would be constant without any risque. But the proprietors, despising these lesser emoluments, and jealous of the great profits made by the free traders, in two years time obtained a repeal of this regulation, and their charter remained in full force.

To support this monopoly with some decency, they wanted money. In 1684, the company obtained from government a call upon all the proprietors, amounting to a quarter of their concern; and in case any one failed to pay his call, his whole share was to be made over to another who had paid it for him. Whether from perverseness, from good reasons, or from inability, many did not pay, so that their shares lost three fourths of their original value; and to the shame of the nation, men were found so barbarous or so unjust as to enrich themselves with their spoils.

BOOK  
IV.

THIS dishonourable expedient enabled them to fit out a few ships for Asia; but new wants were soon felt. This cruel situation, which grew worse and worse, put them upon demanding of the proprietors, in 1697, the restitution of the dividends of ten and twenty per cent. which they had received in 1687 and 1691. So extraordinary a proposal raised a general clamour. They were obliged to have recourse to the usual method of borrowing. These loans became more chargeable, the more they were multiplied, because the security grew more precarious.

As the company was in want both of money and credit, the emptiness of their coffers put it out of their power to afford those advantages to the merchant in India, and that encouragement, without which he will neither work nor set others to work. This inability reduced the French sales to nothing. It is demonstrable, that from 1664 to 1684, that is, in the space of twenty years, the sum total of their produce did not exceed nine millions one hundred thousand livres (398,125*l*.)

To these had been added other abuses. The conduct of the administrators and agents for the company had not been properly directed, or duly looked into. They had broken into their capital, and paid dividends out of their stock, which ought only to have arisen from the profits. The least brilliant and least prosperous of all reigns had exhibited a model for a commercial company. The trade to China, the easiest, the safest and the most advantageous that is carried on with Asia, had been given up to a particular body of merchants.

THE bloody war of 1689, added to the calamities of the India company, even by the very successes of France. Swarms of privateers, fitted out from the several harbours in the kingdom, annoyed by their vigilance and bravery the trade of Holland and England.

In

In their numberless prizes were found a prodigious quantity of India goods, which were retailed at a low price. The company, who by this competition were forced to sell under prime cost, sought to find out some expedient to save themselves from this extremity, but could think of none that was reconcileable with the interest of the privateers, nor did the minister think proper to sacrifice an useful set of men, to a body who had so long wearied him with their murmurs and complaints.

AFTER all, the company had many more causes of discontent. The financiers had shewn an open hatred for them, and were continually thwarting and clogging them. Supported by those vile associates which they always have at court, they endeavoured to annihilate the India trade, under the specious pretence of encouraging the home manufactures. The government was at first afraid of being exposed to reproach, by departing from the principles of Colbert, and repealing the most solemn edicts; but the farmers of the revenue found means to render those privileges useless, which the ministry would not abolish; and without being absolutely deprived of them, the company no longer enjoyed them.

HEAVIER duties were successively laid upon all India goods. Half a year seldom passed, without some new regulation, sometimes to allow, sometimes to prohibit the use of these commodities: there was a continued scene of contradictions, in a part of administration that would have required steady and invariable principles. All these waverings gave Europe room to think that trade would hardly be established in a kingdom where all depends upon the caprices of a minister, or the interests of those who govern.

THE

**BOOK**  
**IV.**

THE conduct of an ignorant and corrupt administration; the levity and impatience of the proprietors, the selfish jealousy of the finance, the oppressive spirit of the treasury, joined to other causes, had prepared the ruin of the company. The miseries of the war for the Spanish succession hastened their destruction.

EVERY resource was exhausted. The most sanguine saw no prospect of making the least armament. Besides, if by some unexpected good fortune they should chance to fit out some few weak vessels, it was to be feared they might be seized in Europe, or in India, by disappointed creditors, who must be exasperated at being so long trifled with. These powerful motives determined the company in 1707, to consent that some rich merchants should send their own ships to India, upon condition that they should allow the company fifteen per cent. profit upon the goods they should bring home, and the right of taking such share in those ships as their circumstances should admit of. Soon after this, they were even reduced to make over the whole and exclusive exercise of their privilege to some privateers of St. Malo, still reserving the same concession, which for some years past had in some degree kept them alive.

NOTWITHSTANDING this desperate situation, in 1714 they solicited the renewal of their charter, which was nearly at an end, and which they had enjoyed for half a century. The ministry, who did not know, or would not see that there were proper measures to be taken, granted them an indulgence for ten years longer. This new regulation took place but in part, in consequence of some extraordinary events, the causes of which we shall next inquire into.

WHOEVER has been accustomed to trace the progress of empires, has always considered the death of  
Colbert

The French company recovers a glimpse of its ancient splendour by Law's system; but soon relapses into obscurity.

Colbert as the period that put an end to the true prosperity of France. She still appeared with some outward splendor, but her inward decay increased daily. Her finances, administered without order and principle, fell a prey to a multitude of rapacious farmers of the revenue. These people made themselves necessary by their very extortions, and went so far as to give the law even to government. The confusion, usury, and continual alterations in the coin, the reductions of interest, the alienations of the domain and of the taxes, engagements which it was impossible to fulfil, the creation of pensions and places, the privileges and exemptions of all kinds, and a thousand other evils, each more ruinous than the other, were the consequences of so corrupt an administration.

THE loss of credit soon became universal. Bankruptcies were more frequent. Money grew scarce, and trade was at a stand. The consumption was smaller. The culture of lands was neglected. Artists went over to foreign countries. The common people had neither food nor clothing. The nobility served in the army without pay, and mortgaged their lands. All orders of men groaned under the weight of taxes, and were in want of the necessaries of life. The royal effects had lost their value. The contracts, upon the hotel de ville sold but for half their worth, and the bills of sale fell eighty or ninety per cent. under par. Lewis XIV, a little before his death, was in great want of eight millions; (350,000*l.*) and was forced to give bonds for 32,000,000, (1,400,000*l.*) which was borrowing at four hundred per cent.

IN this confusion were public affairs, when the Duke of Orleans took the reins of government. Those who were for violent measures, proposed to sacrifice the creditors of the state to the landholders, as the former  
were

B O O K  
IV.

were in proportion to the latter but as one to six hundred. The regent refused to come into a measure that would have stamped an indelible stain upon his administration. He preferred an inquiry into the public engagements to a total bankruptcy.

NOTWITHSTANDING the reduction of 600,000,000 (26,250,000*l.*) of stock to bearer, to 250,000,000 (10,937,500*l.*) of government bonds, the national debt amounted to 262,138,001 livres (90,218,573*l.* 11*s.*) at twenty-eight livres (1*l.* 4*s.* 6*d.*) the mark, the interest of which, at four per cent. amounted to 89,983,453 livres, (3,936,776*l.* 1*s.* 4*d.* half*p.*)

THIS enormous debt, which nearly absorbed the whole of the public revenue, suggested the idea of appointing a bed of justice, to call those to account who had been the authors of the public calamities, and had enriched themselves with the spoils of the nation. This inquiry only served to expose to public view the incapacity of the ministers who had been intrusted with the management of the finances, the craft of the farmers of the revenue who had swallowed them up, and the baseness of the courtiers who had sold their interest to the first bidder. By this experiment, honest minds were confirmed in the abhorrence they always had for such a tribunal. It degrades the dignity of the prince who fails to fulfil his engagements, and exposes to the people the vices of a corrupt administration. It is injurious to the rights of the citizen, who is accountable for his actions to none but the law. It strikes terror into the rich, who are marked out as delinquents, merely because they are rich, be their fortunes well or ill gotten. It gives encouragement to informers, who point out, as fit objects for tyranny, such as it may be advantageous to ruin. It is composed of unmerciful leeches, who see guilt wherever they suspect there is

is money. It spares plunderers, who find means to se- **BOOK**  
cret their wealth in time; and strips honest men who **IV.**  
thought themselves secure in their innocence. It sacri-  
fices the interests of the treasury to the whims of a  
few greedy, profligate and extravagant favourites.

WHILST France was exhibiting to all Europe the cruel and disgraceful spectacle of these complicated evils; a Scotch empiric arrived at Paris, who for some time had been travelling about, and making a show of his talents, hurried on by his own restless disposition. His fiery genius, and peremptory manner, was capable of bearing down every argument, and surmounting every difficulty. In 1716 he suggested the idea of a bank, the success of which confounded his opponents, and even exceeded his own expectations. With ninety millions (3,937,500*l.*) that the West India company furnished towards this bank, it gave new life to agriculture, to trade, to arts, in short, to the whole nation. The author was extolled as an accurate, extensive and elevated genius, who despised fortune, aimed only at glory, and wanted to transmit his name to posterity by great actions. Such was the gratitude of the public, that he was thought to deserve the highest honours. This astonishing prosperity gave him an unlimited authority. He made use of it in 1719 to unite the East and West India companies, as likewise those of Africa and China into one body. Commercial schemes were the least concern of the new society. They carried their ambition so far as to pretend to pay off all the national debt. The government granted them the sole vending of tobacco, the mint, the receipts and general farms, to enable them to pursue so grand a project.

At first, Law's schemes met with universal approbation. Six hundred and twenty-four thousand shares, mostly bought with government bills, and which upon  
an



**B O O K**  
**IV.**

an average did not really cost 500 livres, (21*l.* 17*s.* 6*d.*) rose to 10,000 livres, (437*l.* 10*s.*) payable in bank notes. Such was the infatuation of the public, that not only Frenchmen but foreigners, and even the most sensible people, sold their stock, their lands, their jewels, to play this extraordinary game. Gold and silver were held in no estimation; and nothing but paper currency was sought after.

THIS frenzy multiplied paper credit to such an amazing degree, that it circulated to the amount of 6,138,243,590 livres, (268,548,157*l.* 1*s.* 3*d.*) in shares of India stock, or in bank notes, though there was actually in the kingdom no more than twelve hundred millions (52,500,000*l.*) in specie, at sixty livres the mark (2*l.* 12*s.* 6*d.*)

SUCH a disproportion might possibly have been born in a free nation, where it had been brought on by degrees. The citizens, accustomed to consider the nation as a permanent and independent body, trust to its security the more readily, as they are seldom thoroughly acquainted with its powers, and have a good opinion of its equity, founded on experience. Upon the strength of this favourable prejudice, credit is often stretched in those states beyond the real resources and securities of the nation. This is not the case in an absolute monarchy, especially such as have often broke their engagements. If an implicit confidence is shewn in a fit of phrenzy, the effect ceases with the cause. Their insolvency strikes every eye. The honesty of the monarch, the mortgage, the stock, every thing appears imaginary. The creditor, recovered from his delirium, demands his money with a degree of impatience proportionable to his uneasiness. The history of the system will corroborate this truth.

IN order to answer the first demands, they had recourse to very strange expedients. Gold was prohibited

ed in trade; all persons were forbidden to keep by them more than five hundred livres (21*l.* 17*s.* 6*d.*) in specie. An edict was published, importing several successive diminutions in the value of the coin. This had the desired effect; people were now in no hurry to draw their money from the bank; on the contrary, in less than a month they brought in cash to the amount of forty-four million, six hundred, ninety-six thousand, one hundred, and ninety livres (1,955,458*l.* 6*s.* 3*d.*) in specie, at eighty livres (3*l.* 10*s.*) the mark.

As this infatuation could not be lasting, it was judged expedient to lessen the disproportion between paper and money, by reducing the bank bills to half their value, and the shares to five-ninths. The standard for the coin was fixed at eighty-two livres ten sols (3*l.* 12*s.* 2*d.* *f.*) the mark. This operation, the most rational, perhaps, that could have been devised in the critical situation of affairs, completed the general confusion. The consternation was universal; every one imagined he had lost half his fortune, and was in a hurry to call in the remainder. The bank had no stock, and the stock-brokers found they had only been grasping at shadows. The foreigners, who had realized their paper at first, and carried off one-third of the ready money of the kingdom, were the least losers. The hopes which the government had conceived of paying off the national debt disappeared with Law, and there remained no solid monument of the system, but an India Company, whose shares were fixed by the liquidation of 1723, to the number of fifty-six thousand, but by subsequent events were reduced to fifty thousand, two hundred, sixty-eight, and four-tenths.

UNFORTUNATELY they preserved the privileges of the several companies out of which this new one had been formed; and this prerogative made them neither wise

BOOK  
IV.

wise nor powerful: it confined the negro trade, and stopped the progress of the sugar colonies. Most of their privileges served only to authorise odious monopolies. The most fertile regions upon earth, when in their hands, were neither peopled nor cultivated. The spirit of finance, which restrains pursuits as much as the commercial spirit enlarges them, became the spirit of the company, and has continued ever since. The directors thought of nothing but making money of the rights ceded to the company in Asia, Africa, and America. It became a society of farmers rather than a trading company. Nothing could possibly be said in praise of their administration, had they not been so honest as to pay off the debts accumulated in India for a century past; and had they not taken care to secure Pondicherry against any invasion, by surrounding it with walls. Their trade was but poor and precarious till Orry was appointed to superintend the finances of the nation.

Great success of the French in India.

THAT upright and disinterested minister cast a blessing upon his virtues, by a harshness of temper which he shewed in a manner not much to the credit of the nation. One day that a friend was upbraiding him for his rudeness, he answered, *How can it be otherwise? out of a hundred people I see in a day, fifty take me for a fool, and fifty for a knave.* He had a brother named Fulvy, who was less rigid in his principles, but had more affability, and greater capacity. He intrusted him with the concerns of the company, which could not but thrive in such hands.

NOTWITHSTANDING the old and new prejudices; notwithstanding the abhorrence the publick had for a relic of the system; notwithstanding the authority of the Sorbonne, which had decided that the dividend upon the shares came under the denomination of usury; notwithstanding

notwithstanding the blindness of a nation credulous **B O O K**  
 enough not to be shocked at so absurd a decision, yet **IV.**  
 still the two brothers found means to convince Cardinal Fleury that it was right effectually to support the India Company. They even prevailed upon that minister, who was sometimes too parsimonious, to lavish the king's favours upon this establishment. The care of superintending its trade and increasing its powers, was afterwards committed to several persons of known abilities.

DUMAS was sent to Pondicherry. He soon obtained leave of the court of Delhi to coin money; which privilege was worth four or five hundred thousand livres (about 19,700*l.* on an average) a year. He obtained a cession of the territory of Karical, which entitled him to a considerable share in the trade of Tanjour. Some time after, a hundred thousand Marattas invaded the Decan. They attacked the nabob of Arcot, who was vanquished and slain. His family and several of his subjects took refuge in Pondicherry. They were received with all the kindness due to allies in distress. Ragogi Bouffola, the general of the victorious army, demanded, that they should be delivered up to him, and further required the payment of 1,200,000 livres (52,500*l.*) by virtue of a tribute, which he pretended the French had formerly submitted to.

DUMAS made answer; that so long as the Moguls had been masters of that country, they had always treated the French with the respect due to one of the most illustrious nations in the world; which took a pride in her turn in protecting her benefactors; that it was not in the nature of that magnanimous nation to deliver up a number of women and children, and of unfortunate and defenceless men, to see them put to death; that the fugitives then in the town were under the protection

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

tection of his king, who esteemed it his highest honour to be the protector of the distressed; that every Frenchman in Pondicherry would gladly die in their defence; and that it was as much as his head was worth, if his sovereign was to know that he had so much as listened to the mention of a tribute. He added that he was ready to defend the place to the last extremity, and if he was overpowered, he would get on board his ships, and return to Europe. That Ragogi might consider of it, and see whether he chose to expose his army to utter destruction, when the most he could get by it was to take possession of a heap of ruins.

THE Indians had not been accustomed to hear the French talk with so much dignity. This boldness staggered the general of the Marattas, and after some negotiations skilfully carried on, he determined to keep peace with Pondicherry.

WHILST Dumas was procuring wealth and respect to the company, the government sent la Bourdonnais to the isle of France.

AT the time of their first navigations to India, the Portuguese had discovered to the east of Madagascar, between the 19th and 20th degrees of latitude, three islands, to which they gave the names of Mascarenhas, Cerné and Rodrigue. There they found neither men nor quadrupeds, and attempted no settlement upon either of the islands. The most western of them, which they had named Mascarenhas, served as a refuge about the year 1665 to some Frenchmen, who before were settled at Madagascar. There they found an extent of sixty miles in length and forty-five in breadth, full of mountains, and but few plains. At first they bred cattle, and afterwards they cultivated European corn, Asiatic and African fruits, and some vegetables fit for that mild climate. The health, plenty and freedom they enjoyed, induced several sailors belonging

to the ships that touched there for refreshments, to come and live amongst them. Industry brought on population. In 1718, they procured some coffee-trees from Arabia, which succeeded tolerably well, though the fruit had lost much of its flavour. This culture, and other laborious employments, were performed by slaves from the coast of Africa, or from Madagascar. Then the island, which had changed its name from Mascarenhas to the Isle of Bourbon, became an important object to the company. In 1763, the population amounted to 4627 white people, and 15149 blacks; the cattle consisted of 8702 beeves, 4084 sheep, 7405 goats, 7619 hogs. Upon an extent of 125909 acres of cultivated land, they gathered as much cassava as would feed their slaves, 1135000 pound weight of corn, 844100 pounds of rice, 2879100 pounds of maize, and 2535100 pounds of coffee, which the company bought up at six sols (about 3d.) a-pound.

UNFORTUNATELY this valuable possession has no harbour. This inconvenience determined the French to attempt a settlement on the island of Cerné, where the Portuguese had, as usual, left some quadrupeds and fowls for the benefit of such of their ships as should chance to call there. The Dutch, who afterwards took possession of it, forsook it for fear of multiplying their settlements too much. The island was uninhabited when the French landed there in 1720, and changed its name from Mauritius to the isle of France, which it still bears.

THE first inhabitants that were sent thither, came over from Bourbon, and there they were forgotten for fifteen years. They only formed as it were a corps de garde, with orders to hang out a French flag, to inform all nations that the island had a master. The company, long undetermined, decided at last for the

B O O K  
VI.

keeping it, and in 1735, la Bourdonnais was commissioned to improve it.

THIS man, who has since been so famous, was born at St. Malo, and had been at sea from the age of ten years; all his voyages had been prosperous, and in every one he had signalized himself by some extraordinary action. He had reconciled the Arabs and the Portuguese, who were just going to murder one another in the road of Mocha: and had distinguished himself in the war at Mahé. He was the first Frenchman who ever thought of sending armed vessels into the Indian seas. He was known to be equally skilful in the art of ship-building, as in that of navigating and defending a ship. His schemes bore the mark of genius, nor were his views contracted by the close attention he paid to all the minute particulars of whatever plan he undertook. Difficulties did but quicken his activity, and display his talent for disposing the men under his command to the best advantage. Nothing was ever laid to his charge but an immoderate passion for riches; and it must be confessed he was not over scrupulous as to the means of acquiring them.

HE was no sooner arrived at the Isle of France, than he made it his business to acquire every information he could concerning it. He found it to be 31890 toises in its greatest diameter, 22124 in its greatest breadth, and 432680 acres in surface. The greater part of this ground was covered with almost impenetrable forests, and with mountains not above 400 toises high. Most of these hills were full of reservoirs of water, which poured down in streams upon a dark grey earth, entirely full of holes, and for the most part stony.

THE sea coast was what la Bourdonnais chiefly attended to, and his principal observations related to the two harbours he found there. He thought the harbour

on the south east side not worth attending to, on account of the regular and high winds, which make it impossible, or at least very difficult, to sail out of it any season of the year. That on the north-west he found far preferable, though the ships must get to it through a narrow channel, between two flats, and then be towed in, and though it will scarcely admit above thirty-five or forty ships.

As soon as la Bourdonnais had taken these necessary informations, he endeavoured to instil a spirit of emulation into the first colonists on the island, who were quite discouraged at the neglect with which they had been treated, and to reduce to some subordination the vagrants lately arrived from the mother country. He made them cultivate rice and wheat, for the food of the Europeans, and cassava, which he had brought from Brazil for the slaves. They were to be furnished from Madagascar with meat for the daily consumption of the richer inhabitants and of sea-faring men, till the cattle they had procured from thence should have multiplied so considerably, as to prevent the necessity of importing any more. A post which he had established on the little island of Rodrigue, abundantly supplied the poor with turtle. Here, ships going to India soon found all the refreshments and conveniences they wanted after a tedious passage. Three ships were fitted out, one of which carried 500 tons burden. If the founder had not the satisfaction of bringing the colony to the utmost degree of prosperity it was capable of, at least he had the credit of having discovered what degree of importance it might acquire in able hands.

THESE improvements, however, though they seemed to be owing to enchantment, did not meet with the approbation of those who were principally concerned in them, and la Bourdonnais was compelled to justify

H h 2

himself.



BOOK  
IV.

himself. One of the directors was asking him one day how it came about that he had done the company's business so ill, and his own so well. *Because*, said he, *I have done mine according to my own judgment, and that of the company according to your directions.*

GREAT men have been always more useful to the public, than large bodies of men. Nations and societies are but the instruments of men of genius : these have been the true founders of states and colonies. Spain, Portugal, Holland and England, owe their conquests and settlements abroad to able warriors, experienced seamen, and legislators of superior talents. France especially is more indebted to some fortunate individuals, than to the form of her government. One of those eminent men had just been fixing two important islands of Africa under the dominion of France ; another still more extraordinary person, whose name was Dupleix, added splendor to the French name in Asia.

He was first sent to the banks of the Ganges, where he superintended the colony of Chandernagore. That settlement, though on the fittest spot in the world for great commercial undertakings, had been but in a languishing condition, till he had the management of it. The company was not able to send any great stock, and the agents who went over there without any fortune, had not been able to avail themselves of the liberty that was given them of advancing their own private affairs, as they were allowed to do. The activity of the new governor, who brought an ample fortune the reward of ten years successful labours, soon spread throughout the colony. In a country overflowing with money, they soon found credit, when once they shewed themselves deserving of it. In a short time, Chandernagore became the wonder of its neighbours, and excited the envy of its rivals. Dupleix, who had engaged the rest  
of

of the French in his vast speculations, opened fresh sources of commerce all over the Mogul's dominions, and as far as Thibet. On his arrival he had not found a single sloop, and he fitted out fifteen armed vessels at once. These ships carried on trade in different places in India. Some he sent out to the Red Sea, to the Gulph of Persia, to Surat, to Goa, to the Maldivia, and Manilla Islands, and to all the seas where there was a possibility of trading to advantage.

**B O O K**  
**IV.**

DUPLEIX had for twelve years supported the honour of the French name on the Ganges, and increased both public and private fortunes, when he was called to Pondicherry to take upon him the general superintendency of all the company's affairs in India. They were then in a more flourishing condition than they had ever yet been, or have ever been since; for that year the returns amounted to twenty four millions (1,050,000*l.*). Had they continued to act prudently, had they confided more in two such men as Dupleix and la Bourdonnais, they would probably have acquired such power as would not have been easily destroyed.

LA BOURDONNAIS foresaw an approaching rupture with England; and proposed a scheme which would have secured to the French the sovereignty of the seas in Asia, during the whole course of the war. He was convinced that which ever nation should first take up arms in India, would have a manifest advantage over the other. He therefore desired to have a squadron, with which he should sail to the Isle of France, and there wait till hostilities began. From this place he was to go and cruize in the straits of Sunda, where most of the ships pass that are going to, or coming from China. There he would have intercepted all the English ships, and saved the French. He would even have seized upon the small squadron which England sent

B O O K  
IV.

into those very latitudes, and having thus made himself master of the Indian seas, would have ruined all the English settlements in those parts.

THE ministry approved of this plan, and granted him five men of war, with which he set sail.

HE had scarcely set sail, when the directors, equally offended at their being kept in the dark as to the destination of the squadron, and at the expences it had occasioned them, and jealous of the advantage this would give to a man who, in their opinion, was already too independent, exclaimed against this armament as they had done before, and declared it to be useless. They were, or pretended to be, so fully convinced of the neutrality that would be observed in India between the two companies, that they persuaded the minister into that opinion, when la Bourdonnais was no longer present to animate him and guide his inexperience.

THE court of Versailles was not aware that a power supported chiefly by trade, would not easily be induced to leave them in quiet possession of the Indian Ocean; and that if she either made or listened to any proposals of neutrality, it must be only to gain time. They were not aware that, even supposing such an agreement was made *bona fide* on both sides, a thousand unforeseen events might interrupt it. They were not aware that the object proposed could never be fully answered, because the sea-forces of both nations, not being bound by any private agreement made between two companies, would attack their ships in the European seas. They were not aware that in the colonies themselves, they would make preparations to guard against a surprize; that these precautions would create mistrust on both sides; and that mistrust would bring on an open rupture. All these particulars were not perceived by them, and the squadron was recalled. Hostilities

lities began, and the loss of almost every French ship going to India, shewed too late which of the two was the most judicious system of politics.

B O O K  
IV.  
~~~~~

LA BOURDONNAIS was as deeply affected for the errors that had occasioned the misfortunes of the nation, as if he had been guilty of them himself, and applied wholly to remedy them. Without magazines, without provisions, without money, he found means by his attention and perseverance to make up a squadron, composed of a sixty gun ship, and five merchantment armed for war. He dared to attack the English squadron; he beat them, pursued and forced them to quit the coast of Coromandel; he then besieged and took Madras, the first of the English settlements. The victor was preparing for fresh expeditions, which were certain and easy; but he was opposed with an obstinacy, which cost 9,057,000 livres (396,243*l.* 15*s.*), which was the stipulated ransom of the city exclusive of the success which must necessarily follow this event.

THE company was then governed by two of the king's commissaries, who were irreconcilable enemies. The directors and the subalterns had taken part in the quarrel, according as their inclination or their interest led them. The two factions were extremely incensed against each other. That which had caused la Bourdonnais's squadron to be taken from him, was enraged to see that he had found resources in himself, to ward off every blow that was aimed at him. There is good reason to believe, that this faction pursued him to India, and instilled the poison of jealousy into the heart of Dupleix. Two men formed to esteem and love each other, to adorn the French name and to descend together to posterity, became the vile tools of an animosity in which they were not the least interested. Dupleix opposed la Bourdonnais, and made him lose much time.

H h 4.

The

BOOK
IV.

The latter, after having staid too late on the coast of Coromandel, waiting for the succours which had been unnecessarily delayed, saw his squadron destroyed by a storm. A division arose amongst his men. So many misfortunes brought on by the intrigues of Dupleix, determined la Bourdonnais to return to Europe, where a horrid dungeon was the reward of all his glorious services, and the end of all the hopes which the nation had built upon his great talents. The English, delivered from that formidable enemy in India, and recruited by great succours, found themselves in a condition to attack the French in their turn, and accordingly laid siege to Pondicherry.

DUPLEIX then made amends for past errors. He defended the town with great skill and bravery; and after the trenches had been opened six weeks, the English were forced to raise the siege. The news of the peace arrived soon after, and all hostilities ceased between the companies of both nations.

THE taking of Madrafs, the naval combat of la Bourdonnais, and the raising of the siege of Pondicherry, gave the Indian nations a high opinion of the French, and they were respected in those parts as the first and greatest of the European powers.

DUPLEIX endeavoured to avail himself of this disposition, and took care to procure great and solid advantages for his nation. In order to judge rightly of his project, we must lay before the reader a description of the state of Indostan at that time.

Views of
the French
to aggran-
dize them-
selves. Ac-
count of
Indostan.

If we may credit uncertain tradition, that fine rich country tempted the first conquerors of the world. But, whether Bacchus, Hercules, Sesostris, or Darius, did or did not carry their arms through that large portion of the globe, certain it is, that it proved an inexhaustible fund of fictions and wonders for the first Greeks.

That

That people, ever credulous, because they were always carried away by their imagination, were so enchanted with these marvellous stories, that they still gave credit to them, even in the more enlightened ages of the republic.

B O O K
IV.

If we consider this matter according to the principles of reason and truth, we shall find that a pure air, wholesome food, and great frugality, had early multiplied men to a prodigious degree in Indostan. They were acquainted with laws, civil government and arts, whilst the rest of the earth was desert and savage. Wise and beneficial institutions preserved these people from corruption, and their only care was to enjoy the gifts of the earth and of the climate. If from time to time their morals were tainted in some of these states, the throne was immediately subverted; and when Alexander entered these regions, he found very few kings, and many free cities.

A COUNTRY divided into numberless little states, some of which were popular, and others enslaved, could not make a very formidable resistance against the hero of Macedonia. His progress was rapid, and he would have subdued the whole country, had not death stopped his career in the midst of his triumphs.

By following this conqueror in his expeditions, the Indian Sandrocotus had learned the art of war. This obscure man who had no claim but from his talents, collected a numerous army, and drove the Macedonians out of the provinces they had invaded. The deliverer of his country then made himself master of it, and united all Indostan under his dominion. How long he reigned, or what was the duration of the empire he had founded, is not known.

At the beginning of the eighth century, the Arabs over-ran India, as they did many other parts of the world.

B O O K
IV.

world. They subjected some few islands to their dominion, but, content with trading peaceably on the continent, they made but few settlements on it.

THREE centuries after this, some barbarians of their religion, who came out from Khorassan headed by Mahmoud, attacked India on the north side, and extended their depredations as far as Guzarat. They carried off immense spoils from those wealthy provinces, and buried them under ground in their wretched and barren deserts.

THESE calamities were not yet forgotten, when Gengiskan, who with his Tartars had subdued the greatest part of Asia, brought his victorious army to the western coasts of India. This was about the year 1200. It is not known what part this conqueror and his descendants took in the affairs of Indostan. Probably, they did not concern themselves much about them, for it appears that soon after, the Patans reigned over this fine country.

THESE are said to have been Arabian merchants settled on the coasts of Indostan, who taking advantage of the weakness of the several kings and nations who had admitted them, easily seized upon several provinces, and founded a vast empire, of which Delhi was the capital. Under their dominion, India was happy; because men educated to trade, had not brought along with them that spirit of devastation and rapine, which commonly attends invaders.

THE Indians had scarce had time to accustom themselves to a foreign yoke, when they were once more forced to change masters. Tamerlane, who came from great Tartary, and was already famous for his cruelties and his victories, marched to the north side of Indostan, at the end of the fourteenth century, with a triumphant and indefatigable army. He secured the northern provinces

vinces in person, and abandoned the plunder of the southern parts to his lieutenants. He seemed determined to subdue all India, when on a sudden he turned his arms against Bajazet, overcame and dethroned that prince; and by the union of all his conquests, found himself master of the immense space that extends from the delicious coast of Smyrna, to the fortunate borders of the Ganges. After his death, bloody wars deprived his posterity of his rich spoils. Babar, the sixth descendant of one of his children, alone survived to preserve his name.

THAT young prince brought up in sloth and luxury, reigned in Samarcand, where his ancestor had ended his days. The Usbeck Tartars dethroned him, and constrained him to take refuge in the Cabulistan. Ranguildas, the governor of the province, received him kindly, and gave him an army.

THIS wise man addressed him in the following manner: “ It is not towards the north where vengeance
“ would naturally call thee, that thy steps must be directed. Soldiers enervated by the pleasures of India,
“ could not without temerity attack warriors famous
“ for their courage and their victories. Heaven has
“ conducted thee to the banks of the Indus, in order to
“ fix upon thy brow, one of the richest diadems of the
“ universe. Cast thine eyes on Indostan. That empire,
“ torn in pieces by the incessant wars of the Indians
“ and Patans, calls for a master. It is in those delightful
“ regions that thou must establish a new monarchy,
“ and raise thy glory equal to that of the formidable
“ Tamerlane.

THIS judicious advice made a strong impression on the mind of Babar. A plan of usurpation was traced out without loss of time, and pursued with activity and skill. Success attended the execution. The northern
provinces,

B O O K
IV.

provinces, not excepting Delhi, submitted after some resistance, and thus a fugitive monarch had the honour of laying the foundation of the power of the Mogul Tartars, which subsists to this day.

THE preservation of this conquest required a form of government. That which Babar found established in India was a kind of despotism, merely relative to civil matters, tempered by customs, forms and opinion; in a word, adapted to that mildness which these nations derive from the influence of the climate, and from the more powerful influence of religious tenets. To this peaceable constitution, Babar substituted a violent, and military despotism, such as might be expected from a conquering and barbarous nation.

RANGULDAS was long witness to the power of the new sovereign, and exulted in the success of his own councils. The recollection of the steps he had taken to place his master's son upon the throne, filled his soul with heart-felt satisfaction. One day, as he was praying in the temple, he heard a Banian, who stood by him, cry out, "O God! thou seest the sufferings of my brethren. We are a prey to a young man who considers us as his property, which he may squander and consume as he pleases. Among the many children who call upon thee from these vast regions, one oppresses all the rest: avenge us of the tyrant; avenge us of the traitors who have placed him on the throne, without examining whether he was a just man."

RANGULDAS, astonished, drew near to the Banian, and said; "O thou, who curstest my old age, hear me. If I am guilty, my conscience has misled me. When I restored the inheritance to the son of my sovereign, when I exposed my life and fortune to establish his authority, God is my witness that I thought I was
 " acting

“ acting in conformity to his wise decrees ; and at the
“ very instant when I heard thy prayer, I was again
“ thanking heaven for granting me, in my latter days,
“ those two greatest of blessings, rest and glory.”

B O O K
IV.

“ **GLORY?** cries the Banian. Learn, Ranguildas,
“ that glory belongs only to virtue, and not to actions
“ which are only splendid, without being useful to
“ mankind. Alas ! what advantages did you procure
“ to Indostan, when you crowned the son of an usurper ?
“ Had you previously examined whether he was ca-
“ pable of doing good, and whether he would have
“ the will and resolution to be just ? You say, you
“ have restored to him the inheritance of his fathers, as
“ if men could be bequeathed and possessed like lands
“ and cattle. Pretend not to glory, O Ranguildas ! or
“ if you look for gratitude, go and seek it in the heart
“ of Babar ; he owes it to you. You have bought it
“ dear enough ; the price has been the happiness of a
“ whole nation.”

BABAR, however, whilst he was bringing his subjects under the yoke of despotism, took care to limit its authority, and to draw up his institutes with so much force, that his successors, though absolute, could not possibly be unjust. The prince was to be the judge of the people and the arbiter of the state ; but his tribunal and his council were to be held in the public square. Injustice and tyranny love darkness in order to conceal themselves from their intended victims. But when the monarch's actions are to be submitted to the inspection of his subjects, it is a sign he intends them nothing but good. Openly to insult a number of men assembled, is such an outrage as even a tyrant would blush at.

THE principal support of his authority was a body of four thousand men, who stiled themselves the first slaves of the prince. Out of this body were chosen the Om-
rahs,

B O O K
IV.

rahs, that is to say, those persons who composed the emperor's councils, and on whom he bestowed lands, distinguished by great privileges. These sort of possessions always reverted to the crown. It was on this condition that all great offices were given. So true it is, that despotism enriches its slaves only to strip them.

GREAT interest, however, was made for the place of Omrah. Whoever aspired to the government of a province, made this the object of his ambition. To prevent any projects the governors might form for their own aggrandizement or independence, they always had overseers placed about them, who were not in the least subject to them, and who were commissioned to inspect the use they made of the military force they were entrusted with, to keep the conquered Indians in awe. The fortified towns were frequently in the hands of officers, who were accountable to none but the court. That suspicious court often sent for the governor, and either continued or turned him out, as it happened to suit her fluctuating policy. These vicissitudes were grown so common, that a new governor coming out of Delhi, remained upon his elephant with his face turned towards the city, *waiting, as he said, to see his successor come out.*

THE form of government, however, was not the same throughout the empire. The Moguls had left several Indian princes in possession of their sovereignties, and even with a power of transmitting them to their descendents. They governed according to the laws of the country, though accountable to a nabob appointed by the court. They were only obliged to pay tribute, and to conform to the conditions stipulated with their ancestors at the time of the conquest.

THE conquering nation must not have committed any considerable ravages, since it does not yet constitute
more

more than a tenth part of the population of India. There are a hundred millions of Indians to ten millions of Tartars. The two nations have never intermixed. None but Indians are farmers and artificers. They alone live in the country, and carry on the manufactures. The Mohammedans are to be found in the capital, at court, in great cities, in camps and armies.

B O O K
IV.

It appears, that at that period when the Moguls entered Indostan, they found no private property. All the lands belonged to the Indian princes ; and it may easily be imagined that savage conquerors sunk in ignorance and avarice, did not rectify this abuse, which is the utmost stretch of arbitrary power. That portion of the lands of the empire which the new sovereigns call their own, was divided into large governments, which were called subah-ships. The subahs, who were entrusted with the civil and military government, were also appointed to receive the revenues. This they committed to the care of the nabobs, whom they established throughout their subah-ships ; and these again trusted this business to private farmers, whose immediate business it was to cultivate the lands.

At the beginning of their year, which is in June, the nabob's officers agreed with the farmers for the price of a lease. They drew up a deed, called jama-bandi, which was deposited in the chancery of the province ; after which the farmers went, each in his own district, to look for husbandmen, and advanced them considerable sums to enable them to sow the ground. After harvest, the farmers remitted the produce of their lease to the nabob's officers. The nabob delivered it to the subah, and the subah poured it into the emperor's treasures. The leases were commonly for half the produce of the land ; the other half went to pay

BOOK
IV.

pay the charges of culture, to enrich the farmers and to feed the labourers. In this system were comprised, not only grain, which is the principal crop, but all other productions of the earth. Betel, salt, tobacco, were all farmed in the same manner.

THERE were also some custom-houses, and some duties upon the public markets ; but no poll-tax, or any tax upon industry. It had not entered the heads of those arbitrary rulers, to demand any thing of men who had nothing left them. The weaver sitting at his loom, worked without solicitude, and freely disposed of the fruit of his labour.

THIS liberty extended to every kind of moveables. They were truly the property of private persons, who were not accountable to any person for them. They could dispose of them in their life-time ; and after their death, they devolved to their offspring. The houses of artificers, the town-houses with the little gardens belonging to them, were likewise accounted private property. They were hereditary and might be sold.

IN the latter case, the buyer and seller appeared before the Cothoal. The conditions of the bargain were drawn up in writing, and the Cothoal affixed his seal to the deed, to make it authentic.

THE same formality was observed with regard to the purchase of slaves ; that is, of those unfortunate men, who, under the pressure of poverty, chose rather to be in bondage to one man who allowed them a subsistence, than to live under that general slavery, in which they had no means of procuring the necessaries of life. They then sold themselves for a sum of money, and this was transacted in presence of the Cothoal, that the master's property might not be contested.

THE

THE COTWAL was a kind of notary public. There was one in every manufacture. It was before him that the few deeds were transacted, which the nature of such a government would admit of. Another officer, called Jemidar, decided all differences that arose between man and man, and his decisions were almost always definitive, unless the cause was a very important one, or unless the aggrieved party was rich enough to pay for having it reversed at the nabob's court. The Jemidar was likewise intrusted with the police. He had a power of inflicting slight punishments; but all capital offences were reserved for the judgment of the nabob, as he alone had a right to pronounce sentence of death.

SUCH a government, which was no better than a subordinate despotism from the throne down to the meanest officer, could have no other spring than a coercive power constantly exerted. Accordingly, as soon as the rainy season was over, the monarch quitted his capital and resided in the camp. The nabobs, the rajas, and the principal officers were summoned to attend him and in this manner he proceeded through all the provinces successively in warlike pomp, which did not, however, exclude political craft. One great man was often employed to oppress another. The most odious refinement of despotism is that of dividing its slaves. These divisions were fomented by informers, publicly kept by the prince, who were continually spreading alarm and terror. These informers were always chosen among persons of the first rank. Corruption is then at its height, when power can confer nobility on what is mean.

EVERY year, the great Mogul set out on his progress, more as a conqueror than as a sovereign. He went to administer justice in the provinces, as if he was going to plunder them, and maintained his authority by a parade of military force, which makes arbitrary government a

B O O K
IV.

perpetual war. This manner of governing, though with legal forms, is very dangerous for the monarch. So long as the people feel their wrongs, only through the channel of those who are invested with his authority, they only murmur, upon the supposition that the sovereign is ignorant of them, and would not suffer any injustice if he knew it : but when the sovereign gives it a sanction by his presence and by his own decisions, then all confidence is at an end : the deception vanishes : he was a God ; now he is an idiot, or a wicked man.

NEVERTHELESS the Mogul emperors have long enjoyed the superstitious idea the nation had conceived of their sacred character. That outward pomp which captivates the people more than justice, because men are more struck with what dazzles their eyes than with what is beneficial to them ; the richness and elegance of the prince's court ; the grandeur that surrounded him in his travels ; all this kept up in the minds of the people those prejudices of servile ignorance, which trembles before the idol it has raised, The various accounts that have been transmitted to us of the luxury of the most brilliant courts in the world, are not to be compared to the ostentatious pomp of the Great Mogul when he appears before his subjects. The elephants, formerly so dreadful in war, but which are become useless masses in an army since the introduction of gunpowder ; these immense animals that are unknown in our climates, give an Asiatic monarch an air of grandeur, of which we have no conception. The people fall prostrate before their majestic sovereign, who sits exalted upon a throne of gold, all glittering with precious stones, mounted on the haughty animal, who proceeds slowly, proud to present the master of the great empire to the respect of so many slaves.

Thus

Thus by dazzling the eyes of men, or inspiring them with terror, the Moguls preserved, and even enlarged their conquests. Aurengzebe completed them by making himself master of the whole peninsula. All Indostan, excepting a little slip of land along the coast of Malabar, submitted to that superstitious and barbarous tyrant, who had imbrued his hands in the blood of his father, his brother, and his nephews.

THIS execrable despot, had made the Mogul power an object of detestation, but he supported it as long as he lived. At his death it fell, never to rise again. The uncertainty as to the right of succession was the first cause of the disturbances that arose after his demise, at the beginning of the eighteenth century. Only one law was generally acknowledged, that which enacted that the scepter should never go out of the family of Tamerlane; but every emperor was at liberty to chuse his successor, without being obliged to regard the degree of consanguinity. This indefinite right proved a source of discord. Young princes, whose birth entitled them to expect the crown, and who frequently were at the head of a province and an army, supported their claim sword in hand, and paid little regard to the will of a monarch who was no more. This happened at the death of Aurengzebe. His rich spoils were stained with blood. In these convulsions of the body politic, the springs that restrained a militia of twelve hundred thousand men were slackened. Every nabob aimed at being independent, at increasing the contributions raised upon the people, and lessening the tributes sent into the emperor's treasure. No longer was any thing regulated by law, all was carried on by caprice or disturbed by violence.

BOOK
IV.

THE education of the young princes promise no remedy for all these evils. Left to the care of women till the age of seven years, tutored afterwards in some religious principles, they went and spent in the soft indulgences of a seraglio those years of youth and activity which ought to be employed in forming the man, and instructing him in the knowledge of life. They took care to enervate them, that they might have nothing to fear from them. Conspiracies of children against their fathers were but too common; to prevent these, therefore, the children were deprived of every virtue, lest they should be capable of a crime. Hence that shocking thought of an oriental poet, that *fathers, whilst their sons are living, are fondest of their grandsons, because they love in them the enemies of their enemies.*

THE Moguls had retained nothing of those hardy manners they had brought from their mountains. Those who were advanced to high offices, or had acquired large fortunes, removed their habitations according to the seasons. In these more or less delightful retreats, they lived in houses, built only of clay or earth, but the inside breathed all the Asiatic indulgence with all the pomp of the most corrupted courts. Wherever men cannot raise a lasting fortune, nor transmit it to their posterity, they make haste to crowd all their enjoyments in the only moment they can call their own. All their pleasures and their very existence are passed away in the midst of perfumes and women.

THE Mogul empire was in this state of weakness and effeminacy when it was attacked in 1738, by the famous Thomas Kouli-khan. The innumerable militias of India were dispersed without resistance before a hundred thousand Persians, as those very Persians had formerly fled before thirty thousand Greeks trained up by Alexander

der. Thamas entered triumphantly into Delhi, received the homage of the weak Mahomed, and finding the monarch still more stupid than his subjects, he suffered him to live and returned loaded with an immense booty, the spoils of Indostan.

B O O K
VI.

MAHOMED, despised by this conqueror, was still more so by his subjects. The great men would not serve under a vassal of the king of Persia. The nabobships became independent, only paying a small tribute. In vain did the emperor declare that the nabobs should still be removeable, each of them strove with all his power to make his dignity hereditary, and the sword decided every quarrel. The subjects were constantly at war with their master, and were not considered as rebels. Whoever could afford to pay a body of troops, pretended to a sovereignty. The only formality observed was to counterfeit the emperor's sign manual in a firman or warrant of investiture. It was brought to the usurper, who received it on his knees. This farce was necessary to impose upon the people, who had still respect enough remaining for the family of Tamerlane, to choose that all authority should, at least, appear to proceed from it.

THUS did discord, ambition and anarchy rend this fine region of Indostan. Crimes could the more easily be concealed, as it was the custom of the grantees never to write but in ambiguous terms, and to employ none but obscure agents, whom they disowned when they found it necessary. Murder and poison became common crimes, which were buried in the dark recesses of those impenetrable palaces, full of Satellites, ever ready to perpetrate the blackest acts on the least signal from their master.

THE foreign troops that were called in by the contending parties, completed the miseries of this unhappy country. They carried off the riches of the

B O O K
IV.

land, or obliged the owners to bury them under ground ; so that the treasures amassed for so many ages gradually disappeared. A general dejection ensued. The grounds lay fallow, and the manufactures stood still. The people would no longer work for foreign plunderers, or domestic oppressors. Want and famine were soon felt. These calamities, which for ten years had had infested the provinces of the empire, began to visit the coast of Coromandel. The wise Nizam-Al-Muluck, Subah of the Decan, was now no more. His prudence and talents had kept that part of India which he commanded in the flourishing state. The European merchants were apprehensive that their trade might fail when it had lost that support. They saw no resource against that danger, but to have a territory of their own, large enough to contain a number of manufactures sufficient to make up their ladings.

DUPLEIX was the first who considered this as a practicable scheme. The war had brought many troops to Pondicherry, with which he hoped by rapid conquests, to procure greater advantages than the rival nations had obtained by steady conduct, and mature deliberation.

HE had long studied the character of the Moguls, their intrigues, their political interests. He had acquired such knowledge of these matters, as might have been surprizing even in a man brought up at the court of Delhi. These informations deeply combined, had convinced him that it would be in his power to attain a principal influence in the affairs of Indostan, possibly, to manage them as he pleased. His daring spirit, which prompted him to attempt more than he was able to perform, gave additional strength to his reflections. Nothing terrified him in the great part he proposed to act at the distance of six thousand leagues from his native country. In vain did his friends represent to him
the

the dangers attending such an undertaking; he considered nothing but the glorious advantage of securing to France a new dominion in the heart of Asia; to enable her by the revenues annexed to it, to defray the charges of trade and the expences of sovereignty; and even to free her from the tribute which our luxury pays to the industry of the Indians, by procuring rich and numerous cargoes, which should not be bought with any exports of money, but from the overflowings of the new revenues. Full of this great project, Dupleix eagerly seized the first opportunity that offered to put it in execution, and soon took upon him to dispose of the subahship of the Decan and the nabobship of the Carnatic, in favour of two men who were ready to give up any thing he should require.

THE subahship of the Decan is a vice-royalty, made up of several provinces, which were formerly so many independent states. It extends from Cape Comorin to the Ganges. The subah has the inspection of all the Indian princes and all the Mogul governors within his jurisdiction; and in his hands are deposited the contributions that are destined to fill the public treasure. He can compel his subalterns to attend him in all military expeditions he may think proper to make into the countries under his dominion, but he must not march them into a foreign territory, without an express order from the emperor.

THE subahship of the Decan becoming vacant in 1748, Dupleix, after a series of events and revolutions, in which the corruption of the Moguls, the weakness of the Indians, and the boldness of the French, were alike conspicuous, disposed of it towards the beginning of the year 1751, in favour of Salabatzing, a son of the late viceroy.

THIS success secured great advantages to the French settlements along the coast of Coromandel; but Pondicherry

B O O K
IV.

cherry was a place of such importance, that our people thought it deserved a particular attention. This town, which is situated in the Carnatic, has such constant and immediate connections with the nabob of that rich district, that it was thought advisable to procure the government of the province to a man whose affection and submission might be depended on. The choice fell upon Chundesaeb, a kinsman of the late nabob, well known for his intrigues, his misfortunes, his warlike exploits and his steadiness of temper.

IN return for their services, the French made him give up an immense territory. At the head of their acquisitions was the island of Seringham, formed by the two branches of the Caveri. This long and fertile island derives its name and its consequence from a Pagoda, which is fortified, as most great buildings are, which are devoted to public worship. The temple is surrounded with seven square inclosures, at the distance of three hundred and fifty feet from each other, and formed by pretty high walls, which are proportionably thick. The altar stands in the center. A single monument like this, with its fortifications and the mysteries and riches it contains, is more likely to enforce and perpetuate a religion than a multiplicity of temples and priests dispersed in different towns, with their sacrifices, ceremonies, prayers and discourses, which by their number, their frequent repetition, and their being performed in public, are apt to tire the people; excite the contempt of enlightened reason; occasion dangerous profanation, or are slighted and neglected, which the priests dread more than sacrilege itself. The priests of India, as wise as those of Egypt, suffer no stranger to penetrate into the Pagoda of Seringham. Amidst the fables with which the history of this temple is wrapped up, probably, some acute philosopher might, if he was admitted into it, trace from the emblems, the form and construction of

of the edifice, and the superstitious practices and traditions peculiar to that sacred inclosure, many sources of instruction and an insight into the history of the remotest ages. Pilgrims resort thither from all parts of Indostan, to obtain absolution of their sins, and always bring an offering proportionable to their circumstances. These gifts were still so considerable at the beginning of the present century, as to maintain forty thousand men in a life of sloth and idleness. These Bra-
mins, though under the restraints of subordination, were seldom known to quit their retirement for the more busy scenes of intrigue and politics.

INDEPENDENT of other advantages which the French enjoyed by the acquisition of Seringham, the situation gave them great influence over the neighbouring countries, and absolute command over the kingdom of Tanjour, as they could at any time stop the waters that were wanted for the culture of their rice.

THE territories of Karical and Pondicherry got an accession of ten leagues each, with fourscore manufactures. If these acquisitions were not so considerable as that of Seringham in point of influence over public affairs, they were much more so with regard to trade.

BUT this was a trifling acquisition compared to the territory they gained to the north, which comprehended the Condavir, Masulipatam, the island of Divi, and the four provinces of Mustafanagar, Elur, Rajamandry, and Chicakol. Such important concessions made the French masters of the coast for the space of six hundred miles, and procured them the best men of all Indostan. It is true they were to enjoy the four provinces no longer than they should furnish the subah with a stipulated number of troops, and maintain them at their own expence; but this agreement, which
was

B O O K
IV.

was only binding to their honesty, gave them little concern. Their ambition previously seized upon those treasures that had been heaped up in those vast regions for so many ages.

THE ambition of the French, and their projects of conquest, went much further still. They purposed to obtain a cession of the capital of the Portuguese colonies, and to seize upon the triangular space which lies between Masulipatam, Goa and Cape Comorin.

IN the mean time, till they could realize these brilliant chimeras they considered the personal honours that were lavished upon Dupleix as a presage of the greatest prosperity. It is well known that every foreign colony is more or less odious to the natives; that it is good policy to endeavour to lessen that aversion, and that the surest way to attain that end, is to conform as much as possible to the customs and manners of the country. This maxim, which is true in general, is more particularly so in countries where the people think but little, and is consequently so in India.

THE French commander, who was fond of the Asiatic pomp, had no objection to this conformity. He was overjoyed when he saw himself invested with the dignity of a nabob. That title put him upon a level with those whose protection he solicited before, and afforded him considerable opportunities to pave the way for those great revolutions he meant to bring about, in order to promote the important interests he was intrusted with. He entertained still greater hopes on being appointed governor of all the Mogul possessions, throughout an extent little inferior to the whole kingdom of France. All the revenues of those rich provinces were to be deposited in his hands, and he was accountable to none but the Subah himself.

THOUGH these agreements entered into by merchants could not be very pleasing to the court of Delhi, they

they were not much afraid of its resentment. The emperor, being in want of men and money, which the Subahs, the Nabobs, the Rajas, his meanest delegates, took upon themselves to refuse him, found himself assaulted on all sides.

THE Rajaputes, descended from those Indians whom Alexander fought, being driven out of their lands by the Moguls, took shelter in some mountains that are almost inaccessible. Continual disturbances put it out of their power to think of conquests; but in the intervals of their dissensions, they make inroads that cannot fail of harassing an empire already exhausted.

THE Patans are still more formidable enemies. Driven by the Moguls from most of the thrones of Indostan, they have taken refuge at the foot of mount Imaüs, which is a branch of the Caucasus. That situation has strangely altered their manners, and given them a fierceness of temper which they had not in a milder climate. War is their chief employment. They serve alike under the banners of Indian or Mohammedan princes; but their obedience is not equal to their valour. Whatever crime they may have been guilty of, it is dangerous to punish them, for they are so vindictive, that they will murder when they are weak, and revolt when they are strong enough to attempt a bold stroke. Since the reigning power has lost its strength, the nation has shaken off the yoke. Not many years ago, their generals carried on their ravages as far as Delhi, and dreadfully plundered that capital.

To the north of Indostan is a nation, but lately known, which is the more formidable for being a new enemy. This people, distinguished by the name of Scheiks, have found means to free themselves from the chains of despotism and superstition, though surrounded by nations of slaves. They are said to be followers of a philosopher of the Thibet, who inspired them with
some

B O O K
IV.

some notions of liberty, and taught them Theism without any mixture of superstition. They first appeared in the beginning of the present century; but were then considered rather as a sect than as a nation. During the calamities of the Mogul empire, their number increased considerably by apostates of all religions who joined with them, and sought shelter amongst them from the oppressions and fury of their tyrants. To be admitted of that society, nothing more is required than to swear implacable hatred against monarchy. It is asserted, that they have a temple with an altar, on which stands their code of laws, and next to it a sceptre and a dagger. Four old men are elected, who occasionally consult the law, which is the only supreme power this republic obeys. The Scheiks actually possess the whole province of Punjal, the greatest part of the Moultan and the Sindi, both banks of the Indus, from Cassimere to Tatta, and all the country towards Delhi, from Lahor to Serhend: they can raise an army of sixty thousand good cavalry.

BUT of all the enemies of the Mogul, none are, perhaps, so dangerous as the Marattas. This nation, of late so famous, so far as the obscurity of their origin and history will allow us to conjecture, possessed several provinces of Indostan, whence they were driven by the fear of the arms of the Moguls. They fled into the mountains which extend from Surat to Goa, and there formed several tribes, which in process of time united into one state, of which Satarah was the capital.

MOST of them carried vice and licentiousness to all the excesses which might be expected from an ignorant people, who have cast off the yoke of prejudices, without substituting wholesome laws and sound learning in their stead. Tired of laudable and peaceful labours, they thought of nothing but rapine. Yet this was confined to the plundering of a few villages, and robbing of some caravans, till the coast of Coromandel, being

being threatened by Aurengzebe, made them sensible of **B O O K**
their strength, by imploring their assistance. **IV.**

THEN it was that they were seen coming out of their hiding places in the rocks, riding on small ugly horses, but stout and accustomed to hard fare, to difficult roads and to excessive fatigue. The whole accoutrement of a Maratta horseman consisted of a turban, a girdle, and a cloak. His provisions were a little bag of rice and a leather bottle full of water. His only weapon was an excellent sabre.

NOTWITHSTANDING the assistance of these barbarians, the Indian princes were forced to bend to the yoke of Aurengzebe; but the conqueror, weary of contending with irregular troops, which were continually ravaging the newly reduced provinces, determined to conclude a treaty that would have been dishonourable had it not been dictated by necessity, which is stronger than prejudices, oaths and laws. He ceded for ever to the Marattas the fourth part of the revenues of the Decan, a subahship, formed out of all his usurpations in the peninsula.

THIS kind of tribute was regularly paid as long as Aurengzebe lived. After his death, it was granted or refused according to circumstances. The levying of it brought the Marattas in arms to the remotest parts of their mountains. Their boldness increased during the anarchy of Indostan. They have made the empire tremble; they have deposed monarchs; they have extended their frontiers; they have granted their protection to rajas and nabobs who strove to be independent, and their influence has been unbounded.

WHILST the court of Delhi was with difficulty contending with so many enemies, all conspiring to effect its ruin, M. de Buffly, who with a small corps of French troops and an army of Indians, had conducted Salabat-zing to Aurengabad his capital, laboured to establish him

B O O K

IV.

him on the throne where he had placed him. The imbecillity of the prince, the conspiracies which it occasioned, the firmans or privileges which had been granted to rivals, and other impediments obstructed but could not overturn his projects. By his means the prince reigned more peaceably under the protection of the French than could have been expected, considering the circumstances of this situation, and he preserved him in an absolute independence on the head of the empire.

CHUNDASAEB, appointed nabob of the Carnatic, was not in so happy a situation. The English, ever in opposition to the French, had stirred him up a rival, named Mohammed-Ali-Khan. The names of those two princes served as pretence for carrying on a brisk war between the two nations; they fought for glory, for wealth, to serve the passions of their respective commanders, Dupleix and Saunders. Victory declared alternately for both armies. Success would not have been so fluctuating, had the governor of Madras had more troops, or the governor of Pondicherry better officers. It was difficult to conjecture which of these two men, who were both of the same inflexible temper, would in the end get the better; but it was very certain that neither would submit, whilst he had a soldier or a rupee left. Nor was it likely that either of them would soon be reduced to this extremity, notwithstanding their amazing efforts, because they both found such resources in their hatred and their genius, as even the most able men could not have any conception of. It was evident that the disturbances in the Carnatic would not be at an end, unless peace was first settled in Europe; and it was to be feared that the flame which had been confined to India for six years might spread further. The ministers of France and England obviated this danger, by enjoining the two companies to fix certain terms of agreement.

ment. They made a conditional treaty, which began by suspending all hostilities at the commencement of the year 1755, and was to end by establishing between them a perfect equality of territory, of strength and of trade, on the coasts of Coromandel and Orixá. This stipulation had not yet received the sanction of the courts of London and Versailles, when greater interests kindled a fresh war between the two nations.

B O O K
IV.

THE news of this great contention, which began in North America, and spread all over the world, reached the East Indies at a time when the English were engaged in a very troublesome war with the Subah of Bengal. Had the French been then in the same state they were some years before, they would have united their interests with those of the natives. From narrow views and ill-judged interests, they were desirous of entering into a formal convention to secure the neutrality which had subsisted on the banks of the Ganges, during the last disturbances. Their rival amused them with the hopes of settling this regulation, so long as they wanted to keep them in a state of inaction. But as soon as their successes had enabled them to make their own terms, they attacked Chandernagore. The taking of this place was followed by the ruin of all the factories dependent upon it, and put the English in a condition to send men, money, provisions, and ships to the coast of Coromandel, where the French were just arrived with considerable land and sea-forces.

Wars between the English and French. The French lose all their settlements.

THESE forces, destined to protect the settlements of their own nation and destroy those of the enemy, were more than sufficient to answer both those purposes. The only point was to make a proper use of them; but they set out wrong, as will plainly appear from the following observations.

BEFORE the commencement of the war, the company possessed on the coasts of Coromandel and Orixá,
Masulipatam

B O O K
IV.

Masulipatam with five provinces; a large space round Pondicherry which had long had but a slip of land; a domain nearly as large in the neighbourhood of Karical; and lastly the island of Seringham. These possessions made four vast tracts of country, too far distant to support each other. They bore the marks of the wild fancy and extravagant imagination of Dupleix, who had made these acquisitions.

THE error of this policy might have been corrected. Dupleix, who made amends for his defects by his great qualities, had brought matters to that pitch that he was offered the perpetual government of the Carnatic. It was the most flourishing province in all the Mogul empire. By singular and fortunate circumstances, it had been governed successively by three nabobs of the same family, who had been equally attentive to culture and industry. General felicity had been the fruit of this mild and generous behaviour, and the public revenues had increased to twelve millions. (525,000*l.*) A sixth part would have been giving to Salabatzing, and the rest would have been for the company.

If the ministry and the direction, who alternately supported and neglected their power in India, had but been capable of a firm and settled resolution, they might have sent orders to their agent to give up all the remote conquests, and to keep to that important settlement. It was alone sufficient to give the French a firm establishment, a close and contiguous state, a prodigious quantity of merchandise, provisions for their fortified towns, and revenues capable of maintaining a body of troops, which would have put them in a condition to defy the jealousy of their neighbours, and the hatred of their enemies. Unfortunately for them, the court of Versailles ordered that the Carnatic should be refused, and affairs remained as they were before that proposal.

THE

THE situation was critical. Dupleix was, perhaps, the only man who could support himself in it, or in his stead, the famous officer who had had the greatest share of his confidence, and was best acquainted with his schemes. The contrary opinion prevailed. Dupleix had been recalled. The general, who was appointed to conduct the Indian war, imagined he must demolish a structure which ought only to have been propped up in those troublesome times, and he loudly proclaimed his intentions, and thereby added to the imprudence of his resolutions.

THAT man, whose ungovernable temper could never adapt itself to circumstances, had received from nature no qualities that fitted him for command. He was governed by a gloomy, impetuous and irregular imagination, so that there was a perpetual contrast between his conversation and his projects, and between his actions and his proceedings. Passionate, suspicious, jealous, and positive to excess, he created an universal diffidence and dejection, and excited animosities never to be suppressed. His military operations, his civil government, his political combinations, all bore evident marks of the confusion of his ideas.

THE evacuation of the island of Seringham was the principal cause of the disasters that attended the war with Tanjour. Masulipatam and the northern provinces were lost, from having given up the alliance of Salabatzing. The lesser powers of the Carnatic, who no longer respected the French for the sake of their old friend the Subah of the Decan, completed the general ruin by espousing other interests.

ON the other hand, the French squadron, though superior to the English, with which it had engaged three several times, without gaining any advantage over it, at last was obliged to leave it master of the

B O O K
IV.

seas, by which the loss of India was decided. Pondicherry, after struggling with all the horrors of famine, was forced to surrender on the 15th of January 1761. Lally had, the day before, corrected a plan of capitulation drawn up by the council; he had named deputies to carry it to the enemy's camp; and by a contradiction that was characteristic of the man, he gave the deputies a letter for the English general, in which he told him, *he would have no capitulation, because the English were that kind of people that they would not adhere to it.*

IN taking possession of the place, the conqueror caused not only the troops that had defended it, but all the French in the company's service, to be shipped off for Europe; and not satisfied even with that revenge, they destroyed Pondicherry, and made that noble city a heap of ruins.

THOSE of the inhabitants who were sent over to France, came thither enraged at having lost their fortunes, and seen their houses pulled down as they drew off from the shore. They filled Paris with their clamours; they devoted their governor to the indignation of the public; they informed against him as the author of all their miseries, and the sole cause of the loss of a flourishing colony. Lally was taken up, and tried by the parliament. He had been accused of high treason and extortion; of the first he was acquitted, and the second was never proved; yet Lally was condemned to lose his head.

LET us ask, in the name of humanity, what his crime was that it should be punishable by law? The awful sword of justice was not put into the hands of the magistrate to gratify private resentment, or even to follow the emotions of public indignation. The law alone must point out its own victims; and if the clamours of a blind and incensed multitude could sway with the judges

judges to pronounce a capital sentence, the innocent might suffer for the guilty, and there would be no safety for the citizen. In this point of view let us examine the sentence.

B O O K
IV.

It declares that Lally stands convicted of *having betrayed the interests of the king, of the state, and of the India company*. What is meant by betraying of interests? What law is there that makes it death to be guilty of this vague and indefinite crime? No such law either does or can exist. The disgrace of the prince, the contempt of the nation, public infamy, these are the proper punishments for the man, who, from incapacity or folly, has not served his country as he ought: but death, and that too upon a scaffold, is destined for crimes of a different nature.

THE sentence further declares that Lally stands convicted of *vexations, exactions, and abuse of authority*. No doubt he was guilty of these in numberless instances. He made use of violent means to procure pecuniary aids; but this money was put into the public treasure. He vexed and oppressed the citizens; but he never attempted to take away their lives, or to injure their honour. He erected gibbets in the market-place, but caused no one to be executed upon them.

In reality he was a madman of a dark and dangerous cast; an odious and despicable man; a man totally incapable of command. But he was neither guilty of public extortions, nor treason; and to use the expression of a philosopher, whose virtues do honour to humanity, *every one had a right to kill Lally except the executioner*.

THE misfortunes that befel the French in Asia had been foreseen by all considerate men, who reflected on the corruption of the nation. Their morals had degenerated chiefly in the voluptuous climate of the Indies. The wars which Dupleix had carried on in the inland

Causes of
the misfor-
tunes of
the French.

B O O K
IV.

parts had laid the foundation of many fortunes. They were increased and multiplied by the gifts which Salabatzing lavished on those who conducted him triumphant into his capital, and settled him on the throne. The officers who had not shared the dangers, the glory and the benefits of those brilliant expeditions, sought to comfort themselves under their misfortune, by reducing the sipahis to half the number they were allowed, and applying their pay to their own benefit which they could easily do, as the money went through their hands. The agents for trade, who had not these resources, accounted to the company but for a very small part of the profits made upon the European goods they sold, though they ought to have been all their own, and sold them those of India at a very high price which they ought to have had at prime cost. Those who were intrusted with the administration of some possession, farmed it themselves under Indian names, or let it for a trifle, upon receiving a handsome gratuity; they even frequently kept back the whole income of such estates, under pretence of some imaginary robbery or devastation, which had made it impossible to recover it. All undertakings, of what nature soever, were clandestinely agreed upon: they were the prey of the persons employed in them, who had found means to make themselves formidable, or of such as were most in favour, or richest. The solemn abuse that prevails in India, of giving and receiving presents on the conclusion of every treaty, had multiplied these transactions without necessity. The navigators who landed in those parts, dazzled with the fortunes which they saw increased fourfold from one voyage to another, no longer regarded their ships, but as they were a vehicle to waft them to traffic and wealth. Corruption was carried to its greatest height by people of rank, who had been disgraced

graced and ruined at home; but who, being encouraged BOOK
IV. by what they saw, and impelled by the reports that were brought to them, resolved to go themselves into Asia, in hopes of retrieving their shattered fortunes, or of being able to continue their irregularities with impunity. The personal conduct of the directors made it necessary for them to wink at all these disorders. They were accused of attending to nothing in their office but the credit, the money and the power it gave them. They were accused of giving the most important posts to their own relations, men of no morals, application or capacity. They were accused of multiplying the number of factors without necessity and without bounds to secure friends in the city and at court. Lastly, they were accused of furnishing themselves with what would have been bought cheaper and better in other places. Whether the government did not know of these excesses, or had not resolution enough to put a stop to them, they were, by their blindness or their weakness, in some measure accomplices in the ruin of the affairs of the nation in India. They might even without injustice be charged with being the principal cause of them, by sending such improper persons to manage and defend an important colony, which had no less to fear from its own corruption than from the English fleets and armies.

THE disasters of the company abroad, were still aggravated by their situation at home. It was immediately thought adviseable to lay a fair account of matters before the proprietors. This discovery alarmed them exceedingly, and gave rise to a hundred different schemes, all equally absurd. They hastily passed from one to another, but were too full of uncertainty and diffidence to adopt any. The deliberations were carried on with too much asperity, and precious moments were wasted in upbraidings and invectives. No one could foresee where

Steps
taken in
France to
re-establish
affairs in
India.

B O O K
IV.

these commotions would end, when a young merchant of quick parts, and a clear head arose. They listened to him; when the storm immediately subsided, and fresh hopes began to dawn. All were unanimous in adopting his opinion. The company, which the enemies to all exclusive privileges wished to see abolished, stood its ground; but, it was put upon a better footing; a circumstance which was absolutely necessary.

AMONGST the causes which had involved the company in the distress they were in, there was one which had long been looked upon as the source of all the rest; which was the dependence, or rather the slavery, in which the government had kept that great body for near half a century past.

EVER since the year 1723, the court enjoyed the power of choosing the directors. In 1730, a commissary from the king was introduced into the administration of the company. This put an end to all freedom of debate in their deliberations; there was no longer any connection between the administrators and the proprietors; no immediate intercourse between the administrators and government. All was directed by the influence and according to the views of the courtier. Secrecy, that dangerous veil of an arbitrary administration, concealed all their operations; and it was but in 1744, that the proprietors were called together. They were empowered to name syndics, and to call a general meeting once a year; but they were not the better informed of their affairs, nor more at liberty to direct them. The power of choosing the directors was still vested in the crown, and instead of one commissary, the king chose to have two.

THIS gave birth to two parties. Each commissary had his own scheme, his own favourites, and strove to carry his point. Hence arose divisions, intrigues, informations and animosities, which had their center at
Paris,

Paris, but spread as far as India, and there broke out in a manner so fatal to the nation.

B O O K
IV.

THE ministry, shocked at the sight of so many abuses, and weary of those endless contests, sought for a remedy. It was imagined they had hit upon one, by appointing a third commissary. This expedient only served to increase the mischief. Despotism had reigned when there was but one; division when there were two; but from the moment there were three, all was anarchy and confusion. They reduced them to two, and endeavoured to make them agree as well as they could; and even in 1764 there was but one, when the proprietors desired that the company might be reinstated in its original constitution, by restoring its freedom.

THEY ventured to tell the government, they might impute the disasters and errors of the company to themselves, as the proprietors had not been concerned in the management of their affairs: that they could never be carried on most advantageously both for them and for the state, till this could be done with freedom, and till an immediate intercourse was established between the proprietors and administrators, and between the administrators and the ministry. That whenever there was an intermediate person, the orders given on one side, and the reports made on the other, would necessarily, in passing through his hands, take a tincture of his own private views and personal will; so that he would always be in fact the true and sole administrator of the company. That such an administrator, often destitute of interest, or knowledge of business, would always be ready to sacrifice the welfare and true interest of trade, to the transient shew of his administration, and to the favour of placemen. That on the contrary, every thing might be expected from a free administration chosen by the proprietors, acting under their inspection, and in concert with them, and subject to no sort of restraint.

B O O K
IV.

THE government was sensible of the truth of these reasons. They secured the freedom of the company by a solemn edict; and the same gentleman, who by his genius had just given it a new existence, drew up a plan of temporary statutes, for a new form of administration.

THE intention of these statutes was, that the company might no longer be ruled by men, who often were not worthy to be its factors: that the government might no further interfere than to protect it: that it might be alike preserved from that slavery under which it had so long groaned, and from that spirit of mystery which had perpetuated its corruption: that there should be a constant intercourse between the managers and the proprietors: that Paris, deprived of the advantage enjoyed by the capitals of other commercial nations, of being a sea port, might acquire a knowledge of trade in free and peaceable assemblies: that the citizen might at last form just notions of that powerful tie that links all nations together, and by informing himself of the sources of public prosperity, learn to respect the merchant whose operations contribute to it, and to despise the professions that are destructive of it.

THESE wise regulations were attended with happier consequences than could possibly be expected. A great activity was observed on all sides. During the five years that the new administration lasted, the sales produced annually 18,000,000 (787,500*l.*) They had not been so considerable, even in those times which had been looked upon as the most prosperous; for, from 1726 to 1756 inclusively, they had amounted to no more than 437,376,284 livres, (19,135,212*l.* 8*s.* 6*d.*) which makes upon an average, in peace and war, 14,108,912 livres (617,264*l.* 18*s.*) a year.

It must be confessed, that since the year 1764, the profits had not been what they were before. The difference

ference between the purchase and the sale, which had been at least cent. per cent. was reduced to about seventy per cent. This diminution of profit was owing to the want of stock, to the ruin of French credit in India, and to the exorbitant power of the victorious nation that had lately subdued those distant regions. The agents for the company were reduced to procure money and goods upon the hardest terms. They drew both from the English merchants who were endeavouring to bring over to Europe the immense fortunes they had amassed in Asia.

WITH these impediments, and under these disagreeable circumstances, was the exclusive privilege of trading to the East Indies exercised, when the government thought proper to suspend it. Let us now examine what was then the situation of the company.

BEFORE 1764, the number of shares was 50,268. At that period the ministry, who, in 1746, 1747, and 1748, had given up to the proprietors the produce of the shares and bonds which were their property, relinquished in their favour the shares and bonds themselves, to the number of 11,835 together, to indemnify them for the expences they had incurred during the last war. These shares having been cancelled, there remained but 38,432.

THE wants of the company obliged them to make a call of 400 livres (17*l.* 10*s.*) per share. Upwards of 34,000 shares paid the call. The 4,000 that did not, were reduced, by the terms of the edict which empowered the company to make it, to five eighths of the value of those which had paid; so that by this operation, the number was reduced to 36,920 whole shares and six eighths.

THE dividends on the shares of the French company as of all other companies, have varied according to circumstances. In 1722 it was 100 livres, (4*l.* 7*s.* 6*d.*)

From

These measures are insufficient.

The trade of individuals is substituted to that of the company.

State of that society at the time of its decay.

BOOK
IV.

From 1723 to 1745 it was 150, (6*l.* 11*s.* 3*d.*) From 1746 to 1749 it was 70, (3*l.* 1*s.* 3*d.*) From 1750 to 1758 it was 80, (3*l.* 10*s.*) From 1759 to 1763 it was 40, (1*l.* 15*s.*) and in 1764 it was but 20 livres, (17*s.* 6*d.*) This shews that the dividend, and the value of the stock, which always kept pace with it, was necessarily affected by the hazards of trade, and the fluctuation of popular opinion. Hence that prodigious rise and fall in the price of the shares, which fell in one year from two hundred (167*l.* 18*s.*) to one hundred pistoles ; (83*l.* 15*s.*) [Each pistole is reckoned at 16*s.* 9*d.*] then rose to 1800 livres, (78*l.* 15*s.*) and soon after fell to 700, (30*l.* 12*s.* 6*d.*) Yet in the midst of these revolutions, the stock of the company was much the same. But this is a calculation which the public never makes. It is determined by the circumstance of the present moment, and always trusts or fears beyond the truth.

THE proprietors, who were exposed to see their fortunes reduced to half in one day, would no longer run the risques of such a situation. In laying in a fresh stock to trade with, they desired to secure the remainder of their fortune in such a manner, as that the shares should at all times bear a settled price, and an interest that could be depended on. The government settled this matter by an edict issued out in August 1764. The XIIIth article expressly says, that to secure to the proprietors a settled income independent of all future events of trade, a sufficient fund should be detached from that portion of the contract which was then free, to secure to every share a capital of 1600 livres, (70*l.*) and an interest of 80 livres, (3*l.* 10*s.*) and that *neither that interest nor that capital should, in any case or for any cause whatsoever, be answerable for such engagements as the company might enter into after the date of this edict.*

THE

THE company therefore owed for 36,920 shares and six eighths, at the rate of 80 livres (3*l.* 10*s.*) per share, an interest amounting to 2,953,660 livres, (129,222*l.* 12*s.* 6*d.*) They paid for their several contracts 2,727,506 livres, (119,328*l.* 7*s.* 9*d.*) which made in all 5,681,166 livres (248,551*l.* 0*s.* 3*d.*) of perpetual annuities. The life annuities amounted to 3,074,899 livres, (134,526*l.* 16*s.* 7*d.* $\frac{1}{2}$.) The sum total of all these annual payments was then 8,756,065 livres (383,577*l.* 16*s.* 10*d.* $\frac{1}{2}$.) How the company raised money to answer these several demands shall be the subject of our next inquiry.

THAT great body, far too deeply concerned in Law's scheme, had advanced him 90,000,000 of livres, (3,937,500*l.*) When the catastrophe happened, the government made over to them in payment the exclusive sale of tobacco, which then brought in three millions (131,250*l.*) a year; but they were left without a capital to trade upon. This kept them in a state of inaction till 1726, when the government came to their succour. The rapid progress they made astonished all nations, and they bid fair for surpassing the most flourishing companies. This opinion, which was the general one, emboldened the proprietors to complain that their dividends were not doubled and trebled. They thought, and so did the public, that the king's treasury was enriched with their spoils. The profound secrecy with which every thing was carried on, greatly strengthened these surmises.

THE breaking out of the war between France and England in 1744 dissolved the charm. The ministry, too much embarrassed in their own affairs to think of doing any thing for the company, left it to shift for itself. Then, indeed, every body was surprized to see that Colossus ready to fall, which had never yet met with any shock, and whose greatest misfortune had been the

B O O K
IV.

the loss of two ships of a moderate value. The company was undone, had not the government in 1747, declared itself their debtor in the sum of 180,000,000 of livres, (7,875,000) and engaged to pay them the interest of that sum for ever, at five per cent. This engagement, which was in lieu of the exclusive sale of tobacco, is so important a point in history, that it would not be sufficiently elucidated, if we did not take up the matter further back.

THE use of tobacco, which was introduced into Europe after the discovery of America, made no very rapid progress in France. The consumption was so small, that the first lease, which began the first of December 1674, and ended the first of October 1680, brought in but 500,000 livres (21,875*l.*) to the government the two first years, and 600,000 (26,250*l.*) the four last; though the right of stamping pewter had been joined to this privilege. This farm was confounded with the general farms till 1691, when it still remained united to them, and was rated at 1,500,000 livres (65,625*l.*) a year. In 1697, it became once more a separate farm on the same terms, till 1709, when it was increased to 100,000 livres (4,375*l.*) more, till 1715. It was then renewed for three years only. The two first years were to bring in 2,000,000 of livres, (87,500*l.*) and the last 200,000 (8,750*l.*) more. At that period, it was increased to 4,020,000 livres (175,875*l.*) a year; but this lasted only from the first of October 1718 to the first of June 1720. Tobacco then became a mercantile commodity all over the kingdom, and continued so till the first of September 1721. During this short interval, private people laid in such a stock, that when it came to be farmed out again, it could be done but at a moderate price. This lease, which was the eleventh, was for nine years, to commence on the first of September,

tember 1721, to the first of October 1730. The farmers were to give 1,300,000 livres (56,875*l.*) for the first thirteen months; 1,800,000 (78,750*l.*) for each of the last six years; 2,560,000 (112,000*l.*) for the third, and 3,000,000 (131,250*l.*) for each of the last six years. This agreement did not take place, because the India company, to whom the government owed 90,000,000 livres, (3,937,500*l.*) which had been deposited in the royal treasury in 1717, demanded the farm of tobacco, which had then been made over to them for ever, and which, from particular events, they had never yet enjoyed. Their petition was found to be just, and they obtained what they so warmly solicited.

THEY managed this farm themselves, from the first of October 1723, to the last day of September 1730. The produce during this space was 50,083,967 livres 11 sous 9 deniers; (about 2,191,173*l.* 11*s.* 7*d.*) which made 7,154,852*l.* 10*s.* 3*d.* (about 313,024*l.* 16*s.*) a year; out of this must be deducted yearly 3,042,963*l.* 19*s.* 6*d.* (about 133,129*l.* 12*s.* 7*d.* $\frac{1}{2}$.) for the charges of preparing the land.

THESE charges were so enormous, that it was thought the business which grew every day more considerable, would be better in the hands of the farmers-general, who would do it at less expence by means of the clerks they employed for other purposes. The company accordingly leased it for eight years. They engaged to pay 7,500,000 livres (328,125*l.*) for each of the first four years, and 8,000,000 (350,000*l.*) for each of the four last. This lease went on upon the same footing till the month of June 1747, and the king promised to account with the company for the increase of the produce, as soon as it should be known and ascertained.

AT this period, the king united the tobacco farm to his other duties, creating and alienating, for the use of the

B O O K
IV.

the company, an annuity of nine millions (393,750*l.*) for ever, upon a capital of a hundred and eighty millions, (7,875,000*l.*) This large compensation was thought to be due to them for the old debt of ninety millions; (3,937,500*l.*) for the overplus of the profit upon the tobacco farm, from 1738 to 1747; and to indemnify them for the expences of the negro trade, the losses they had sustained during the war, their giving up the exclusive privilege of the trade to St. Domingo, and the loss of the ton duty, which had been suspended ever since the year 1731. Yet this compensation has been thought inadequate by some of the proprietors, who have found out that ever since the year 1758, upwards of 11,700,000 pound weight of tobacco have been annually sold in the kingdom at three livres (2*s.* 7*d.* $\frac{1}{2}$) a pound, though it had been bought for twenty-seven livres (1*l.* 3*s.* 7*d.* $\frac{1}{2}$) a hundred.

THE nation is of a very different opinion. The managers, who prevailed upon government to acknowledge so large a debt, have been accused of sacrificing the interest of the public to that of a private society. A writer who in our days should examine whether this accusation was well or ill grounded, would pass for an idle man. Such a discussion would be altogether needless, since every circumstance of this transaction has been made public. It will be sufficient to observe, that it was with the nine millions (393,750*l.*) a year improperly sacrificed by the state, that the company was enabled to answer the demand of 8,756,065 livres (383,077*l.* 16*s.* 10*d.* $\frac{1}{2}$) with which it was charged, so that the overplus that remained to them amounted to about 244,000 (10,675*l.*) of net revenue.

It is true they had private simple contract debts to the amount of 74,505,000 livres, (3,259,593*l.* 15*s.*) but they had in trade, or in debts to call in, 70,733,000 livres;

livres; (3,094,568*l.* 15*s.*) a sum nearly sufficient to balance their accounts.

B O O K
IV.

THEIR only riches consisted therefore in moveable and immoveable effects, to the amount of about twenty millions (875,000*l.*) and the prospect of the extinction of the life annuities, which in time must bring in three millions (131,250*l.*) a year. The actual value of this article might be reckoned equal to a clear capital of thirty millions (1,312,500*l.*)

INDEPENDENT of these properties, the company enjoyed some very beneficial rights. The exclusive sale of coffee had been granted them; but as public utility required that an exception should be made in 1736, with regard to coffee imported from the American islands, they had, by way of compensation, a yearly sum of 50,000 livres, (2,187*l.* 10*s.*) which was always duly paid. Even the privilege for Mocha coffee was cancelled in 1767, the government having allowed the importation of that of the Levant. The company obtained no indemnification on this account.

THEY had met with a worse disappointment the year before. In 1720 they had been invested with the sole right of transporting slaves to the American colonies. This system soon appeared to be erroneous, and it was agreed that all the merchants in the kingdom should be at liberty to carry on the slave trade, upon condition of adding a pistole (16*s.* 9*d.*) per head to the thirteen livres (11*s.* 4*d.* $\frac{1}{2}$) granted out of the royal treasury. Supposing that 15,000 negroes were disposed of every year in the French islands, this made a clear income of 345,000 livres (15,093*l.* 15*s.*) for the company. This bounty, which was allowed them for a trade they were not concerned in, was taken off in 1767, and was made up to them by a more reasonable equivalent.

AT

BOOK
IV.

AT the first formation of the Company they had obtained a gratuity of 50 livres (2*l.* 3*s.* 9*d.*) upon every ton of goods they should export, and of 75 (3*l.* 5*s.* 7*d.* $\frac{1}{2}$) upon every ton they should import from abroad. The ministry, upon the suppression of the bounty upon negroes, increased the gratuity upon every ton exported to 75 livres, (3*l.* 5*s.* 7*d.* $\frac{1}{2}$) and upon every ton imported to 80, (3*l.* 10*s.*) If we rate both at 6000 tons a year, we shall find a produce of above a million (43,750*l.*) for the Company, including the 50,000 livres (2,187*l.* 10*s.*) they received upon the coffee.

WHILST the income of the company remained entire, their expences were lessened. By the edict of 1764 the islands of France and Bourbon were become the property of the government, who engaged to fortify and defend them. By this arrangement the company was exonerated of two millions (87,500*l.*) a year, without the least detriment to the exclusive trade they enjoyed in those two islands.

WITH all these seemingly prosperous circumstances the debts of the company were daily increasing. This must inevitably happen, as their income, together with the profits of their trade, was not sufficient to defray the expences of carrying it on, and the charges annexed to the crown, which amounted together to eight millions (350,000*l.*) a year. They might even exceed this, as by their nature they were susceptible of endless increase, according to the political views of government, which is the sole judge of their importance and necessity.

IN so unfortunate a situation, the company could not possibly support itself without the assistance of government. But for some time past the council of Lewis XV. had appeared to be very indifferent about the existence of that great body. At last an arret of council was issued,

issued, bearing date the 13th of August 1769, by which the king suspended the exclusive privilege of the India Company, and granted to all his subjects the liberty of navigating and trading beyond the Cape of Good Hope. However, in granting this unexpected freedom, the government thought proper to lay it under some restraint. The arret which opens this new track to private navigators, requires them to provide themselves with passports, which are to be freely given by the administrators of the India Company. It obliges them to make their returns to Port l'Orient, and nowhere else. It establishes a duty by way of indulto on all goods imported from India; which, by a second arret of council issued on the sixth of September following, was fixed at five per cent. on all goods coming from India and China, and at three per cent. upon all commodities of the growth of the islands of France and Bourbon.

THE arret of the 13th of August, by only suspending the privilege of the company, seemed to leave to the proprietors the power of resuming it; but as they saw no probability of ever being able to do this, they wisely determined to liquidate their concerns in such a manner as to secure their creditors, and the remains of their own fortunes.

FOR this purpose they offered to give up to the king all the company's ships, thirty in number; all the warehouses and other buildings belonging to them at Port l'Orient and in India; the property of their factories with the manufactures dependent on them; all naval and military stores; and lastly, eight hundred slaves which they had reserved in the islands. All these articles were valued at thirty millions (1,312,500*l.*) by the proprietors, who at the same time demanded the payment of 16,500,000 livres (721,875*l.*) which were due to them by the government.

B O O K
IV.

THE king agreed to the proposal, but chose to lessen the purchase money: not that the effects were not of still greater value whilst they remained in the hands of the company; but being made over to the government, they brought an additional incumbrance upon it. So that instead of 46,500,000 livres (2,039,375*l.*) which the proprietors demanded, the prince, to clear all accounts with them, created a perpetual annuity for their benefit of 1,200,000 livres, (52,500*l.*) upon a capital of thirty millions. (1,312,500*l.*) The edict for that purpose was issued out in January 1770.

THIS new contract the company mortgaged for twelve millions (525,000*l.*) which they borrowed upon life annuities at ten per cent. and by a lottery in February following. This money was borrowed to enable them to fulfil the engagements they had entered into when they undertook the last expeditions; but it was insufficient: so that finding themselves utterly unable to raise more, the proprietors, at their meeting on the 7th. April 1770, made over their whole property to the king, except the capital that had been mortgaged to the shares.

THE principal articles comprized in this cession, consisted in the abolition of 4,200,000 livres (183,750*l.*) in life annuities; of that part of the contract of nine millions (393,750*l.*) which exceeded the capital of the shares; of the hotel of Paris; of the India goods expected home in 1770 and 1771, supposed to be worth 26,000,000 of livres; (1,137,500*l.*) and lastly, of three or four millions (about 153,000*l.* upon an average) of debts to be called in, from debtors who were mostly solvent, in India, in the isles of France and Bourbon, and at San Domingo. The proprietors engaged at the same time to furnish the king with a sum of 14,768,000 livres, (646,100*l.*) to be raised by way of a call, which was fixed at 400 livres (17*l.* 10*s.*) per share. The government,

vernment, in accepting these several offers, engaged on their part to pay all the perpetual and life annuities which the company was bound to pay ; all their other engagements, amounting to about forty-five millions ; (1,968,750*l.*) all the pensions and half-pays granted by the company, amounting to 80,000 livres (3,500.) a year ; lastly, to stand to all the charges and risques attending a liquidation that must necessarily last some years.

THE capital of each share, which by the edict of August 1764, had been fixed at 1600 livres, (70*l.*) bearing an interest of 80 livres, (3*l.* 10*s.*) the king now raised to 2500 livres, (109*l.* 7*s.* 6*d.*) bearing interest 125 livres (5*l.* 9*s.* 4*d.* $\frac{1}{2}$.) a year. The new interest was made subject to a deduction of a tenth, and it was agreed that this deduction should be annually appropriated to the paying off of the shares by lot, on the footing of their capital of 2500 livres ; (109*l.* 7*s.* 6*d.*) so that the interest on the shares thus paid off, would increase the sinking fund till the whole of the shares was finally paid off.

THESE respective conditions are recorded in an arret of council, of the 8th of April, including a report of the deliberations held the day before in a general meeting of the proprietors, and confirmed by letters patent bearing date the 22d of the same month. In consequence of these agreements, the call has been paid, the drawing for the reimbursement of the shares, to the number of two hundred and twenty, has been made every year, and the simple contract debts of the company have been duly paid when their time was elapsed.

FROM all these particulars, it is no easy matter to frame an idea of the actual mode of existence of the India company, and of the legal state of the trade they carried on. This company which at present has no pro-

B O O K
IV.

perty, no business, no object, cannot however be considered as being utterly destroyed, since the proprietors have reserved the joint stock that was mortgaged for their shares; and that they have a common chest, and deputies to superintend their interests. On the other hand, their charter has been suspended; but it is only suspended, and is not included amongst the articles which the company has ceded to the king. The law by which it was granted is still in force; and the ships that are fitted out for the Indian seas, cannot sail without a permission in the name of the company. So that the freedom which has been granted is but a precarious one, and if the proprietors should offer to resume their trade, with a sufficient stock to carry it on, they would have an undoubted right to do it, without any new law to empower them. But except this nominal right, which in fact is much the same as if it did not exist, as the proprietors are not in a condition to exercise it, all their other rights, properties and factories, are now in the hands of government. Let us take a cursory view of those settlements, beginning by Malabar.

Present
 state of the
 French up-
 on the
 coast of
 Malabar.

BETWEEN the provinces of Canara and Calicut, lies a district which extends eighteen leagues along the coast, and is at most seven or eight leagues broad. The country, which is very rugged, is covered with pepper and cocoa-trees. It is divided into several lesser districts, in subjection to as many Indian lords, who are all vassals to the house of Colakry. The head of this Bramin family is always to confine his whole attention to what concerns the worship of the gods. It would be beneath his dignity to stoop to profane matters, and the reins of government are given to his nearest relation. The country is divided into two provinces. In the largest, called the Irouvenate, is the English factory of Telli-cherry, and the Dutch factory of Cananor. Those

two

two nations share the pepper between them, but the English commonly carry off 1,500,000 pound weight, and there seldom remains more than 500,000 for the Dutch.

B O O K
IV.

THE second province, called Cartenate, extends but five leagues along the coast. Here the French were called in by the natives in 1722, with a view to make use of them against the English; but an accommodation having taken place, made their assistance needless, they were forced to relinquish a post where they promised themselves some advantages. Fired with resentment and ambition, they returned in greater numbers in 1725, and established themselves sword in hand on the mouth of the river Mahé. Notwithstanding this act of violence, they obtained of the prince who governed that district, an exclusive right to the pepper trade. This favour was so great an advantage to them, that it gave rise to a colony of 6,000 Indians who cultivated 6,350 cocoa-trees, 3,967 areka and 7,762 pepper-trees. Such was the state of this settlement, when the English made themselves masters of it in 1760.

THE same spirit of destruction that they had shewn in all their conquests, influenced them at Mahé. Their intention was to pull down the houses, and disperse the inhabitants. The sovereign of that country dissuaded them from their purpose. All was spared, except the fortifications. When the French returned to their factory, they found every thing much in the same condition as they had left it. It is their interest to secure the advantages they enjoy, and it is no less incumbent on them to endeavour to improve them.

MAHE' is surrounded with hills, on which were erected five forts, which no longer exist. These works were by far too numerous, though some precautions are absolutely necessary. It is not proper to be perpetually

B O O K
IV.

exposed to the depredations of the Nayers, who have formerly attempted to plunder and destroy the colony, and who might possibly have still the same intentions, in order to put themselves under the protection of the English at Tellichery, which is but three leagues distant from Mahé.

BESIDES the posts requisite for internal safety, it is highly proper to fortify the entrance of the river. Since the Marattas have got sea-ports of their own, they infest the sea about Malabar with their piracies. Those banditti even attempt to land, wherever they think there is some booty to be got. Mahé would not be secure from their attacks, if there were money or goods to tempt them, unless they were well guarded.

THE French might make themselves ample amends for any expences they should incur, if they did but carry on their trade with spirit and skill. Their factory is the best situated for the pepper trade; and the country would afford 2,500,000 pound weight of that commodity. What could not be consumed in Europe might be sold in China, on the Red Sea, and at Bengal. A pound of pepper would stand them in twelve sous, (about 6d. $\frac{1}{4}$.) and they would sell it for twenty-five or thirty. (about 1l. 4s. on an average.)

THIS advantage, considerable as it is, would be increased by the profits upon European goods which would be carried over to Mahé. Those who are best acquainted with that factory, are of opinion that it will be an easy matter to dispose of 400,000 weight of iron, 200,000 of lead, 25,000 of copper, 2000 firelocks, 20,000 weight of gunpowder, 50 anchors or grapplings, 50 bales of cloth, 50,000 ells of sail cloth, a good quantity of quicksilver, and about 200 casks of wine or brandy, for the French settled in the colony, or for the English in the neighbourhood. These several articles together

together would fetch at least 384,000 livres, (16,800*l*.) of which 153,600 (6,720*l*.) would be clear gain, allowing the profit to be 40 per cent. Another advantage attending this circulation is, that there will always be a stock in the factory, which will enable them to purchase the productions of the country in the seasons of the year when they are cheapest.

THE greatest obstacle to trade is the custom-house established in the colony. Half the duties belong to the sovereign of that country, and this has always been a subject of contention. The English of Tellichery, who laboured under the same grievance, have found means to prevent all disputes about these duties, by paying a certain yearly sum as an equivalent. We might do the same, but we cannot expect that the prince would agree to it, unless we previously pay him the sums he has lent, and no longer refuse him the tribute stipulated for the benefit of living peaceably upon his territories. Matters cannot be so easily adjusted at Bengal.

FRANCE has engaged by the treaty of 1763, to erect no fortifications and keep no troops in that rich and extensive country. The English, who are sovereigns there, will never suffer us to deviate from what they have required. So that Chandernagore, which before the last war reckoned 60,000 souls, and has now but 24,000, is and always will be entirely an open place.

Present
state of the
French at
Bengal.

To this misfortune of a precarious situation, may be added injuries and hardships of every kind. Not satisfied with the possession of unlimited authority, the English have been guilty of the most scandalous enormities. They have insulted the French in their work-shops; decoyed their workmen, cut the linens off of the looms; insisted that the manufacturers should do no work but for them in the three best months of the year, and that their own

B O O K
IV.

ladings should be picked out and completed, before any thing was removed out of the work-shops. The scheme which the French and Dutch together had contrived of making an exact estimate of the number of weavers, taking only half between them, and leaving the rest to the English, has been considered as an insult. That domineering nation have gone so far as to declare that they would have their factors buy the goods in Chandernagore; and our people have been forced to submit to this hardship, or they would have been excluded from every market in Bengal. In a word, they have so much abused the unjust right of victory, that a philosopher might be tempted to wish for the ruin of their liberty, were not the people a thousand times more oppressive and cruel under the government of one man, than in the possessions of a government tempered by the influence of many.

As long as things remain upon the present footing in that opulent part of Asia, the French will meet with perpetual hardships and mortifications, and therefore no solid and lasting advantage can accrue to trade. We should be rescued from this disgrace, if we could exchange Chandernagore for Chattigan.

CHATTIGAN is situated on the confines of Aracan. The Portuguese, who in the days of their prosperity, endeavoured to get all the important posts in India into their own hands, made a considerable settlement at that place. The colonists shook off the yoke of their native country, when it became a part of the Spanish dominions, chusing rather to turn pirates than to be slaves. They long infested the neighbouring coasts and seas with their depredations. At last they were attacked by the Moguls, who raised a colony upon their ruins, powerful enough to prevent any inroads which the people of Aracan and Pegu might be tempted to make into Bengal.

gal. This place then sank into obscurity, till 1758, **BOOK IV.**
when the English arrived and settled there.

THE climate is healthy, the waters excellent, and provisions plenty: the landing is easy, and the anchorage safe. The continent and the island of Sandiva make a tolerable harbour. The rivets Barramputri and Etki, which are branches of the Ganges, or at least communicate with it, greatly facilitate commercial operations. If Chattigan is further off of Patna, Cassimbazar, and some other markets, than the European colonies on the river Hugly, it is nearer Jogdia, Dacca, and all the manufactures of the lower river. It is a matter of no consequence whether ships of burden can or cannot enter the Ganges on that side, as the inland navigation is never carried on but with boats.

THOUGH the knowledge they had of these advantages had determined the English to seize upon Chattigan, we are apt to think they would have given it up at the last peace, to get rid of the French, and remove them from a place which lies too near them, and which long habit has endeared to them. We even apprehended that at Chattigan, they would have desisted from those irksome conditions they required at Chandernagore, which imprint a reproach upon the possessors, more detrimental than it is possible for mere speculators in commerce to conceive. Trade is a free profession. The sea, the voyages, the risque, and the vicissitudes of fortune, all inspire a love of independence. This is the very soul and life of trade, which when shackled droops and dies.

THE present opportunity is perhaps a favourable one to think of the exchange we propose. The fortifications which the English had begun to erect at Chattigan, having been thrown down by repeated earthquakes, and they seem to have taken a dislike to the place. As to
the

B O O K
IV.

the French, this inconvenience, great as it is, would be preferable to that of living in a defenceless town. It is better to strive against nature than against men, and to be exposed to the shocks of the earth than to the insults of nations. Fortunately for the French, though they are restrained at Bengal, they meet with some amends, in enjoying a better situation on the coast of Coromandel.

Present
situation of
the French
upon the
coast of
Coroman-
del.

To the north of that very extensive coast, they possess Yanam, in the province of Rajahmandry. This factory, which has no land belonging to it, and is situated nine miles from the mouth of the river Ingerom, was formerly a very flourishing one. From mistaken motives it was neglected about the year 1748. It would, however, afford goods to the value of 4 or 500,000 livres, (about 19,700*l.* on an average.) as the cotton manufactures are very considerable in that neighbourhood, and the cottons remarkably fine and good. It has been found by experience to be a good market for disposing of European cloth. The trade of this place would be more lucrative, if they were not obliged to share the profit with the English, who have a small settlement within two miles of the French.

THE competition is much more detrimental to their interest at Masulipatam. The French, who formerly were masters of the whole town, but have nothing left now except the lodge they had before 1749, cannot pretend to vie with the English, who make them pay duty for all their imports and exports, and enjoy besides all the favour in their own trade which sovereignty can command. This being the case, the French confine their dealings to the purchase of some fine handkerchiefs, and other calicoes to the value of 150,000 livres. (6,562*l.* 10*s.*) It is far otherwise at Karical.

THAT

THAT town, situated in the kingdom of Tanjour, on one of the branches of the Coleroon, which will bear ships of 150 tons burden, was ceded to the company in 1738, by a dethroned king, who was in want of protection. Having been restored before he had fulfilled his engagements, he retracted the gift he had made. A nabob attacked the place with his army, and in 1739 gave it up to the French who were in friendship with him. Soon after this the ungrateful and perfidious prince was strangled by the intrigues of his uncles; and his successor, who had inherited his enemies with his throne, being desirous of obtaining the friendship of a powerful nation, confirmed them in their possession. The English took the place in 1760, and blew up the fortifications. It was afterwards restored to the French, who returned thither in 1765.

IN its present state, Karical is an open place, which may contain 15,000 inhabitants, most of them employed in weaving ordinary handkerchiefs, and cottons for the wear of the natives. The territory belonging to it, which has been considerably increased by the concessions which the king of Tanjour made in 1749, is now once more what it was at first, two leagues in length, and one league in the broadest part. It is covered with fifteen villages, of which only one deserves our notice; it is called Tirumale-Rayenpatnam, and contains no less than 25,000 souls. They weave and paint tolerably fine Persians, fit for Batavia and the Philippine islands. The Coolies and Mohammedans have small vessels, with which they trade to Ceylon, and along the coast.

FRANCE may draw annually from this settlement, two hundred bales of cottons or handkerchiefs fit for Europe, and a large quantity of rice for the subsistence of her other colonies.

ALL

B O O K
IV.

ALL goods bought at Karical, Yanam and Masulipatam, are carried to Pondicherry, our chief settlement in India.

THIS town, which rose from such small beginnings, in time became a great, powerful and famous city. The streets, which are all strait, and most of them broad, were lined with two rows of trees, which kept them cool, even in the heat of the day. The most remarkable public edifices are a mosque, two Pagodas, two churches and the governor's house, which is reckoned to be the most magnificent building in the east. They had erected a small citadel in the year 1704, but it is of no use, since they have been allowed to build houses all round it. To supply the loss of this defence, three sides of the town had been fortified with a rampart, a ditch, bastions, and a glacis which was unfinished in some places. The road was defended by some batteries judiciously placed.

THE town, which was a full league in circumference, contained 70,000 inhabitants, of which 4000 were Europeans, Mestees, or Topasses. There were at most 10,000 Mohammedans; the rest were Indians, 15,000 of which were christians, and the others of seventeen or eighteen different casts or tribes. Three villages dependent on the town, might contain 10,000 souls.

SUCH was the state of the colony, when the English made themselves masters of it in the beginning of the year 1761, utterly destroyed it, and turned out the inhabitants. Others may, perhaps, examine whether the barbarous right of war could justify such enormities. Let us turn away our eyes from so many cruelties, committed by a free, magnanimous, and enlightened nation, and only dwell upon the resolution France has taken to restore

restore Pondicherry to its former splendor. Every thing concurs to justify the wisdom of this choice.

B O O K
IV.

THIS town, like all others on the coast of Coromandel, has no harbour, but it has a much more commodious road. The ships can anchor close to the shore, under the cannon of the fortifications. Its territory, which is three leagues long and one league broad, is nothing but barren sand by the sea side, but the greatest part is fit for the culture of rice, vegetables, and a root called chaya, which is used for dying. Two small rivers that cross the country, but are not navigable, afford excellent water for the same purpose, particularly for the blue dye. Three miles to the north-east of the town is a hill, which rises a hundred toises above the level of the sea, and is a guide to ships at the distance of seven or eight leagues, which is an inestimable advantage upon so flat a coast. At the top of this hill is a very large pool of water, that has been collecting for ages, and after refreshing and fertilizing a spacious territory, flows down to water the grounds about Pondicherry. Lastly, the colony is favourably situated for the reception of provisions and merchandises from the Carnatic, the kingdoms of Mysore, and Tanjour.

SUCH were the important reasons which determined France to rebuild Pondicherry. As soon as her agents appeared on the 11th of April 1765, the unfortunate Indians, who had been dispersed by the calamities of war, flocked thither in great numbers. By the beginning of the year 1770, there were 27,000 who had rebuilt their ruined houses. They are all brought up in the notion that no man can be happy who does not die in the very place where he first saw the light. This prejudice, so pleasing to them, and which may be turned to good account, will no doubt bring them all home again,

BOOK
IV.

again, as soon as there is room for them, and the town is inclosed. The weavers, the dyers, the painters, the merchants, those who have some property to preserve, only wait for this security to follow their inclination.

IN their present state, the French factories in India are very expensive, and the returns from them inconsiderable. Unfortunately this is not compensated by the islands of France and Bourbon, which have not attained to that degree of prosperity we had reason to expect.

Present
situation
of the
French in
the isle of
France.

THE latter of these islands was much extolled, but more speculation than industry was bestowed upon it, and the owners lost their time in conjectures concerning the use it might be put to.

SOME were inclined to make a mart of it, where all Indian goods should center. They were to be brought thither on Indian bottoms, and then shipped on board the French vessels, which were never to go any further. They found a double advantage in this scheme; first, in the lessening of expences, as both the pay and the maintenance of Indian sailors is very trifling; and secondly, in the preservation of the ships crews, which are often destroyed by too long a voyage, and still more frequently by the climate, especially at Bengal and in Arabia. This system, which ought, perhaps, to have been adopted, was considered as impracticable, on account of the supposed necessity of exhibiting a formidable flag on the seas of Asia, to prevent or check the insults that are often committed in those parts.

OTHERS were of opinion that the inhabitants of the isle of France should be allowed to trade to India, which they had never yet been suffered to do. The supporters of this system maintained, that the proposed freedom would prove an abundant source of wealth to the colony,
and

and consequently to the mother country. They might be in the right, but the trials that have been made have not been successful; and without examining whether this innovation has been judiciously conducted, it was decided that the island should be entirely confined to agriculture.

THIS new regulation occasioned fresh mistakes. Men were sent from Europe to the colony, who neither understood husbandry nor were accustomed to labour. The lands were distributed at a venture, and without distinguishing what was to be cleared from what did not want it. Money was advanced to the planters, not in proportion to their industry, but to the interest they could make with administration. The company, who got cent. per cent. upon the commodities the colony drew from Europe, and fifty per cent. upon those that were sent in from India, required that the produce of the country should be delivered into their warehouses as a very low price. The oppression of monopoly was aggravated by the tyranny of endless and needless services. To complete the misfortunes of the colony, the company, who had kept all the power in their own hands, broke the engagements they had entered into with their subjects, or rather with their slaves.

UNDER such a government, no improvements could be expected. Nothing was carried on with steadiness. Cotton, indigo, sugar, annatto, pepper, tea, cocoa; every thing was tried, but so carelessly that no advantage was procured from them. In pursuing chimerical projects the essential cultures were neglected. Though in the year 1765 there were in the colony 1469 white people, besides the troops; 1587 Indians or free negroes; 11881 slaves; their productions did not amount to more than 320,650 pounds weight of wheat, 47,430 pounds of rice, 1,570,040 pounds of maize, 142,700 pounds

B O O K
IV.

pounds of kidney-beans, 135,500 pounds of oats. Those who had an opportunity of seeing and observing the agriculture of the Isle of France, found it little better than what they had seen amongst the savages.

SOME good alterations have been made in the colony since it is in the hands of government. The culture of coffee has been introduced there, as it had long been at Bourbon. It thrives so well, that they do not despair of gathering six or seven millions weight in time, provided a wise administration will supply them with the means of improving this culture; for without such helps, no colony can possibly prosper. To these hopes another has lately been joined.

It is well known that for these two hundred years, the Dutch have been enriching themselves by the sale of cloves and nutmegs. To secure to themselves the exclusive trade of this article, they have put in irons or utterly destroyed the nation that was in possession of those spices, and lest the price of them should fall even in their own hands, they have rooted up most of the trees, and frequently burnt the fruit of those they have preserved. This abominable avidity, which has so often been mentioned with indignation by other nations, so exasperated Mr. Poivre, who had travelled all over Asia as a naturalist and a philosopher, that he availed himself of the authority he was intrusted with in the Isle of France, and sent men into the least frequented parts of the Moluccas, to search for what avarice had hitherto withheld from the rest of the world. The labours of those intrepid and sagacious navigators, in whom he confided, were crowned with success.

On the 24th of June 1770, they brought to the Isle of France 400 nutmeg-trees; 10,000 nutmegs, either growing or ready to grow; 70 clove trees, and a chest of cloves, some of which were growing, and already come up.

THIS

THIS rich prize was distributed amongst the colonists, to try all the different soils, and every aspect. Most of the young trees died, and the others are not likely to bear any fruit. But whatever may happen, the isle of France must always be allowed to be the best gift of nature, for any nation desirous of trading to Asia.

B O O K
IV.

It is situated in the African seas, but just at the entrance of the Indian ocean. As it lies a little out of the common track, its armaments can be carried on with the more secrecy. They who wish it was nearer our continent, do not consider that if it were so, it would be impossible to reach the coasts of Malabar and Coromandel in a month's time, and the most distant gulphs in two months at most, which is an inestimable advantage to a nation that has no sea-port in India. This island, though in the same latitude as the barren and scorching coasts of Africa, is temperate and healthful. The soil is stony, but tolerably fertile. Experience has shewn that it will produce most of the necessaries and even of the luxuries of life. Whatever may be wanting, they may get from Madagascar, which abounds with provisions, and from Bourbon, where the inhabitants have retained their simplicity of manners, and a taste for husbandry. What iron they may want, and cannot get from those two islands, they dig out of their own mines.

GREAT BRITAIN sees with a jealous eye, that her rivals should be possessed of a settlement which may prove the ruin of her flourishing trade with Asia. At the very first breaking out of a war, her utmost efforts will certainly be aimed at a colony that threatens the source of her richest treasures. What a stroke for France, should she suffer herself to be stripped of it!

It behoves the court of Versailles to fortify the Isle of France and Pondicherry, if it will have any share in the trade of India.

YET this is by no means improbable, if we consider that hitherto there has been no settled plan for fortifying this island; that the means have always been wanting,

B O O K
IV.

or misapplied ; that from year to year, the ministry of Lewis XV. have waited for the dispatches of the administrators to come to a determination, just as one would wait for the return of a courier from the frontiers. Far from supposing that the besiegers would meet with an insurmountable resistance, it is to be feared they would carry their point by the force they have in India without any succours from Europe.

It is now time to speak freely. Whoever goes round the coasts of the Isle of France, must be astonished to see it every where accessible for boats. Though it is surrounded with reefs, there are many bays where troops may be landed under the protection of the ship-guns.

In those parts of the island where ships must keep further off, the sea is so calm and smooth, between the reef and the land, that boats may row in the night without the least danger.

If in some places between the reef and the land, the water is too shallow for the boats to come ashore, then the men can land with the water half way up their legs. The sea is so calm within the reef, that this may be done with the utmost safety. They are more secure of a retreat in case of resistance, and the boats are the safer whilst the operation is going forward.

THIS is without exception the notion we are to frame of the Isle of France ; for if we sometimes meet with a point where a boat cannot land, we are sure of finding an opening at twenty toises to the right or left. So that the enemy will never land sword in hand, but from ignorance or presumption. As it is impossible to guard a coast that measures forty leagues, there will always be some defenceless place fit for landing.

DURING the last war, they had erected batteries all round the island, which pointed directly to the sea ; and could only play upon ships anchored at a distance, or
under

under fail. Some abler engineers have found out that these batteries, erected at a great expence, only divided the forces, answered no purpose, would be as defenceless as they were useless, and could not stand the fire of ships, when the best fortifications are not proof against it. They are now forsaken, and nothing has been substituted in their stead.

THE north-west harbour is the chief place of the island and must be the enemy's principal object in his plan for an attack. The nature of the ground will not admit of fortifying it so as to stand a siege. It should be secured from a surprise, and then an intermediate spot should be fortified in the heart of the island, from whence, by means of communications properly disposed, the forces of the colony may be quickly dispatched wherever they might be wanted.

WITH such an establishment, the enemy must fight a hundred battles before he can conquer the island. He will not even compass it, if the roads leading from the center to the circumference, which must be cut through the woods, are so artfully contrived as to facilitate the motions of the troops towards the circumference, and at the same time to obstruct those of the enemy towards the center. The nature of the country will admit of this: it is full of gullies which must be crossed, and of mountains which require many windings. It is an easy matter to seize the favourable spots.

HOWEVER, there is so necessary and absolute a connection between the Isle of France and Pondicherry, that those two possessions are altogether dependent on each other; for without the Isle of France, there would be no protection for the settlement in India; and without Pondicherry, the Isle of France would be exposed to the invasion of the English from Asia as well as from Europe.

B O O K
IV.

THE Isle of France and Pondicherry, considered in their necessary connection, will be a security to each other. Pondicherry will protect the Isle of France, as being the rival of Madras, which the English must always cover with their land and sea forces; and on the other hand the Isle of France will always be ready to succour Pondicherry, or to act offensively, as circumstances shall require.

From these principles it appears how necessary it is to put Pondicherry immediately in a state of defence. Ever since the year 1764, private interests that clash with the interest of the nation, have made it a matter of doubt which was the best plan of fortification for this important place. Considerable sums have already been expended on this account, and all to no purpose, because they have been successively laid out upon contrary systems. It would be needless to dwell upon the mischiefs attending these eternal uncertainties.

The French being once firmly established in India, will shake of the oppression which the English impose upon them.

When the Isle of France and Pondicherry are once put in a proper posture of defence, we may then think of trade, which ceased to exist the moment it became free. Indeed the expeditions to China have continued, those to the islands of France and Bourbon have even increased; but except an armament or two, which were owing to particular circumstances, no sensible merchant has sent his property to Malabar, Coromandel or Bengal; and the few who have ventured to do it, have been ruined. It could not be otherwise; and yet no inference can be drawn from thence in favour of exclusive privileges.

It may be remembered that the destruction of the company, which would have happened of itself, was hastened by avarice and animosity. Politics, which were not concerned in the revolution, had made no provision for the regulation of that public trade which was to supply the place

place of the exclusive privilege. That sudden transition could be attended with no success. Before this new system was entered upon, private merchants ought, insensibly and gradually, to have been substituted to the company. They should have been put in the way of acquiring a thorough knowledge of the several branches of a commerce to which they were utter strangers. They should have been allowed time to form connections in the factories. They should have been favoured and assisted in their first expeditions.

BUT, all these precautions would have been insufficient to insure the success of the French traders in India. It was morally impossible they should cope with the English, who being masters of every thing and every place, had all the advantages resulting from power, and from the loose principles which prosperity inspires; which gave them fair opportunities of defeating all attempts of this kind. So that which ever way, or in whatever shape the trade of France was carried on, it must of course suffer greatly. No doubt, things would succeed better, if the court of Versailles were to put the settlements in India in a condition to grant that protection which every sovereign owes to his subjects throughout his dominions. It would be better still if the British ministry would watch over the execution of treaties with that steadiness that justice requires. But this oppression, alike disgraceful to the nation that suffers from it, and to the nation that allows it, can never be effectually removed, but by restoring the balance between them, and unfortunately this can only be done by a war.

FAR be it from us to suggest any idea that would tend to rekindle the flames of discord. Rather let the voice of reason and philosophy be heard by the rulers of the world. May all sovereigns; after so many ages of error,

B O O K
IV.

ror, learn to prefer the virtuous glory of making a few men happy, to the mad ambition of reigning over wasted regions and over people groaning under the weight of oppression. May all men become brethren, and accustom themselves to consider the universe as one family, under the eye of one common father. But these wishes, which are those of every sensible and humane man, will appear as idle dreams to ambitious ministers, who hold the reins of empire. Their busy and restless disposition will still shed torrents of blood.

SOME pitiful commercial interest will again arm the French and the English. Though Great Britain, in most of her wars, has aimed chiefly at destroying the industry of her neighbours, and though the superiority of her naval forces may feed this hope, so often deceived, we may safely foretel that she would chuse to remove the scene of action from the seas of Asia, where she would have so little to gain, and so much to lose. That power is not ignorant of the secret wishes formed on all sides for the overthrow of an edifice which obstructs all the rest. The subah of Bengal secretly murmurs at his not having so much as a seeming authority. The subah of the Decan is inconsolable to see his commerce under the countroul of a foreign power. The nabob of Arcot endeavours to dispel the jealousies of his tyrants. The Marattas are exasperated to find nothing but obstacles to their depredations. All the powers in those parts, either are actually enslaved, or think themselves at the eve of being so. England, we may presume, would not wish to see the French at the head of such a confederacy. A strict neutrality for the Indies would suit them best, and we may be sure this is the scheme they would gladly follow.

BUT would this system be as eligible for their rivals? Certainly not. The French are informed that warlike

prepa-

preparations made at the isle of France might be of great service; that the conquests of the English are too extensive not to lie exposed; and that since their experienced officers are returned home, the British possessions in Indostan are only guarded by young people, who are more intent upon making their fortunes than upon military exercises. It is, therefore, to be presumed, that a warlike nation would eagerly seize an opportunity of repairing their former disasters. At the sight of their standards, all these oppressed sovereigns would take the field; and the rulers of India, surrounded with enemies and attacked at once on the north and on the south, by sea and by land, would infallibly be overpowered.

B O O K
IV.

THEN the French, considered as the deliverers of Indostan, would emerge from that state of humiliation into which their own misconduct hath plunged them. They would become the idols of the princes and people of Asia, provided the revolution they had brought about was to them a lesson of moderation. Their trade will be extensive and flourishing so long as they know how to be just. But this prosperity would end in some fatal catastrophe, should an inordinate ambition prompt them to plunder, ravage and oppress. To give stability to their situation, they must even, by noble and generous proceedings, force their rivals to forgive them their advantages. No great magnanimity will be requisite, patiently to endure the operations of the northern nations of Europe in the seas of Asia.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

